TRANSCENDING THE NINE HEAVENS

BOOK 03

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Transcending the Nine Heavens

(傲世九重天)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Chu Yang, the Ninth Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, sacrificed almost everything he had for the sake of improving his martial arts, including the love of his life. After spending three years locating the fifth fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword, he was ambushed by all sides at that very place. Mortally injured with no means of escape, Chu Yang executed a sacrificial technique by plunging the Nine Tribulations Sword into his very own heart. “With the blood of my heart, ten thousand tribulations will collapse!”

After witnessing the death of all his ambushers, Chu Yang’s vision began to darken. At a distance, moments before his death, he saw the mastermind who had plotted his downfall — Mo Tian Ji. With that, his eyes finally closed.

However, with a start, Chu Yang once again awoke to find that he had returned to when he was sixteen years of age! Furthermore, the Sword Spirit of the Nine Tribulations Sword now resided within his Dantian, the energy center of his body! From that very moment, Chu Yang would then begin to right all of his past regrets, and carve his very own legend by fulfilling his destiny as the final Master of the Nine Tribulations Sword, and defeating the Heavenly Devils beyond the realm of the Nine Heavens Continent.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

Editing by Novel Saga @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Be a free person of the mountains and the rivers

Chu Yang quietly considered for a moment before speaking, “I know about Senior Du’s disappearance.”

Tie Bu Tian’s face paled. He already guessed and sensed this. But at this moment, when Chu Yang said it with his own mouth, he was shocked!

Tie Shi Cheng smiled with satisfaction and said, “You only know about it?”

Chu Yang remained silent for a bit and answered, “I only know about it. I did not expect that Senior Du would disappear so soon and at such a coincidental time.”

In the end, Chu Yang still hid certain details?

“Really?”

“Senior Du has once said that staying in Iron Cloud is most dangerous for him.” Chu Yang said casually.

“Right.” Tie Shi Cheng and Tie Bu Tian, standing behind him, both nodded softly.

Tie Shi Cheng laughed and said, “With Du Shi Qing healing me ten years ago, even Tie Bu Tian understands. His remaining here is indeed the most dangerous.”

Chu Yang was startled as he looked at Tie Bu Tian; and Tie Bu Tian looked back at him with a conflicting gaze.

So Tie Bu Tian had known about this already! And yet he was still able to control himself and allow Du Shi Qing to treat his father… The pressure he had to bear was truly unimaginable.

Du Shi Qing had already done it once; how could Tie Bu Tian know he would not do it again?

“Continue.” Tie Shi Cheng’s mind was currently at its maximum excited state.

“Your Majesty’s condition could not be prolonged much longer. Senior Du had once said that even if he used all of his efforts, your life could only be prolonged for another two months... And at that time, Du Shi Qing would have to die.” Chu Yang said frankly.

“Yes, at that time, whether it is Bu Tian or Diwu Qing Rou, he would not be spared!”

With these words of Tie Shi Cheng, Chu Yang could not help but look at his opponent attentively. This bedridden emperor had already seen this finally long ago.

“If the prince does not kill Du Shi Qing, he would not be able to answer to Iron Cloud. But if he kills Du Shi Qing, the consequences would be dire. Du Shi Qing’s death would help Diwu Qing Rou gather a great force! That force is the culmination of Du Shi Qing’s lifetime of work as a physician!”

“Exactly.”

“I have received information that if Your Majesty dies, the time of your funeral will be when Diwu Qing Rou initiates his grand design. At that time, Iron Cloud would be in chaos, and Diwu Qing Rou would have a great chance of success! Even if he does not succeed, Iron Cloud would suffer great injuries.”

Tie Shi Cheng pondered for a moment and said slowly, “Yes, time is indeed against us, and the only way to deal with this is if I die early. Unfortunately... I have told Bu Tian this many times, but he would not listen.”

“Now that Senior Du has disappeared, and everyone is taken by surprise. While I have been mentally prepared for this, I still feel surprised.” Chu Yang said quietly, “However, after this happened, I discovered that even though we are surprised, Diwu Qing Rou is even more surprised!”

“Well said!” Tie Shi Cheng praised, “I am now completely at ease!” He paused a little and said sternly, “Bu Tian, no matter what happens in the future, you are not allowed to trouble Minister Chu with this matter! Minister Chu is a deep thinker with great foresight; he will absolutely be your greatest help!”

Tie Bu Tian sadly closed his eyes; a long while later, he gently nodded in reply.

“After I got injured, I wanted to end my own life. But Bu Tian was still young at the time; I was worried about him, and tried to live... Later, I wanted to die, but I could not!” Tie Shi Cheng said happily, “Now that Minister Chu is here, I am relieved! I have waited for this day for more than three years... I... I am truly very tired...”

“I am very tired... very tired...” Tie Shi Cheng’s gaze was sorrowful as the pink glow on his face gradually disappeared. The potency of Dragon Spirit Fragrance was clearly fading.

Tie Shi Cheng continued to recline like that as his eyes became dreamy. Within them, a trace of longing and unspeakable love showed; he muttered, “My empress, I will come to see you... All these years... Do not blame me...”

“Lian’er, Meng’er, Qing’er...” Tie Shi Cheng murmured called out the wife and daughters that he had killed with his own hands. He suddenly cried out loud and called out, “I want to die! I want to die! I want to...”

Chu Yang sighed internally. As a ruler, everyone only saw his nobility and majesty. But who knew what cruelty a ruler had to endure? The pain in the heart of this ruler, a commoner would probably not dare to imagine.

“If there is another life...” The light in Tie Shi Cheng’s eyes grew dimmer and dimmer; he murmured:

“The long road is divided in blood,

the nation remains in the heart,

helplessly and tearfully swung the saber,

wife and daughters turned into spirits;

in this life, death has divided us;

in the next life, I vow to discard all wealth

and not walk the cold path,

be a free person of the mountains and the rivers!”

“Ha ha…” Tie Shi Cheng laughed weakly and said, “Child… don’t make same mistake as me…”

His eyes suddenly emitted a brilliant light. There was joy, happiness, elation as if he could see his beloved standing there waiting for him in the afterlife…

Then the light was abruptly extinguished…

This ruler maintained his position as before, but life no longer existed in his body.

Today, Iron Cloud Nation’s ruler, Tie Shi Cheng had died!

“Father!… Don’t leave me!” Tie Bu Tian mournfully shouted. His eyes were filled with hopelessness as he rushed forward and held tightly onto Tie Shi Cheng’s frail body. He desperately pressed his cheek against his father’s as if he was trying to transfer his warmth to his father…

Then, he suddenly spat up a clump of blood and fell down. His eyes closed as he became unconscious…

Chu Yang sighed. Seeing this ruler’s life end, he did not know how he felt.

He recalled the words that Tie Shi Cheng just said: “When I was eighteen, I ascended to the throne as emperor. In a few years, I built up a powerful military! We were an unmatched power! South and north, wherever we went they all surrendered! In five years,

we expanded Iron Cloud's territory by a third! At the time, I was ambitious. I felt as if this whole world was in the palm of my hand; this whole world was for me to unify!"

"Wherever we went they all surrendered!"

How powerful and majestic? How arrogant? Looking at the pile of bones now, the strong contrast pained people's hearts.

Could it be that the greatest pain in this emperor's heart was the fact that he killed his wife and daughters with his own hands? Until now, he still remembered...

But why was he so cruel then? The reasons, he still did not reveal even at his death. If this was a secret, then Tie Shi Cheng had taken it to the grave with him.

"In this life, death has divided us; in the next life, I vow to discard all wealth and not walk the cold path, be a free person of the mountains and the rivers!"

A ruler of a nation, and the words he spoke before dying were "be a free person of the mountains and the rivers." This truly made people sigh. This emperor's throne, so many people in this world dream of sitting on it. But the one that actually sat on it, left such an emotional desire at his deathbed!

This was a colossal irony.

Before dying, this ruler of Iron Cloud Nation had surprisingly not called any officials in to leave his last will; surely, he felt very assured with Tie Bu Tian. Plus, by him not doing so, his thoughts were made extremely clear...

Tie Bu Tian, from now on, the world will be yours!

Chu Yang quietly backed out. On the way, no one hindered his path. Chu Yang knew that Tie Bu Tian needed someone to comfort him, but that person was not Chu Yang!

Tie Bu Tian could not hate him enough right now!

He could only wait until Tie Bu Tian got past this difficult time.

But no matter what, Tie Shi Cheng's death was about half a year earlier than the previous life. Plus, winter was coming, the borders would be peaceful for some time.

And given this weather, Diwu Qing Rou would not be able to do anything. In other words, the greatest threat to Iron Cloud had silently disappeared.

However, along the way, Chu Yang still felt burdened as if he was carrying weights; he was not the least bit happy.

Once out of the royal palace, Chu Yang was filled with worries when suddenly sensed a cold feeling on his face.

"It's snowing! It's snowing already..." A surprised voice called out from somewhere.

Chu Yang looked up to see gently falling white snow filled the sky. Within moments, heaven and earth fell into a dreamy state.

They were at the end of autumn; winter was not for another two days. The first snow of Iron Cloud Citadel had unexpectedly come to earth early.

Chu Yang quietly walked down the road. His body gradually became covered with snow. The ground was also blanketed in white. The first few snow flowers quickly melted, but the later ones quickly covered any traces of them leaving the ground with only a white color.

All of heaven and earth became a world of snow after about an hour.

Chu Yang breathed in the icy cold air. The hardened thoughts in his mind seemed to become more active. He turned his head and looked at the majestic royal palace standing tall in the middle of the world of snow. He remained silent as if mourning the emperor that just passed.

No matter what, this world has finally entered a new era! Chu Yang told himself. Then he picked up his steps and quickly headed in the direction of Heavenly Armament Pavilion...

White snow fluttered, and Chu Yang's mind became empty. It was as if they followed those fluttering snow flowers and disappeared into the endless sky.

Crunchy sounds rang out beneath his feet. Chu Yang suddenly remembered: In the previous life, Qing Wu loved the falling snow most. Each time the snow fell, she quietly held her umbrella and silently stood in the snow wearing a red outfit. This was also the most beautiful memory in Chu Yang's mind.

That kind of perfect grace, Chu Yang's heart quivered each time he reminisced about it.

Qing Wu, what are you doing right now?

Chu Yang's figure finally disappeared in the falling snow...

While Tie Shi Cheng was bedridden, and the people of Iron Cloud had long been prepared for his death, when he passed, all of Iron Cloud was still in shock.

At this very same time, as if by appointment, news was sent from the border that Great Zhao's General Dong Wu Fa (TLN: Not the injured Yin Wu Fa.) had ordered three armies to mobilize and attack Iron Cloud at the same time!

Chapter 202: Robbing on the road

The three armies were led by three famed generals. Saintly General Liu Jian led eighty thousand soldiers attacking on the left flank. Heavenly General Yang Lie led eighty thousand soldiers attacking the right flank. Valiant General Chen Yu Hu led an army of one hundred thousand soldiers attacking the center!

Three armies with three famed generals made a total of two hundred sixty thousand troops deployed. This military operation of Great Zhao could be considered massive. Given that winter was coming and the weather was cold, this action of Great Zhao could be considered madness!

Iron Cloud's Gold Star Citadel and the surrounding areas simultaneously sent out distress messages! Battle reports flooded in nonstop!

But at this time, because of Tie Shi Cheng's passing, Iron Cloud was covered in a veil of sorrow. Great Zhao's military actions only served to inspire Iron Cloud's national pride!

The hearts of soldiers responded with unprecedented fervor!

Tie Long Cheng was overseeing the armies and could not go back for the funeral! Under the massive pressure from Great Zhao, he could only oversee the battlefront without any time for rest.

In Iron Cloud Citadel, the public's emotions were boiling as they prepared for Tie Shi Cheng's funeral!

*****

It could be said Cheng Yun He was feeling imminent danger when hope appeared.

Tie Shi Cheng's death gave Cheng Yun He a great shock. He knew that now that Tie Shi Cheng had died, it was a total disruption to Diwu Qing Rou's plans, and everything would have to be carefully reconsidered once again.

But there was one major advantage in this; it was the fact that they were now finally able to leave the citadel!

These days of blockade had caused Cheng Yun He's hair to whiten with worries. Without any way to get information or leave the citadel, he watched as Yin Wu Fa turned into a virtual corpse after taking Meng Hun Solution and became even more anxious!

He searched many times each week, more than ten times even. Cheng Yun He was pushed into a corner; not only he did not dare to act, he even killed the carrier Invisible Falcons. Because... they only needed to flap their wings, and everyone could lose their lives.

Losing the means to communicate was much better than losing their lives.

Now that Tie Shi Cheng had died, the curfew was lifted.

Cheng Yun He let out a sigh of relief and quickly asked for permission to leave the citadel. After arriving here, he immediately made a point to buy many Iron Cloud specialties. He especially chose nonperishable goods that could be stored for a long period of time.

All the officials of Iron Cloud Citadel were so busy with arranging the emperor's funeral, so who would bother caring about this trivial matter? When Cheng Yun He asked to leave the citadel, he naturally got the approval. The result was Cheng Yun He gathered all of his subordinates and left the citadel with a long caravan via the southern gate without a moment's delay.

They were finally out!

Once he had stepped out of Iron Cloud Citadel, Cheng Yun He could not help but look up and watch the snow flowers in the sky; he took in a deep breath. These few days in Iron Cloud Citadel, Cheng Yun He had the feeling that he could barely breathe; it was utterly suffocating.

Now that they were outside of the citadel, he suddenly felt like a little bird that had escaped from its cage.

From now on, as long as King of Hell Chu is in Iron Cloud Citadel, I will not go there!

Cheng Yun He quietly swore to himself!

Before his intellectual mind could make its move, King of Hell Chu had blocked him completely and not given him any chance to show his skill.

After Cheng Yun He arrived at Iron Cloud Citadel, the people of Hei Mo clan had left after being used by King of Hell Chu.

A futile effort on that front. As for making connections with the other officials... Cheng Yun He thought about it, but he did not dare. These days, all of the officials in Iron Cloud Citadel were feeling anxious and fearful. If his identity got exposed and King of Hell gave the orders, these officials would probably rip him apart and bring his corpse to King of Hell Chu to claim their prize...

This, Cheng Yun He was confident of.

Being able to bring all of his subordinates back to Great Zhao was already not bad.

Looking at the Golden Horse Riders at his side, Cheng Yun He wanted to cry. On the way there, everyone was spirited, and now, they were all gloomy. They came with more than forty people; there were currently a measly dozen or so people.

And most of them were Martial Great Masters; there were only three Revered Martial Artists left!

The rest were to forever remain in Iron Cloud Citadel...

Turning his head back one last time, Cheng Yun He glanced at this painful citadel and yelled, “Let’s go!”

The horse drawn carriages clicked and clacked as they struggled in snowy weather at a turtle’s pace. They were currently still at the

border of Iron Cloud so Cheng Yun He did not dare to toss away the merchandise; if they got stopped, that would certainly raise suspicion.

Therefore, while they were a little slow, Cheng Yun He had to still grin and bear it.

Inside Bu Tian Pavilion, Chu Yang frowned, “It’s them?”

Sweat poured out of Chen Yu Tong’s face as he said hastily, “Yes, it’s them.”

“After the gates were opened, six groups of people left the citadel? And only two groups went south?” Chu Yang was a little surprised that there were so few.

By the time, the merchants should be going crazy being suffocated by the blockade. It did not make sense that so few left.

“There are still many waiting to leave; it’s just that they are people of our nation. Since they are currently in Iron Cloud Citadel, they would naturally want to attend the emperor’s funeral!” Chen Yu Tong carefully explained.

“Ah, that makes sense.” Chu Yang nodded, “It’s not too far off from the norm. Everyone go and help watch over the funeral procession. Protect the prince cautiously. Don’t let anything happen. As for this other issue, let me deal with it personally.”

“Yes.” Chen Yu Tong hesitated then asked, “The minister is not joining in the funeral procession… this is… a little disrespectful.”

“I can’t hide fast enough. If the prince sees me that would be a great disrespect.” Chu Yang smiled wryly. These days, Tie Bu Tian lost his temper every time he saw Chu Yang. Yesterday, he unexpectedly rushed toward Chu Yang and kicked. Luckily, Chu Yang got away quickly or else he would have gotten a beating. In this critical time, how could Chu Yang let himself lose face? He would have to be one day late this national funeral to avoid being

in front of the storm…

Even if there were no issues, Minister Chu still would have wanted to slip away for a few days; let alone this justifiable reason…

Chen Yu Tong's mouth twitched slightly. While he knew well that with the emperor just passing, he should absolutely not laugh, he still could not help it.

The relationship between Tie Bu Tian and Chu Yang was too weird. If Tie Bu Tian was truly unhappy, he only need to hand down a decree to get rid of this minister. But he adamantly refused to do this; he even took it upon himself to question King of Hell Chu…

This was more like a fit of anger!

Chu Yang left a few lines of instructions and slipped away in a flash. He returned to Heavenly Armament Pavilion where were a group of people who did not care whether the ruler of Iron Cloud Nation died or not. Ji Mo's injury was almost completely recovered. Chu Yang said a few lines, and the five people excitedly changed their clothes and followed Chu Yang out of the citadel.

A few days ago, Ji Mo was proudly showing off his accomplishments making everyone extremely envious. They finally had the chance to go out for a change of scenery, in such beautiful weather, no less… snow was fluttering in the wind…

Six people in outfits white as snow rode six horses out of Iron Cloud Citadel's southern gate. When the soldiers stopped them to ask questions, a sign representing King of Hell Chu fell in front of their faces. The whole bunch trembled with shock and quickly ran to open the gate.

Six horses rushed out like the wind…

"Woo… this weather is so refreshing!" Luo Ke Di showed off a pair of panda eyes as he howled to the sky in excitement. The past

few days, young master Luo had not had a good day. Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang went to him for matches whenever they had nothing to do. And he was no match for them so he could only grit his teeth and bear the beatings.

Almost every day, he had to endure an average of two beatings. Young master Luo went completely berserk. This morning, he did not wait for Gu Du Xing to find him. He went and challenged Rui Bu Tong... attacking his soft spot first...

Unexpectedly, Rui Bu Tong doled out a series of strange punches that caught young master Luo off-guard. Unable to block, he got two punches in the face. After a pitiful cry, he turned into a panda...

Now that he was finally able to get out, young master Luo decided to relax and enjoy himself. At the same time, he silently vowed to himself that once he became successful, the first person he would seek to get revenge upon would be Gu Du Xing. He would beat him up ten times a day! No, twenty times!

The second person was, of course, Chu Yang! Because that set of strange punches was taught to Rui Bu Tong by Chu Yang! He was simply unforgivable.

The third person was, of course, Dong Wu Shang.

Young master Luo was currently grinding his teeth. Every night, he went to sleep with an achy body and a dream. If he did not have this fantasy... he would probably not be able to hang on...

Ji Mo and company laughed loudly. Even Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang, two famed icy people, had to laugh. It should also be known that these people argued with each other incessantly every day. And while there was always someone in black and blue each day, their bond had gradually grown deeper.

Six people riding six horses flew with the wind and snow. They followed the tracks on the ground that had not yet been covered up

by the snow and gave chase overtly.

Chu Yang was truly certain of his chances.

The people with him were all Great level masters, but each one was an exceptional member of their clan. In term of battle strength, they were absolutely not weaker than Revered level masters. In fact, they had a good chance of beating second and third grade Revered level masters.

The people of Golden Horse Riders Department were almost completely eliminated. Even if they were to clash, Chu Yang was not at all afraid! Not to mention that he had a super weapon, Nine Tribulations Sword, at hand!

Therefore, Chu Yang confidently gave chase.

As they journeyed on, fragments of roads were left behind. After about thirty or forty miles, they saw a big caravan with horses moving quickly in the wind and snow.

Gu Du Xing grunted and waved his arm, “Luo Ke Di, you’re up!”

“Why me?” Luo Ke Di said in discontent, “You are all free.”

“You are telling me to go?” Dong Wu Shang turned and looked at him dangerously.

“No… no…” Luo Ke Di stuttered…

“Then you want me to go?” Ji Mo narrowed his eyes.

“In any case, I am not going.” Rui Bu Tong turned away.

“Should I go?” Gu Du Xing looked at Luo Ke Di, “How about the boss? You dare say this?”

Luo Ke Di rolled his eyes and said dejectedly, “I’m going.” All of the excitement from earlier had completely disappeared.

Not going was not an option. Young master Luo was angry, but the target for his venting was the large caravan in front of him!

It’s all because of you that I have to lose face! You will all have to

pay a great price!

Kicking hard against the sides of his white horse, Luo Ke Di flew like the wind and yelled out, “Yah! Yah!... Yah! Yah!...”

In the blink of an eye, he was in front of the caravan. Pulling on the horse’s rein, he turned around and remained on horseback. Metal flashed in his hand and a big tree on the side of the road fell down blocking it!

“Wooh... I opened this road and planted this tree. If you want to pass, you must pay a fee!” Young master Luo yelled out loudly. His voice reverberated and unexpectedly caused a shockwave in the falling snow in the air.

Chapter 203: Domineering second young master Luo

Chu Yang and company were stunned!

You just rushed up from behind them, and you are saying you opened this road? When did you open it?

When the sounds of horse galloping was heard, Cheng Yun He already had an ominous feeling. But when a punk with two darkened eyes flew past them, Cheng Yun He let out a sigh of relief and was glad that the person was just passing by.

But that guy stopped after passing them and spoke like a bandit!

Cheng Yun He almost fainted.

Bandits were commonplace and were not novel in any way. But coming up from behind and blocking them to rob, with such an attitude no less, was new. Blocking a whole caravan with the force of only one person was also rare.

Even more outrageous was that the look of anger and hatred reserved for the victims was already taken by the robber. He was exuding the great resentment of one suffering from some unspeakable wrong; his eyes practically shot out fire as if the grievance was driving him mad...

Such an unreasonable, domineering attitude was incurable...

“Punk, are you sick?” A driver from the caravan rolled his eyes and looked at Luo Ke Di. Cheng Yun He and company had been holding in their anger since they left Iron Cloud Citadel without a place to vent. Now they were troubled by the snowy road.

Unexpectedly, someone had jumped out for them to vent their anger on. Everyone was elated.

This Martial Great Master disguised as a wagon driver was in an extremely bad mood since his face had to eat wind and snow. At

this moment, he felt as if fortune had fallen into his lap.

“You are sick! Your whole family is sick!” Luo Ke Di shouted, “All of your ancestors are sick!”

“Bastard!” The face of the middle-age driver quickly turned purple. He was fuming as he jumped forward and grinned, “Punk, no matter who you are, if you dare to block my way, prepare for reincarnation!”

Before he was done speaking, Luo Ke Di’s attitude became even fiercer than his own. Luo Ke Di jumped off his horse and rushed forth.

“Son of a b*! A*hole! You were raised by a pig! And you even dare to scold me!” Second young master Luo angrily cursed with the foulest of language. As he generously doled out these words, he rolled up his sleeves getting ready to fight, “Being robbed by this young master is already an honor for you! How the f* are you not satisfied yet? Your grandmother, you people look like a bunch of donkeys that just came out of their cage! Aren’t I giving you a lot of face already? Bastards!”

Luo Ke Di started fighting as he cursed so that the Martial Great Master did not have time to make a move. His opponent was one step ahead of him; he could only block left and block right… block left, block right… He could not fight back.

Within moments, his opponent’s lightning speech left the driver so dizzy he did not even have time to curse.

After a storm of attacks, Luo Ke Di suddenly stopped. He folded his arms and stood watching his opponent. But this person was still swing his arms chaotically blocking left and right, left and right… He continually moved in a frenzy without a chance for his mind to catch up…

After a swinging his arms for a while, the driver finally perceived that his opponent was no longer attacking. He paused as sweat

poured from his body; but he immediately discovered the cursed punk standing not too far in front of him.

“Are you epileptic?” Luo Ke Di asked curiously. Then, without waiting for an answer, he punched the driver in the nose and followed that up with two smacks.

This person’s head swung upward as he was punched in the nose. Then he was smacked hard on the right causing his face to tilt to the left. Yet, he smacked one more time which sent his face back to the right. With great difficulty, he was able to bring it back to its original position. At this time, blood spurted out of his two nostrils.

With a puh, he spat out more than ten broken teeth…

Fresh blood fell down on the pure white snow which made it look even more bright red.

Just as they were itching to make a move earlier, the attack made all the Great Masters’ pupils constrict.

Luo Ke Di’s precise and quick moment carried the aura of a powerful person mixed with some indescribable oddity.

This lone youth was by no means a fearsome figure for them.

At this very moment, Luo Ke Di suddenly went bonkers…

He said “Ahwooh!” and jumped up in joy all of a sudden. He mouth did not cease to shout, “Motherf*! Motherf*! So that’s it! Motherf*! Motherf*, it’s really it!…”

As it turned out, second young master Luo had just discovered that his moves had become much smoother than they were half a month ago. Plus, they were effortless.

This was due to the fact that he was weaker than Gu Du Xing and company. Being tortured by them every day, he essentially did not notice how much he had improved!

Now that he was fighting with an outsider, he realized this

fortunate change! The feeling of pleasure rushed at him like the rising tide... In the blink of an eye, second young master was at the peak of elation as he jumped and danced nonstop...

In an instant, the Revered Martial Artist leaders' mouths were gaping. They were clueless as to why this punk was just frowning earlier as if he had met with mortal enemies or gotten spanked eight hundred times. But now he was jumping like dragons and tigers...

His face showed excitement, super excitement...

Could this guy be crazy?

For a moment, everyone was annoyed. They were hunted in Iron Cloud Citadel like animals; it took great efforts for them to escape like dogs, but they had to run into this abnormal, crazy punk on the way!

The thick curtain on one of the carriages lifted, and Cheng Yun He smiled as he step out. He bowed deeply and said, "Warrior, I am only a wandering merchant; I travel here and there year-round so I could have food to eat and clothes to wear. However, now that I have the chance to meet you, I must naturally show my respect."

Then he turned and said, "People, take out five hundred silver liangs as a gift for this warrior."

Having said so, he once again spoke to Luo Ke Di, "A little token of my appreciation. It is not enough to show my full admiration, but I hope you will accept it. No matter what, this meeting is fated. Can we all part ways here as friends?"

Of course it was Cheng Yun He's intention to avoid any complications. Even if it was some small groups of bandits, he would rather take a small loss than risk danger in this hazardous locality.

With him speaking that way, there was no doubt that it was giving a lot of face for ordinary bandits.

And why would anyone turn down getting five hundred silver liangs without doing any work?

An ordinary person would not make this much even if he worked several years.

But, unfortunately for Cheng Yun He, the person he met with was second young master Luo Ke Di!

Under normal circumstances, second young master Luo Ke Di was not an unreasonable person. If the other side already conceded, killing would just be pointless, better to just let them go on their way.

However, second young master Luo had just gone from being gloomy to extreme elation; all of his rationality was squished by this. Right now, he had a need to find opponents to stand witness to his improvements.

What made him especially happy was there were a few martial experts in this caravan! Moreover, they were Revered level experts!

Young master Luo's spirit was ablaze; the desire to fight rose to his head. At the moment, his lips felt dry, his body trembled, his face reddened, and his hands itched.

Not fighting would be a letdown to his own progress.

Right now, second young master Luo had tossed boss Chu's agenda right out the window. In his heart, there was only the excitement of a looter who found his opponent.

"Becoming friends? Ahwooh..." Second young master Luo Ke Di looked up at the heavens and laughed. He said majestically, "Woohahaha, Ahwooh... You want to be friends with just five hundred silver liangs?" His face suddenly became grave; compare to the wind and snow, his countenance was probably colder. He said angrily, "My friendship is only worth five hundred silver liangs? Ahwooh..."

It should be known that, not too long ago, Gu Du Xing searched

out Ji Mo and him to do something not too far from here. After he found Luo Ke Di, Gu Du Xing looked up at the heavens and yelled out ahwooh.

It immediately shook the whole wilderness! Luo Ke Di witnessed clearly that there was a family of leopards in the forest. This howl of Gu Du Xing scared them so much that they almost pooped in their pants; they fled with their tails between their legs... (TLN: I know, leopards don't wear pants, and they run better with their tails out.)

And after that howl, Ji Mo actually heard it a great distance and ran toward them.

Second young master Luo Ke Di felt that this ahwooh of Gu Du Xing was truly awe-inspiring and powerful! It was truly the best choice to show one's power!

Therefore, from then on, second young master Luo had contracted this bad habit. Each time he open his mouth to say anything, he had to let out a big yell. At first, he yelled, "Hoohoo!" But currently, he felt that "hoohoo" was too common. So he replaced it with "Ahwooh" at once.

This was also the reason why he got beaten up at Heavenly Armament Pavilion. No one cared to hear that woof howl of his. He howled when he was happy; he howled when he was angry; that was still okay. But when there was nothing going only, he would just howled like a madman... Even if they wanted to tolerate him, they could not!

Of course second young master Luo did not know this. He arrogantly thought that everyone was jealous of him because he was too handsome...

"Ahwooh... Five hundred silver liangs, am I that cheap? Bastard!" Second young master Luo grinded his teeth and glared ferociously. He said with a mouthful of saliva, "Ahwooh, why don't you quickly hand over your most valuable item? Are you

waiting for me to make a move? Ahwooh…”

Cheng Yun He’s countenance became difficult to look at.

The eyes of the Revered level masters were filled with anger! This punk was simply ungrateful.

“You don’t want to drink a toast, but you want to take a punishment drink instead!” (TLN: Just in case, choosing the difficult path instead of the easy one being offered.) Cheng Yun He was pushed too hard and could not help but be angry.

“Bastard! Are you worthy of giving me a punishment drink?” Second young master Luo yelled, “Ahwooh… you are too funny! Come. Let me teach you all what a punishment drink is!”

The Revered level masters finally could not take it anymore. One person rushed forward like the wind; breaking apart the falling snow, he angrily shouted, “I will let you taste what is called a punishment drink!”

A flurry of punches and kicks came at Luo Ke Di.

Second young master Luo howled excitedly, “Ahwooh, come…” Then he rushed up like a whirlwind. Within moments, the two were kicking and punching each other.

The sound of hooves rang out. Big brother Chu, Second brother Gu, second young master Ji, second young master Dong, and the future lone bandit, Rui Bu Tong, all appeared at the same time.

Chapter 204: Abnormal strength

Chu Yang unintentionally or intentionally looked in Rui Bu Tong's direction. There was nothing unexpected; this punk was showing great excitement and even unconsciously licking his lips with his tongue... This demeanor of his was proof that his bandit lifestyle was innate... (TLN: Rui Bu Tong was a lone bandit.)

"Luo Ke Di has gone crazy." Ji Mo pulled his hands into his sleeves as his mouth breathed in and out the cold air. Enjoying the feeling of someone else's suffering, he said, "It looks like those other people are not weak either. I am afraid second young master Luo will get beaten into a pulp this time."

"It's nothing." Dong Wu Shang excitedly watched a high-spirited Luo Ke Di fight in front of him and said, "This wolf got beaten by us every day; he tired us out first. Let him suffer for a bit."

Gu Du Xing nodded and said, "Pay attention. We must not let them beat him into a dead wolf. Otherwise, let second young master Luo suffer a little pain or else he would never get any smarter."

Second brother's words had sealed the fate of second young master Luo. Rui Bu Tong fiercely nodded and said with satisfaction, "This bastard always chooses my soft spot as his target. He picked on me every day; this is retribution."

The result was all of the brothers stood with their arms folded and laughed as they watched on the sidelines.

As for Big Brother Chu, his face already became pensive the moment they arrived. This caravan seemed a little odd...

The moment he got close to this caravan, the Nine Tribulations Sword point in his dantian suddenly throbbed violently!

It throbbed like a palpitating heart!

This was the first time Chu Yang met with this reaction in this

life!

This troubled Chu Yang! Why does Nine Tribulations Sword suddenly have this abnormal reaction? Could it be that this caravan have something that piqued Nine Tribulations Sword's interest?

As he thought, his eyes glanced in the direction of the caravan.

Naturally, he only used a normal gaze to observe. Before he could determine whether the opponents were indeed the spies he was searching for, Chu Yang did not have any prejudice in his heart.

However, after careful observation, he discovered too many abnormalities. At this very moment, Gu Du Xing rode over next to him and said casually, "Big brother, their strength is odd."

"Odd? Odd how?" Chu Yang asked with a faint smile.

"There is nothing abnormal about them having martial masters." Gu Du Xing said, "After all, for these international merchants, it would be strange if they did not have any martial masters. But they are... too calm."

"If it was a normal merchant caravan in this situation, the martial masters could be calm, but the ordinary people in their group should be a little panicked. But these people, from top to bottom, are all extremely calm. It is as if they are too well acquainted with this type of situation..." Gu Du Xing said, "Even the military could not be calm like this."

"Ah, that's right." Chu Yang nodded, "Anything else?"

"The strengths of the three Revered level masters are too even." Gu Du Xing said, "The rest of them are mostly martial artists with more than ten of them being Martial Masters. I am surprised that they have four Great level masters! For a merchant caravan, this strength is too massive."

"Mmm, anything else?"

“There is… With such powerful strength, why do they have to swallow their anger? Dealing with just a lone juvenile bandit, they unexpectedly chose to hand over five hundred silver liangs to avoid a confrontation… This is too nice.”

“Mmm, anything else?”

“Casually handing over five hundred silver liangs just to clear a path when their strength is much higher than that of their opponent. Unless, they are some rich upcoming merchants who don’t know what else to do with their money. They must make some gigantic profits to be able to do that. But these people are so calm; they don’t seem like some rich upcoming merchants. Plus, I looked at their merchandise; they are not anything that would give big profits.” Gu Du Xing said, “This is too strange.”

“Mmm, anything else?”

“This… is done.” Gu Du Xing said haggardly.

“If I am right, these are the people from Golden Horse Riders Department.” Chu Yang said gravely, “Currently, our most important task is finding the injured King level leader! And kill him! As for the rest of them, let them live so they could go back and report to Diwu Qing Rou.”

“Report?”

“Yes, report. We have caused such chaos in Iron Cloud; surely, Diwu Qing Rou would know about it. If we kill all of his men in addition to completely destroying his scheme to use the deaths of Tie Shi Cheng and Du Shi Qing, I am afraid he would not be able to withstand this devastation.” Chu Yang laughed.

Of course Chu Yang did not care if Diwu Qing Rou would be able to handle it or not. For Chu Yang, it would be best if Diwu Qing Rou died from anger; why would he worry about Diwu Qing Rou?

His true intention was to let these people go so they could give Diwu Qing Rou a message about what was happening in Iron Cloud

Citadel. That message was: “Iron Cloud is currently solving all of its internal problem with a full effort!”

In this time frame, they had started to eliminate traitors and kill spies. This conveyed a clear message: In order to deal with external problems, there must first be internal peace! And Tie Bu Tian and King of Hell Chu’s key strategy was internal affairs of the country.

Thus, Diwu Qing Rou would surely watch the situations in Iron Cloud closely. The benefit of this was: long distance! For Diwu Qing Rou to know about anything that happened in Iron Cloud, it would take a day and a night. It would take him at least three days to react!

And in the time frame of three days, many things could be done!

But right now, Chu Yang had a new thought. It was true enough that in order to deal with external problems, there must be internal peace! But now, as I am pacifying internal issues, I want to annoy you a little bit as well!

In any case, snow is now everywhere. You people can’t do anything!

Waiting until next spring... can I not create a new situation?

Sending tigers back to the forest? Chu Yang looked at the caravan and laughed internally. Not necessarily! In this group, there are no tigers! I will be able to leave them with an especially important message...

On this point, Chu Yang had a slight mistake in his calculation. In leaving this message, he had unintentionally made an error.

Until now, all of Golden Horse Riders Department’s operations remained extremely secretive. Furthermore, they generally took care of their own operations. So Chu Yang naturally assumed that all of these actions by Golden Horse Riders Department were led by these two King level leaders!

By killing these two King level leaders, everything else would

become easy!

And now one of them was dead, and the other was probably in critical condition.

Therefore, Chu Yang made the assumption that there were no other key figures in this caravan.

He did not know about the existence of Cheng Yun He. If he knew about Cheng Yun He, he would absolutely not let anyone leave. In the great battle between two countries, the role of a wise person like Cheng Yun He was even greater than that of a ruler!

While Kong Shang Xin's action left Cheng Yun He unable to do anything but return in annoyance, it had also saved Cheng Yun He's life!

If he had waited until Cheng Yun He arrived before acting, then Cheng Yun He would have directly revealed himself to the Hei Mo people which was, in essence, revealing himself to King of Hell Chu. In that case, how could King of Hell Chu spare a fish by no means inferior to Tang Xin Shang?

Under a combination of circumstances and a battle of wits, Cheng Yun He was able to safely return.

The moment Luo Ke Di jumped out to rob them, Cheng Yun He had carefully watched the surroundings. Especially when Chu Yang and company appeared at the same time, while they were just watching, they were looking unified. They were all of about the same age group so Cheng Yun He immediately figured out that they were comrades!

His opponents were only a few people, but these few people were not the least bit scared when facing a large convoy. He guessed that none of them were weak.

It would seem that some blood would have to be spilled for his group to leave here.

Of course, even now, Cheng Yun He still did not think that these

people were sent by King of Hell Chu. With the emperor's death, how can an important person of Iron Cloud like King of Hell Chu appear here? He is probably so busy he could not even lift his head.

Therefore, Cheng Yun He was currently not the least bit worried or scared.

At this time, Luo Ke Di was a little embarrassed in his battle. While he was a descendant of a great clan, the gap between him and his opponent was too great. The opponent was a fourth grade Revered Martial Artist, and he was only a sixth grade Martial Great Master. It was a difference of seven or eight grade; the fact that he could hang on until now was already praiseworthy.

Currently, he was depending entirely on his agile and precise movements to compensate for the gap in cultivation. He used nimble techniques to avoid his opponent's fierce attack.

If he had a heavenly weapon, the situation would have been different. But his sword was only an ordinary one, and Ji Mo had gotten it chopped by Mo Qing Wu...

Second young master Luo was a little nervous now.

He went from great excitement to nervousness in an extremely short time span. Luo Ke Di was gradually growing helpless.

The pressure from his opponent gradually grew greater. Luo Ke Di moved in confusion when he suddenly made a desperate move and pulled out his belt!

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh... His belt swung like a peacock's feather. As it turned out, his belt was actually a specialized weapon!

"Wow! Luo Ke Di is using his secret weapon!" Ji Mo exclaimed. He shouted as if he had just discovered a new continent, "So it's really a whip! Ah, a red one at that..."

"Whoa! I can't believe Luo Ke Di's whip is red..." Rui Bu Tong exclaimed. Then he wondered, "Then what is the color of his other

whip?”

“Whoa! So Luo Ke Di has two whips...” Dong Wu Shang cried out, “I wonder if he would have to use both.”

“If he used both... he would have won already...” Chu Yang could not help himself, “His thick skin would be enough to block all attacks.”

“Whoa... Hahahaha...” The five people held their stomachs and laughed loudly. Even the icy Gu Du Xing laughed until his eyes were almost teary.

Luo Ke Di was locked in such a fierce battle his orifices practically steamed!

Seeing Gu Du Xing and the rest arrive, Luo Ke Di had hoped that they would quickly come over and help him. He never thought that not only his comrades not help, they also stayed far away and joyfully made fun of him as if they were watching a circus show.

Chapter 205: Deadly threat

Luo Ke Di was suffering greatly when he decided to pull out his whip. He did not expect that the moment he did this, such comments would be incited.

Second young master Luo could barely get a firm grip on his whip at this moment...

“Pow...”

That Revered Martial Artist punched Luo Ke Di’s chest. Luo Ke Di let out a loud scream and took a step back. After that, a few more pows rang out as his butt received nonstop kicks. He immediately fell to the ground and rolled like a snowball.

“Ahwooh... Damn you punks!” Second young master Luo was livid; he cursed as he rolled on the ground, “Hurry over here and help me!”

“Stop!” Ji Mo flew over and blocked that Revered Martial Artist. He said angrily, “You went too far!”

Too far?

That Revered Martial Artist was confounded. He had intended to directly destroy this punk, but there were five other martial masters on Luo Ke Di’s side watching him like hungry tigers. And knowing that their identities were ambiguous, he was already being merciful when dealing with Luo Ke Di. Never did he expect another punk to jump out and say that he had gone too far.

“I have nothing against you beating him up! Even if you kill him, it is his fault for not learning well. No one would say anything.” Ji Mo angrily pointed and shouted, “But why did you kick his butt?”

“Butt?” That Revered Martial Artist glanced at Luo Ke Di’s butt in a dazed. He asked in confusion, “So what?”

“So what? You are asking so what?” An angry and grief-stricken

Ji Mo yelled, “When we don’t have money for food, we all have to depend on him selling his butt! You, you, you kicked his butt. This is no different to destroying our means to live. You have really gone too far!”

“Ji Mo, I am going to kill you!” Luo Ke Di yelled angrily as he desperately rushed toward Ji Mo…

“Hahaha.” Dong Wu Shang laughed and fell off his horse. He was bawling with laughter.

Chu Yang laughed uncontrollably and accidently inhaled some snowflakes.

That Revered Martial Artist’s face went into a spasm as his mouth twitched. A strange expression appeared, and he nodded profoundly, “I see…”

“Therefore, I have to fight with you!” Ji Mo solemnly pulled out his sword, “Many people in Iron Cloud Citadel love Luo Ke Di’s butt… I can’t believe you dared to insult it… Plus, you didn’t even pay…”

Luo Ke Di was raving mad as he rushed over and grabbed Ji Mo. With a fierce countenance, he grinded his teeth and said, “Ji Mo, you son of a b*… I will rip you apart…”

“Facing a formidable opponent, and you want to fight me? You, you… you are hopeless!” Ji Mo righteously looked at him and shouted, “Step aside!”

Then Ji Mo immediately kicked Luo Ke Di’s butt. After insulting the butt that he was trying so hard to protect, he rushed forth with his sword.

The moment Luo Ke Di flew out from being kicked, Ji Mo was neck to neck with that Revered Martial Artist. As he fought, he heatedly asked, “Why did you kick his butt?”

After some more fighting, he asked again, “Why do you want to destroy his butt?”

Ji Mo's movements were much more fluid than that of Luo Ke Di. That Revered Martial Artist was extremely annoyed. He frantically moved his arms and legs as he listened to his opponent's questioning. He finally could not help it and yelled out, "I didn't know his butt was so valuable..."

The moment those words were heard, Luo Ke Di, who had just managed to get up, fell right back down. He beat his hands on the ground and screamed, "Ji Mo, I will kill you! I will not share the same sky with you..."

Rui Bu Tong and Dong Wu Shang were dying with laughter...

A little further away, Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang laughed to the point their bodies trembled...

Cheng Yun He listened these punks and could not help smile slightly. He could not bring himself to laugh... When will these crazy punks end their farce?

From the look of these people, they don't seem to have any malicious intentions...

Just then, the sound of hooves was heard. Two white horses approached. One youth sitting on the horse in front calmly asked, "Who is the leader of this caravan?"

"Young man, what is it that you want?" Cheng Yun He looked suspiciously at Chu Yang assessing him while hastily showing a cheerful expression.

"Ah, in this harsh weather, travelling must be tough. Don't you agree?" Chu Yang smiled amicably.

"Yes, yes. But it necessary to make a living. Survival is hard, and living well is much harder." Cheng Yun He sighed and said pitifully.

"Yes... hard." Chu Yang nodded with empathy, "Especially when all of these things are so heavy! It is a long distance from here to Great Zhao; this hardship must be unspeakable."

“You are right.” Cheng Yun He sighed and said, “It is extremely difficult to find a little money to feed your family…”

“Since that is the case, I will volunteer to do you a big favor.” Chu Yang smiled, “Sir, you brought so many riches and treasures; it is too heavy. I don’t want the hardship either, but I am compassionate and helpful. I will help you with this difficulty…” He mused, “Please hand over all of your gold and silver… Just go with your merchandise; I am sure you will be much more comfortable.”

Cheng Yun He was confounded.

This youth seemed so scholarly; Cheng Yun He did not expect him to be even more ruthless, and want to take it all…

Give all of the gold and silver to you… just carry away the merchandise? What the f* are they for? They will probably be rotten before we reach Great Zhao…

Cheng Yun He let out a loud laugh and said, “Sir, this… is a little too much.”

“Too much?” Chu Yang smiled faintly and said, “We are just looking for a meal. Plus, we are just playing around. Just looking for a little fun. But if you make us unhappy, we could tell King of Hell Chu about you so he could come and greet you. I believe that he would greet you even more warmly than we do!”

Chu Yang said casually, “And the price that King of Hell Chu is willing to pay is probably much higher than what you are willing to pay! Do you think I am right?”

Cheng Yun He was startled. His eyes brightened as he asked suspiciously, “Sir, I don’t appreciate what you are saying.”

“Really?” Chu Yang countenance slowly grew cold, “Second brother, immediately return and notify Bu Tian Pavilion. Tell them that we have discovered the whereabouts of Golden Horse Riders Department…”

“Okay!” Gu Du Xing immediately turned and kicked the horse’s sides, “Yah!”

A Revered Martial Artist shot over and shouted, “Stay!”

Gu Du Xing smiled coldly and jumped from the horse’s back all of a sudden. His sword touched the other person’s sword, then his body immediately flew out like an eagle. In the blink of an eye, he had flew away seven hundred feet. His movement was agile and extremely fast!

That Revered Martial Artist felt as if the air had been knocked out of his chest, and his face paled.

Cheng Yun He’s people were all shocked.

Looking at his movements, they knew that even if they all moved on him at once, they would not be able to keep this person from leaving!

“Wait a minute!” Cheng Yun He smiled bitterly inside. No wonder my opponents are not the least bit scared. They already knew our identity before coming to threaten us!

I have to say, this is a great weakness! They surely already guessed that we would have no other choice! The six of them are all martial masters so we cannot be certain that we could fight all of them.

If a confrontation occurs, none of us would be able to return to Great Zhao! As long as they have this, they can name whatever price they want!

Plus, Diwu Qing Rou hasn’t gotten the news; I have the important responsibility of bringing news back to Great Zhao!

“What do you want?” Cheng Yun He asked frankly without bothering to cover things up any further.

Chu Yang smiled arrogantly and said, “I only want to be friends with all of you.”

As he approached that middle-aged man, he could feel Nine Tribulations Sword tip in his dantian becoming increasingly agitated.

This man was surely carrying some precious item or rare metal. Otherwise, Nine Tribulations Sword would not have such a reaction.

“I also really want to be friends with all of you!” Cheng Yun He grunted coldly and said, “Tell me your intentions.”

“In this caravan, there is something that I am searching for.” Chu Yang said coldly, “More like… a person!”

“A person?” Cheng Yun He internally let out a sigh of relief.

Their opponents knew their identity, but did not want to kill them all. They only wanted to find a wanted person; that person must be Yin Wu Fa.

But at this moment, even if they could find Yin Wu Fa, it was not anything to worry about!

“If you want to look for yourself, feel free to do so!” Cheng Yun He smiled, “Whatever you want, I will hand it over with both hands; I will not cause one bit of trouble!”

Chu Yang felt vexed as he looked at Cheng Yun He with a lingering odd feeling.

The King level leader that escaped must be in this caravan. But why is this person not the least bit panicked? Why is this? Chu Yang believed that he had already made everything clear.

Cheng Yun He raised his arm and commanded, “Everyone move aside!” Then he turned and spoke to Chu Yang, “Please!”

At this point, Ji Mo and the other martial master had stopped fighting and came over.

On that person’s body, there were clear traces of blood, and the corner of his eyes were also black. On the other hand, there was

just a little bit of dirt mixed with snow on Ji Mo's body; it was obviously that Ji Mo had the upper hand.

Cheng Yun He and the Revered Martial Masters of Golden Horse Riders Department looked at Chu Yang's group and could not help but frown. With the exception of Chu Yang standing next to Cheng Yun He, everyone else stood in a distance away. While they could not protect each other with such a formation, it guaranteed that no matter who got attacked, the rest of them could easily escape without being blocked!

If Cheng Yun He's people made a move on them, only one needed to escape to bring absolute misfortune on Cheng Yun He's group!

Cheng Yun He frowned endlessly. These opponents might have been young, but they were working in synchronicity with each other. They were so cautious that he could not find any way to attack them.

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing walked ahead and carefully searched each carriage...

Chapter 206: Holding hands and being friends

Gu Du Xing walked in front, Chu Yang walked behind. Gu Du Xing made precise movements that seemed almost unconscious. Each time he checked a carriage, he placed his hand on it and mindlessly dragged his hand along.

During this process, Cheng Yun He remained close to the two walking on the white snow as he went around the carriage and leisurely examined everything.

Each time they passed a carriage, Gu Du Xing shook his head and exchanged a glance with Chu Yang.

Not found.

They searched all the way to the last carriage and still did not find anything.

Chu Yang paused feeling somewhat surprised.

There were absolutely no signs of life in these carriages. And given the injuries of that King level leader, it was without question that he could not act on his own. But he was currently not is this caravan; how was this possible?

Could it be that his injuries are so serious that he could not be moved, and he has to remain in Iron Cloud Citadel?

Cheng Yun He smiled; he caught up to them and said, “What is it that you want? You can just take it; there is no need to be polite.”

Chu Yang looked at him for a long time before saying slowly, “You should know what I want to get. Good people don’t talk with ambiguous words, why do you need to pretend in front of me?”

Cheng Yun He smiled with some grief and said, “Of course I know, but I also cannot do anything about that.”

“Oh? He is here?” Chu Yang asked sternly.

“He is here…” Cheng Yun He let out a long sigh and said, “Unfortunately, you cannot kill him!”

“Please explain!” Chu Yang’s eyes brightened with a faint feeling that this was too much of a coincidence.

“The King level leader has left this world!” Cheng Yun He’s eyes glistened with irrepressible tears. He said with a hoarse voice, “We are bringing his remains back…”

“He’s dead?” Chu Yang muttered. The King level leader that Kong Shang Xin had risked his own life to rescue just died like this?

“Where is his body?” Gu Du Xing’s eyes narrowed.

“Body…” Cheng Yun He said angrily, “Do you want to disrespect the dead?”

“Is he dead just because you said he is dead?” Gu Du Xing glared and said icily, “I don’t believe it.”

All the martial masters around them placed their hands on their sword hilts looking very angry. Only Cheng Yun He knew about Yin Wu Fa drinking Meng Hun Solution; no one else knew this. The others learned that King level leader Yin had died and were truly grief-stricken. Now that they heard this group wanted to profane the dead, they could not help but feel angry.

Chu Yang’s eyes flashed, and he said, “Seeing is believing. You should know that we cannot trust your words! Between us, we don’t have that kind of relationship. If you don’t hand over the person, all of your people will die away from home in this ice and snow along with you!”

“Fine!” Cheng Yun He’s eyes flashed as he made a bold decision, “Follow me!”

He strode to the second carriage and said, “King level leader

Yin... is here."

Pulling out the wall of the carriage, he revealed a large wooden board about two meters long. After that piece of wood was lifted out, a cold chill immediately blew at their faces.

The inside was filled with ice, and under the layer of ice was a frail body in black. Lying quietly without any movements, his eyes were completely closed.

There was not a trace of life on this person's body. This was apparently a corpse! The ice layer was apparently to preserve the corpse.

The face of the person in black seemed to be completely covered in a layer of white frost. If it was a living person, there should be a little bit of body heat...

That person was too familiar to Chu Yang; he was indeed the person that had interrogated Chu Yang from before!

He is really dead?

Chu Yang felt that there was something odd about this matter. How could a King level master die so easily?

As if answering the question in Chu Yang's mind, Cheng Yun He said sadly, "He was already severely injured and did not have enough time to heal before being surrounded. He recovered less than twenty percent of his strength! By the time he broke out and arrived at our place, he was completely burnt out. After he died, the others cleansed his body and discovered..."

Cheng Yun He's tone became extremely serious, "On his body, there are one hundred thirty-seven wounds, big and small!"

One hundred thirty-seven wounds!

Chu Yang was startled. After the battle, Chu Yang had called in everyone who had seen and fought with Yin Wu Fa. After tallying everything, it was determined that he should have around one

hundred wounds.

At this moment, that figure was confirmed!

The two looked at each other for a while and saw the thoughts behind each other's eyes: He is really dead!

Death was the end; this rule was eternal. Anyone who disrespected the dead would be ridiculed by the rest of the world!

Yin Wu Fa had died, and his trip had become meaningless. Chu Yang was momentarily at a loss for words. While he still could not believe a King level master would die so easily, the truth was right in front of his face.

Gu Du Xing suddenly took a step forward and placed his hand on Yin Wu Fa's body.

People shouted from all directions, "What are you doing?"

Gu Du Xing sneered and turned to look at the emotional subordinates. He said coldly, "Shut up!"

Then he grabbed the sword hilt with his right hand and quietly activated his martial energy with a very minute and odd movement. A powerful invisible energy flew out and went into Yin Wu Fa's two feet.

This was the Gu clan's specialty – Invisible Sword Chi! Gu Du Xing did this because he was afraid that Yin Wu Fa was faking his own death.

It was a kind of technique that was covert and would not be discovered by others.

As long as the person was alive, whether conscious or unconscious, they could not endure the pain of their two legs being damaged! But Yin Wu Fa continued to lie there peacefully without any reactions.

Then Gu Du Xing arrogantly held on to his sword as he walked in front of their opponents. After a long while, he finally showed his

disappointment and said, “Let’s go.”

Chu Yang let out a dissatisfied sigh and said, “The person is dead; it’s over. We won’t trouble you.” Then he immediately stepped toward Cheng Yun He and looked at him deeply, “We had wanted to use herbal medicine to make friends and create a foundation for our future in Great Zhao. We just never expected it to turn out this way.”

“You people want to go to Great Zhao?” Cheng Yun He’s eyes brightened. While he saw Chu Yang’s “herbal medicine to make friends” as total bullsh*t, he was especially interested to the other half of what Chu Yang said.

“Not necessarily! Maybe yes, maybe no!” Chu Yang smile and said carelessly, “We are challengers, where wouldn’t we go?”

Cheng Yun He’s eyes flashed, and he said sincerely, “This is expected. If you are ever in Great Zhao, you must come and find me so I could be your host!” Then he immediately pulled out a jade calling card and gave it to Chu Yang. He said, “This is my address in Great Zhao. Please take it. If you have time, come and have a drink with me.”

“While I am not certain I will go, I accept your kind intentions.” Chu Yang laughed and received it happily. The moment he accepted that jade calling card, Nine Tribulations Sword tip suddenly shot out. It rushed from his dantian with incomparable speed, and, from the fingertip contact between the two, it went into Cheng Yun He’s body.

Cheng Yun He only felt a sudden chill in his arm as it went slightly numb. But he did not cultivate martial arts so he naturally did not know what just happened. He thought that his opponent was testing him, and laughed, “I am really just a frail scholar. Please don’t mock me.”

But Chu Yang did not pull his arm back. He held his opponent’s hand and said warmly, “Men can make contributions without

necessarily using force; you should not mind it so."

Cheng Yun He thought wryly: When did I mind it? You are the one holding on tightly and not letting me go...

When he sensed that Nine Tribulations Sword tip had yet to return, Chu Yang had no other way but to continue holding on to his opponent's hand and buy more time, "Ah, I never asked for your name."

"My surname is Cheng, hahaha..." Having a man hold on to his hand like this was extremely weird. Cheng Yun He could feel his hair standing on ends as he asked, "And you are?"

"My surname is Gu. And this is my second brother." Chu Yang held on to his hand and was surprised by how supple his skin felt. He felt nauseated by this, but he could not let it go. He had to shake it a few times and said, "Haha, wow... we really hit it off..."

Cheng Yun He's countenance became even more paled. He forcefully tried pulled his hand back, but he discovered that his opponent was holding on too tightly. As he could not pull out his hand, he grew more frightened and said with a smile, "Ah, Brother Gu, first... can you let go of my hand?"

Chu Yang said in surprise, "Your hand? Is your hand okay? Let me see." Then he unexpectedly held up the Cheng Yun He's hand and looked at it carefully, "There is nothing. Your skin is so white and soft..."

Cheng Yun He's countenance completely darkened...

At this moment, Chu Yang's hand trembled as he felt Nine Tribulations Sword tip finally returning bringing with it a feeling a satiated pleasure as it headed into Chu Yang's dantian.

Feeling relieved, Chu Yang hastily released Cheng Yun He's hand and said, "This... Hahaha... We bothered you too much already. Goodbye."

Cheng Yun He unconsciously pulled his hand back. He almost

shoved it into his clothes but realized it would be rude so he had to force himself to cup his hand and did a goodbye salute, “It was nothing; it was nothing.”

Chu Yang sighed and turned to look at Yin Wu Fa’s body. Finally, he gave Gu Du Xing a nod and turned to leave.

While Chu Yang had already lived a lifetime, he still did not know there was such a thing called Meng Hun Solution in this world. So even though he was able to chase down his opponent, he could not do anything upon discovering that his opponent was dead.

Although Cheng Yun He had planned on this and had dealt with it very well, even successfully fooling Chu Yang, he never planned on a ruthless person like Gu Du Xing being on Chu Yang’s side.

Without being detected by anyone, he essentially gave Yin Wu Fa an invisible sword slash.

And while all of Yin Wu Fa’s life force was currently hidden by Meng Hun Solution, facing such a sword slash, it was over…

Chapter 207: A powerful force unexpectedly comes

The two groups reluctantly bid farewell. Chu Yang took Ji Mo and company and sped away in the wind and snow. Within moments, they had disappeared into the white landscape.

Seeing that Chu Yang's group had left, Cheng Yun He took a few handfuls of snow and violently rubbed them on his hand. Then he got into his carriage and gave his orders; the caravan slowly went on its way.

"Sir, why did you give him your calling card? These people clearly did not have good intentions!" One of the Revered Martial Artists sitting opposite of him asked in puzzlement.

"How could I not know they harbor malicious intent? But just from looking at them, I can tell that are talented. Plus they are still young, and their mannerism showed that they are not ordinary at all! These people are definitely not people of Bu Tian Pavilion. This we can be certain of." Cheng Yun He closed his eyes and said solemnly.

"This is true. While they are rude, they looked like they are used to the easy life. Plus, they are the arrogant type. King of Hell Chu's Bu Tian Pavilion would probably not be able to recruit characters like these." That Revered Martial Artist frowned and said, "In my humble opinion, these people look more like the descendants of powerful clans. Ordinary families would not be able to nurture talents like those..."

"Yes!" Cheng Yun He said, "No matter what their intentions were, three things are certain. First, they did not intend to chase and kill all of us or notify King of Hell Chu. This tells us about their position. Second, these people have some intent to go to Great Zhao. Third, this is the most important point. He had unintentionally said one thing. And it was because of this that I

gave his my jade calling card.”

“What is that?”

“’We are challengers, where wouldn’t we go?’ It was this.” Cheng Yun He said casually, “Challengers… Currently, how many people in the world go around challenging people? How many clans?”

“Sir, you mean to say… these people are the descendants of Middle Three Heavens clans?” The Revered Martial Artist’s eyes immediately widened.

“Yes!” Cheng Yun He said pensively, “When they were fighting, they were not too united or harmonious. And they did not have the same surnames… It is very likely that they came from multiple clans… Ah, the first youth that appeared, they called him… Luo Ke Di? Is that right?”

“Yes, that was his name.”

“Hmm, and the person that was teasing him most was call Lonely? (TLN: Also Ji Mo) Or was it Ji Mo? Probably Ji Mo.” Cheng Yun He said, “The last guy who was asking about King level leader Yin said his surname is Gu!… This proves that must be from at least three great clans in Middle Three Heavens!”

“All we need to do is ask when we get back.” Cheng Yun He said leisurely, “People like them, it is better to friends than enemies. If they ever come… Haha, even the Prime Minister would have to welcome them. But they were not clear about when they would come, that’s why I gave them this piece of jade. Once they come to Great Zhao, they would surely think of me. And thinking of me, they would likely find me… Isn’t this better than us finding a needle in a haystack?”

“Yes! You are truly wise and have incredible foresight.” That Revered Martial Artist was in awe. A scholar was truly a scholar; his thinking was much more complex than ordinary people.

“Yes, being friends with such clans would be of great benefit. But

being their enemy, the consequences would be even more disastrous." Cheng Yun He said, "On the off chance that they come to Great Zhao... In your opinion, given their abilities, could they not stir up a lot of trouble?"

That Revered Martial Artist thought of the arrogant and domineering ways of those six people and could not help but smile; he said, "People like them, it would be odd if they don't stir up trouble wherever they go..."

"Yes, and if someone in Great Zhao provokes them..." Cheng Yun He stroked his beard and said, "The playboy punks in Great Zhao are not few..."

The Revered Martial Artist's countenance shifted as he said, "Mmm, many."

"I have to take careful insurance measures..." Cheng Yun He took a deep breath and said, "Whether it will be useful or not, I have laid down a foundation today."

In the howling snow and wind, the caravan finally disappeared.

At this time, after going for some distance, Chu Yang turned around and looked at the vast landscape; he muttered, "Whether it will be useful or not, I have laid down a foundation today..."

Gu Du Xing asked, "What foundation?"

Chu Yang laughed and said, "The foundation to go to Great Zhao!"

His whip snapped and rang through the emptiness; he said, "Let us return to Heavenly Armament Pavilion!"

Gu Du Xing and company complied and rushed after.

At this very moment, Chu Yang suddenly let out a loud scream and fell to the ground. Gu Du Xing and the rest were startled. They hastily dismounted and ran toward him with concern. They could only see that Chu Yang's whole body was red as his head was

steaming with heat. The snow was falling heavily, but the moment it touched this heat, it immediately melted.

The heat grew stronger and stronger...

Gu Du Xing and company were puzzled. In such icy weather, how could Chu Yang look like he was burning up?

Currently, Chu Yang was suffering from indescribable misery. Just now, a massive force had rushed out from his dantian; Chu Yang head almost exploded! The meridians in his entire body were expanded to their limits...

The discomfort was unimaginable.

He barely managed to control himself to get into a meditative sitting position. Then he ignored everything else and activated his martial energy in that position in the middle of the wilderness. Chu Yang felt that if he was a little slower in activating his martial energy, this massive force would have ripped him into tiny pieces.

Chu Yang felt very strange. F*! Where does such a powerful medicinal force come from? Didn't I already absorb all of the earnings from the palace's vault? How could there still be more?

He still did not know that this was the reaping of Nine Tribulations Sword's thievery!

The two slices of Diwu Qing Rou's Jade Spirit Ginseng had been placed in an exquisite jade box under Cheng Yun He's shirt. What Nine Tribulations Sword needed most was the power of this kind of treasure. Of course, with sharp senses, it discovered this and took the opportunity of Chu Yang making contact with Cheng Yun He to go over and it quickly stole them.

Nine Tribulations Sword did this without anyone noticing; within moments, it had absorbed all of the Jade Spirit Ginseng and snuck back with satisfaction.

After it had taken in the essence for itself, the medicinal potency left over became the fortune of Nine Tribulations Sword's master,

Chu Yang!

However, this force was truly massive... Chu Yang could barely withstand it!

This was nothing strange. One slice of Jade Spirit Ginseng was enough to help restore the vitality of a dying King level master and restore thirty percent of his strength! Then what would happen if he ate two at a time?

How much was thirty percent strength of a King level master?

This could not be calculated, but compared to a seventh grade Martial Artist like Chu Yang, it must be much greater... Getting hit with such a colossal medicinal force under such unexpected circumstances, it was already good that Chu Yang did not become completely stupefied by the shock...

Chu Yang tried to maintain consciousness and push this force through his meridians, but he still had the feeling that this force was too large and his meridians were really too narrow. Essentially, this force could not be pushed through fast enough. It was as if the waterfall was trying to pass through a tiny little cave with no other way to escape but to squeeze through...

One could only imagine the kind of pressure Chu Yang was under right now!

His meridians were almost blocked but the medicinal force from his dantian did not cease to pour out into them...

Gu Du Xing and the rest were anxiously watching Chu Yang. They looked at his suddenly reddened body and his meridians which were slowly bulging as if they were about to burst out in the snow.

The heat being emitted from his body grew more substantial by the moment. Gradually, the layer of snow under him melted away. Even Ji Mo and company were sweating from the heat as they stood by his side...

Gu Du Xing took a deep breath. He placed his palm on Chu Yang's back intending to activate his martial energy and lend Chu Yang a hand. Looking at Chu Yang's current situation, with the meridians completely blocked, someone had to help him clear them...

Gu Du Xing had visual ability, and he also had accurate judgement. But he thought that Chu Yang had his meridians blocked because of some other reason, not because there was so much energy in his body that it could not handle.

Currently, what Chu Yang needed was to free that powerful force from his body, not receive another force to help regulate his energy flow. If an additional force came into his body at this moment, it would definitely be disastrous...

The moment Gu Du Xing placed his hand and activated his martial energy, there was a loud boom. His body shot outward as if he was a ball that was being pushed down a mountain by an unexpected flash flood...

He immediately flew out thirty feet into a pile of snow. The whole pile of snow started to sizzle as steam rose. Ji Mo and company were startled, and hastily rushed over. Gu Du Xing wobbled out of the snow pile and shook his head. He said with a paled face, "This force is truly powerful."

Gu Du Xing was currently an eighth grade Great level master; his cultivation level was much higher than Chu Yang's, but he was still beaten by the energy in Chu Yang's body. He almost got injured while Chu Yang was still in an unconscious state...

This fact left Gu Du Xing stunned...

"How could this be?" Ji Mo was greatly agitated. Since the time he was fighting with that Revered Martial Master, he already felt something was different with his body. But he could not put it into words; in short, he was already anxious.

"I was pushed out..." Right after Gu Du Xing said this, the other

four were petrified! Pushed out? An eight grade Martial Artist pushed out an eight grade Great level master? Was this a joke?

“It’s true!” Gu Du Xing saw the suspicious in the face of the four and said helplessly.

“F*!” Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di yelled out in unison and sat with their heads tilted as they looked at Chu Yang meditating. They kept shaking their heads and almost sprained their necks…

“Could it be that Big Brother pretended to be a pig to eat tigers? Has he been playing us the whole time?” Luo Ke Di cried out, “I even picked on him recently… I am in big trouble, big trouble…”

“It’s not anything like that.” Gu Du Xing said, “I also can’t tell how he’s doing this; maybe it is accidental…”

Rui Bu Tong, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di yelled out at the same time, “Oh god… give me one chance to be accidental like that…”

Chapter 208: Successive breakthroughs

At this moment, Chu Yang was miserable beyond words. That force did not cease to agitate his entire body. Chu Yang felt as if his meridians could no longer hang on and were about to burst. He could only try to hang on, but he did not know how long he could hang on for...

At any moment, his body could explode into a pile of meat pieces; but before that happened, Chu Yang absolutely would not give up!

The pressure on his meridians was increasing... Blood was starting to trickle out from his orifices making his face look very grim and horrifying...

In this exact time...

“Motherf*, what is this?” The sword spirit that Chu Yang had been manically trying to summon had finally appeared. The moment it appeared, it was immediately shocked, “Where did you find herbal medicine with such enormous potency?”

Then, seeming to check, it was suddenly surprised, “It’s the power of Jade Spirit Ginseng!” If flew into a great fury, “Why did you eat this kind of thing?”

“What kind of thing did I eat? Jade Spirit Ginseng?” Chu Yang could only think in his head, but that little bit of distraction was already very difficult on him. He did not even have the strength for a mental conversation...

“Absorb! Control!...” The sword spirit roared out as if not taking any time for break. Gradually, Chu Yang felt the pressure in his body weakened...

Finally, after some period of controlling that force, the sword spirit finally paused and said with frustration, “I only controlled seventy percent; you must take in the rest... Geez... You damn kid. Are rare items really easy to eat? You are really stupid! If it were

not for me, you would have become a pile of meat…”

Chu Yang was now starting to feel a little conscious, but his meridians continued to bulge like before. He did not bother with the angry words from the sword spirit and concentrated on controlling his martial energy.

“This… I can no longer control his cultivation level. But with no enlightenment to go with it, what should I do?” After Chu Yang entered his meditative state, the sword spirit continued to mutter seemingly very troubled…

Ji Mo and company worriedly looked at Chu Yang. After Gu Du Xing’s encounter, Ji Mo still did not abandon the idea of helping out. His result was even worse than Gu Du Xing’s. He flew out by fifty or sixty feet and fell head first into the pile of snow like a loose kite… His arms and legs stuck out still flailing in the wind…

Everyone thought that was funny, but they were even more concerned for Chu Yang.

But slowly, the expressions of the five went from concerned to alarmed. That violent force was slowly weakening… It seemed that Chu Yang had stabilized…

Then his situation became steadied, and everyone let out a sigh of relief as if a weight had been lifted off their shoulders…

Gu Du Xing said coldly, “I thought you guys couldn’t accept big brother. Well, why are you all so anxious right now?”

Ji Mo said without turning around, “Gibberish! When did I say I don’t accept him?” He suddenly frowned and said worriedly, “Motherf*, twenty days out of a month has passed; why don’t I have any feeling of a breakthrough? F*! If I get cast out… I will lose all of my face…”

The moment he said that, everyone agreed with him. Luo Ke Di said sadly, “Me, too. I feel like I am stuck at a bottleneck. It’s the fault of all of you; you beat me up every day…”

Dong Wu Shang smiled and said, “I should be breaking through in one or two days. This is so embarrassing; it seems that I have no choice but to take that third brother position!”

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di immediately rolled their eyes as they looked hatefully at Dong Wu Shang. The two could not even cry out tears...

Rui Bu Tong also frowned in contemplation and said, “I also feel like, in a few days, there is a chance...”

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di’s jaws dropped and the fell to the ground. Could it be that the two of us will be last?

At this very moment, an aura rippled through the atmosphere...

This aura was very familiar! It was breakthrough aura!

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di reacted as if they were cats who got their tails stepped on. They hastily jumped out and let out a strange scream. Then they searched all around, “Who? Motherf*, who is it? Who broke through?”

They were already infinitely bitter with just talking, and now it actually happened?

The moment they turned their heads, they saw Dong Wu Shang, who was just triumphant, was now also startled. He rolled his eyes and looked behind him, “Breakthrough over there; mother*!”

“Not over there...” Before Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di could finish speaking, they suddenly became stupefied and ran forward.

They could only see Chu Yang’s calm countenance; his reddish purple face had disappeared. There seemed to be a glowing jade luster underneath his skin.

“Big brother is breaking through again...” Luo Ke Di muttered.

“Mmm, he was below ninth grade Martial Artist...” Gu Du Xing rolled his eyes and said casually, “What’s so strange about it?”

“What’s so strange about it?” Ji Mo murmured that phrase once

more; then he suddenly yelled out, “You tell me if it’s strange. A few days ago he just broke through. Plus he broke through three grades in a row! And now he is breaking through again?”

“Three grades… That’s nothing!” Gu Du Xing said condescendingly, “Just you wait and see!” Gu Du Xing had a feeling that this time, Chu Yang would surely create a new marvel!

In front of the stunned gazes of five talented young men, Chu Yang started to advance from ninth grade and slowly went into mid-level ninth grade Martial Artist, then top-level…

Chu Yang’s countenance reddened once more…

A dense aura burst out!

“And… and he’s breaking through again… Martial Master… first grade Martial Master!” Luo Ke Di stuttered.

The others were dumbfounded. Their neck stretched like a giraffe as they looked; their eyeballs almost dropped out. Only Gu Du Xing maintained an indifference expression as he thought to himself: You are all not really shocked yet. You only need to stay with Chu Yang; sooner or later, you will be composed like me…

Just thinking about how he could be composed like this, Gu Du Xing felt a little bitter. Looking at the current expressions of Ji Mo and company… they were no different than his from before…

He was already a first grade Martial Master, but the aura continued to rise… mid-level, top-level…

Bang!

Ji Mo’s mouth grew wider and wider; finally, it let out a cracking sound as he dislocated his jaw. It hurt so much that his body trembled. He hastily raised his hands to adjust it and called out, “Second grade… He is at second grade already…”

That voice of his was extremely high-pitched like an old woman had just discovered her husband sneaking food; that kind of

underlying bitterness… was truly indescribable…

The others stood petrified like statues while maintaining their giraffe figures…

Low-level second grade, mid-level second grade… peak of second grade…

Dong Wu Shang plopped to the ground and hastily grabbed some snow to rub on his face, “Damn, I need to calm down…”

Finally, bang…

The five people were petrified!

Third grade… mid-level third grade… peak of third grade…

My god, he has finally stopped!

Looking at the four stunned people who seemed as if they had just seen a ghost, Gu Du Xing said in disdain, “Isn’t it just a breakthrough? Look at you people… You are acting as if you have not seen it before.”

“Not seen it before? Gu Du Xing, can you be less heartless?” Ji Mo shrieked, “Before, he broke through as a Martial Artist. This time, he is breaking through as a Martial Master; are they the same thing?”

Hearing this, Gu Du Xing immediate comprehended and smacked his forehead, “Yes!” He looked in Chu Yang’s direction with more astonishment.

Yes, how could a Martial Artist’s breakthrough be the same as a Martial Master’s breakthrough? But Chu Yang still did it just as easily like he was splitting bamboo!

Everyone recalled at once the words Chu Yang had said before: “I am currently a fourth grade Martial Artist! In a month, I will break through Martial Master!… Each of you must advance by one grade in cultivation.”

Yes, but it had only been twenty days! Chu Yang had achieved his

target of becoming a Martial Master! Moreover, he went beyond his goal!

He had broken through ten grades, and the rest of them had not changed!

With such comparison, Ji Mo suddenly wanted to kill himself! He had always considered himself a heavenly talent; now, he realized that he was as dumb as a pig!

The gap was too great!

At this very moment, Gu Du Xing quietly spoke into Ji Mo's ear, "Ji Mo, I will tell you a piece of good news."

"What?" Ji Mo asked with a tearful face.

"The good news is... I will break through ninth grade Sword Great Master soon..." Gu Du Xing smiled joyfully.

"Aaaaaah..." Ji Mo completely collapsed. He jumped up and yelled, "Is there heavenly justice? Is there heavenly justice left? Where is heavenly justice?"

All of a suddenly, he knelt on the ground and beat his face into the snow, "Kill me, kill me..."

Luo Ke Di and Dong Wu Shang looked at Ji Mo in surprise; they stammered, "He... is epileptic?"

"A case of epileptic seizure!" Gu Du Xing looked joyfully at another's suffering...

At this time, an aura suddenly surged up!

Someone was also having a breakthrough!

Everyone looked in Chu Yang's direction in shock. They thought: This monstrous guy, is he still not done with breaking through? But looking at him, they did not see any changes. While they were still puzzled, Dong Wu Shang screamed out, "Why is it you? Why is it you?"

Everyone followed his gaze to find Ji Mo crouched on the ground looking very strange. That aura was indeed emitted from Ji Mo's body...

This punk continually received stimuli and had now unexpectedly broken through...

Dong Wu Shang was indescribably bitter!

He was close to breaking through; he was on the verge of passing his bottleneck. All he needed to do was go home and carefully cultivate. Then he could break through and become third brother worshipped by three junior brothers...

Dong Wu Shang even thought about how he would act when he get this position...

However, in the blink of an eye, Ji Mo had unexpectedly broken through before he did! According to the break through order... Ji Mo had become third brother. And even if he broke through, he would be ranked under Ji Mo...

In this hour, second young master Dong Wu Shang could only grind his teeth while hating Ji Mo! His mind was tangled as he did not know how to react. Could it be because I slacked off and wasted half a day? How could this be?

Chapter 209: Fresh hot third brother

Suddenly, everyone broke down! Gu Du Xing had just said that he was about to break through; Dong Wu Shang also said that he was about to break through; and while Luo Ke Di did not say anything, one could tell from looking at smugness that he was clearly going to break through within this month. Given the current situation, it was not really a problem for anyone.

But Ji Mo was the only one who did not say anything, and Ji Mo was the only one to break through!

Within moments, everyone felt as if they were struck by lightning. They temporarily stood staring without knowing what to say.

Chu Yang had continually broken through making everyone exceedingly shocked. But even if he broke through, he would only remain as big brother; nothing would be changed! And at this time, the ranking in the brotherhood was based on the order of breakthrough; it had become the primary focus in everyone's heart.

Gu Du Xing's cultivation was the highest, and he broke through the fastest taking the position of second brother. There was nothing anyone could say about that!

Of the top three positions, two were gone. Everyone was frantically trying to climb to the position of third brother. During this time, everyone might have been fighting chaotically, but they were also secretly competing against one another.

Each person thought that he would be the one to get the third brother position!

This was especially true for Dong Wu Shang who already had one cheek on the third brother throne. He could not believe that a punk suddenly jumped out and kicked him off that throne.

“There is no heavenly justice… no heavenly justice…” Dong Wu Shang murmured listlessly. Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong looked at him empathetically.

While the two of them also competed, they knew that they were weaker than Dong Wu Shang. They did not expect Ji Mo to categorically beat Dong Wu Shang like this. And even though they were very disheartened by all of this, looking at Dong Wu Shang acting like this, they could not help but feel better.

Someone is riding a horse, and I am only riding a donkey; but there is a beggar behind me!

“Wu Shang…” Luo Ke Di tried hard to show an expression of pain as he patted Dong Wu Shang’s shoulder, “Come to think of it… In this world, everything changes like that. Nothing is certain. It has been said that seventy or eighty percent of life cannot be what we want… In truth, Ji Mo is strong; having him as a third brother, I feel okay with this…”

Dong Wu Shang hyperventilated and frowned without saying a word.

Luo Ke Di was internally elated. Now that he saw Dong Wu Shang making such a face, he became more sly and added, “While Ji Mo broke through seventh grade this time, you will soon break through eighth grade. You will be one grade higher than him. This is more important, haha… Hahaha.. Ahwooh…”

Half way through his speech, he could not help but be elated with schadenfreude. He unexpectedly stomped his feet and laughed while spraying saliva on Dong Wu Shang’s body…

After letting out two laughs, Luo Ke Di suddenly realized: Shoot! This is not the time to revel in someone else’s suffering. This bastard might use his black saber to fight me… His laughter immediately subsided, and his face turned white.

“Did you laugh enough? Is it really funny? Are you feeling very

happy?" Dong Wu Shang narrowed his eyes and looked at Luo Ke Di dangerously. His already dark skin tone now looked like a steel block. His countenance was calm, but a dangerous air was emitted from his gaze.

"Ah, no! Not funny! Not happy!" Luo Ke Di shook his head like a rattle drum. Even the meat on his cheeks shook as he said repeatedly, "Unhappy! Very unhappy!"

"Unhappy! Let me help you feel better!" Dong Wu Shang let out a roar and grabbed Luo Ke Di's collar. Luo Ke Di was panicked; he knew that Dong Wu Shang was currently unhappy, and he had carelessly teased him. Seeing other attacking, Luo Ke Di could only make a desperate attempt to escape!

One person desperately tried pulled back as the other desperately tried to pull away. Both of them had great strength and had activated their martial energy as well. Right away, there was an unexpected result.

Rip! A white body flew out in an arc over the air and fell into a pile of white snow. Luo Ke Di yelled out angrily, "Dong Wu Shang! You deserved to be chopped to pieces! I will fight to the death with you…"

His mouth might have said this, but he was hastily covering himself looking really embarrassed.

Dong Wu Shang was also surprised; holding the clothes in his hand, he suddenly roared with laughter.

As it turned out, the two had managed to rip apart all of the clothes on Luo Ke Di! Right now, Luo Ke Di was no different from a new born babe… pure, white…

The other two standing nearby was stunned for a moment; then they took a deep breath and laughed uncontrollably.

"Hahaha!" Rui Bu Tong was gleeful. Today was the happiest day in his life. First, he got to witness Luo Ke Di getting a beating.

Then, he got to see Dong Wu Shang beaten by Ji Mo. After that, he got to watch Luo Ke Di getting another beating, “Hahaha... I just saw Luo Ke Di’s whip earlier; I can’t believe I get to another one...”

“Mmm, this one is a little short though.” Gu Du Xing had never felt so amused; he laughed until his whole body trembled. He said, “No wonder Ji Mo worshiped Luo Ke Di’s butt so much; it is a temptation...”

Dong Wu Shang forgot all about dealing with Luo Ke Di and held onto a tree trunk laughing.

Just then, Ji Mo had come out of his meditative state. The moment he opened his eyes, he saw a human body with one hand clutching his crotch. He was jumping up and down and yelling, “Give me clothes...”

When this person jumped in front of Gu Du Xing, Gu Du Xing was gone. He ran to Rui Bu Tong, and Rui Bu Tong disappeared. He Ran to Dong Wu Shang, and Dong Wu Shang jumped right to the top of the tree...

Since then, he could only see this guy covering his butt and his family jewel as he tried to hide with his red body.

Ji Mo took a closer look and realized that this person was Luo Ke Di! Second young master Luo! His eyes rolled as he called out, “I say, second young master Luo, is the weather really that hot?”

“Hey... Ji Mo, third brother! Third brother...” Luo Ke Di instantly found a savior and sweetly called him third brother, “Third brother, oh third brother, give me clothes to wear first...”

Ji Mo was immediately satisfied from head to toe! This third brother throne, I finally get to sit on it!

Without any hesitation, he took of the cloak on his body. As he was about to hand it over, he paused and asked, “What happened?”

“Come on... Give it to me.” Luo Ke Di grabbed the cloak and hastily put it on himself. It covered him from top to bottom while

his hands tightly held the opening together. He finally felt a little more secure.

Looking at people all around, Luo Ke Di shivered with fear and stuttered, “Hey, the weather is a little bit cold…”

He was a sixth grade Martial Great Master. In this snowy weather, he could be naked for half a month and not feel cold. Now that he said this, it made everyone rolled over with laughter.

“Yes, it’s really cold! So cold that second young master Luo took off all of his clothes!” Dong Wu Shang laughed loudly.

“Dong Wu Shang!” Luo Ke Di shouted angrily, “You are responsible!”

“I am definitely responsible!” Dong Wu Shang laughed and clasped his hands together, “Everyone, it seems that my future happiness is set. Second young master Luo wants to marry me…”

“Hahaha…”

Ji Mo laughed for a while before remembering his good fortune. He immediately stopped laughing and let out a dry cough, “Everyone!”

Everyone stopped playing around and looked at him.

“Second brother above, please accept the respect of this third brother!” Ji Mo ceremoniously walked in front of Gu Du Xing and kowtowed.

Gu Du Xing was surprised and involuntarily said, “Third brother, please stand up…” Then he reach out his arms and helped Ji Mo up.

“It’s everyone else’s turn!” After he performed his ceremony, Ji Mo did not wait for Gu Du Xing’s polite response. He quickly turned around and said with the countenance of a proud and petty person, “You are still not greeting your third brother?”

Dong Wu Shang suddenly went silent and looked as if fire was

going to shoot out of his eyes.

“Dong Wu Shang, what? You can’t accept this?” Ji Mo stuck his nose to the heavens and asked, “Are you quicker or am I quicker? Should I call you third brother?”

Dong Wu Shang huffed and puffed with his eyes widened.

“What? You are not keeping your promise? You want to abandon your good name? You want…” Ji Mo sneered cockily.

“Third…” Dong Wu Shang closed his eyes.

“Third what? I can’t hear you…” Ji Mo perked up his ear and tried to clear it with his finger.

“Third brother…” Dong Wu Shang was as anguished as a young woman who was raped and accused by her husband.

“Ah…” Ji Mo’s voice stretched out as he was demonstrating his lungs’ capacity. His satisfaction level rose up tremendously; in moments, it broke through the highest limit.

“And the two of you?” Ji Mo stuck up his nose, “It’s your turn; quickly!”

“Third… brother…” Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong were like ducks who got their noses pinched as they spoke reluctantly.

“Good! Haha…” Ji Mo was cocky as he feigned sincerity, “Three junior brothers, you must try hard. Haha, on the off chance that you cannot break through by the deadline, even third brother will not be able to help you. You should know, that talent cannot happen without hardship, a sword would be dull without sharpening…”

Dong Wu Shang and the other two grinded their teeth as they looked at the triumphant third brother standing in front of them. The only thing they wanted to do was stick a stinky sock into his mouth.

“Third brother… cough cough…” Dong Wu Shang’s face was as

dark as a pot's bottom, "When I was training, there was some things I could not understand. I want to try them out with third brother..."

Ji Mo was immediately tongue-tied, "You can try them out with second brother..."

"I have already worked with second brother." Dong Wu Shang squeezed his knuckles, and the cracking sounds of his joints rang out, "You are third brother; of course I have to find you to try them out and learn a few things!"

Ji Mo's eyes rolled as he backed up. But Dong Wu Shang had already yelled out loud as he poured all of the anguish he just endured into this "learning" session...

Chapter 210: We will be together

This fresh out of the oven third brother Ji Mo fell to the ground with his legs twitching. His swollen face looked like a pig… He still kept up appearances as he splayed himself on the ground, “Luo Ke Di, Rui Bu Tong, hurry over here and massage third brother… Oooh… this bastard’s moves are so cruel…”

At this time, big brother Chu was finally done with his cultivation and stood up. The moment he looked over, he could not avoid being stunned momentarily. He asked, “This… What happened?”

He only saw Luo Ke Di holding tightly to a cloak. At the waist, there was a sash fashioned from vines. At the bottom, two white legs peeked out. He looked no different from a peasant going to the mountain to gather wood.

On the other hand, Ji Mo’s face was red and purple all over. These colorful blooms covered his body, and yet he was smiling happily…

Seeing such a situation in front of him, the superior intellect of Minister Chu could not decipher what had happened.

“Ji Mo broke through… and successfully sat on Dong Wu Shang’s head…” Gu Du Xing also did not know how to explain it correctly.

“F*!” Chu Yang was also surprised. He scratched his head and asked, “How could it be Ji Mo?”

These past few days, it was clearly visible that while every one of them was showing signs of possible breakthroughs, the one that was most obvious was Dong Wu Shang. How could the world turned up-side-down in the blink of an eye…

“Why can’t it be me?” While Ji Mo’s entire body was sore, he jumped up the moment he heard Chu Yang said these words. He fiercely protected the position that he had the good fortune to

come by, “Big brother, what do you mean? I can’t be third brother? Big brother, you said that we will be ranked based on the order of breakthrough. You cannot take back your words!”

Currently, Ji Mo was calling Chu Yang big brother most smoothly.

“Alright, alright.” Chu Yang nodded. He turned his head and looked at Dong Wu Shang. Second young master Dong’s mouth was crooked showing a smile that was uglier than a crying face…

Seeing Chu Yang looking in his direction, Dong Wu Shang was at a loss for words. He just wanted to cry and lament over his misfortune…

“I see…” Chu Yang continually nodded, “This learning session is how you brothers welcome third brother, right?”

“For this third brother position, I am willing to be colorful every day!” Ji Mo stuck his face up haughtily. With an unfaltering attitude, he had proven his determination to hold on to this position even if it could cost him his life!

“You are something!” Chu Yang had given up with this guy and gave him a thumbs up.

“Okay. What about Coyote?” Chu Yang scratched his head, “Is it very hot?” He looked up at the snow that had been falling for three days; it was indeed winter.

“Yes, yes.” Luo Ke Di laughed excessively and unexpectedly fanned himself with the hem of his cloak, “It’s nothing; it’s just so hot…”

“Big brother, you don’t know. Earlier, Luo Ke Di pulled out both of his whips to fight with Dong Wu Shang! They already made a decision on marriage as well!” Rui Bu Tong reported as if he was worried that things would not be chaotic enough…

After hearing about all the things that happened during his meditation, Chu Yang felt as if his brain had short-circuited. His

mouth twitched for a while. Then, unable to control himself any longer, he clutched his stomach and burst out laughing.

As Chu Yang laughed, everyone else glanced as each other. And whether they were butt naked or full of pink and purple blooms, they could not help but laugh.

After laughing for a while, Dong Wu Shang let out a sigh and said, “Yes, from now on, you are third brother! Today will serve not only as a lesson for me, but also an experience. Nothing should be delayed! If you have a goal, you have to use all of your strength and ability to achieve it first! Even if you are confident, it is not reality until it happens!”

“Exactly! The three of you should pay attention. Even though you are all on the verge of breaking through and are confident that it will happen in the next nine days, anything unexpected could happen. Before you break through, nothing is certain!” Chu Yang said casually, “Therefore, among the three of you, there could be those who will stay, and there could be those who... will have to leave! Dong Wu Shang has learned this today; it is also a lesson for all of you!”

Chu Yang paused a little then said solemnly, “What happened today might seem unexpected, but, in life, there are many unexpected things. Whether it is a breakthrough, cultivation, fighting, trade, or seizing power... they are all uncertain! I will leave you with this: Before the food is in your stomach, it is still not your food!”

After Chu Yang finished talking, everyone, including Gu Du Xing, became pensive. It was especially true with Luo Ke Di, Rui Bu Tong, and Dong Wu Shang who were feeling great sense of urgency!

“Good! Good! Good!” Someone suddenly laughed, “Before the food is in your stomach, it is still not your food! I cannot believe that I could hear words like these on this trip to Lower Three

Heavens. I am pleasantly surprised!”

The moment the voice was heard, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang both turned pale!

The two of them had the highest cultivation in the entire group, but they could not believe that they did not discover someone hiding nearby! Plus, even when the voice was heard, they could not hear where that voice was coming from!

That ethereal voice seemed to come from all directions! Moreover, it seemed to be right next to their ears and yet soft at the same time. They did not feel that it was deafening. On the contrary, it made them feel relaxed as if it was a babbling stream in a mountain.

Chu Yang’s brows perked lightly, and he asked in a low voice, “May I ask which senior is staying here?”

“Haha... I am not staying here... I just happened to pass by.” That person let out a faint laugh. Immediately after, at a distance far from the six people, a figure appeared in the wind and snow.

In this snowy weather, even if he was thirty or forty feet away, his image should have been very faint. But this person was more than a hundred feet away, he should not have been seen so clearly. The odd thing was, they felt as if they could clearly see him.

In the very next moment, the six of them saw plainly that this person who was more than a hundred feet away take a leisurely step...

But after this one step, the whole world seemed to stop. Even the snowflakes in the air slowed down, and the person shortened the distance between them with this one step and appeared right in front of the six!

Moreover, every one of them had the feeling that this was expected! If he had not appeared like so, that would have been strange!

Chu Yang closed his eyes. His countenance remained calm, but an extreme feeling of amazement rose inside him. This person's techniques did not have any psychological effect, but he had unexpectedly caused shock and awe to the whole group with just one step!

Because of this, an extreme feeling of admiration was born in their hearts!

Such a technique was earth-shattering!

In the life before this one, Chu Yang had never seen this. He also did not know that such a martial master existed in this world!

He did not know what this person's cultivation level was, but he knew that it was far higher than King level!

Compared to Chu Yang's amazement, Gu Du Xing and company were even more amazed! On the body of this person in front of them, there was an majestic air. He remained standing like that making everyone feel as if the vast world was in the palm of his hand.

Gu Du Xing and company came from upper crust of Middle Three Heavens, but there were no such masters in their clans!

This person was definitely from beyond Middle Three Heavens!

"What's wrong?" This person looked to be about thirty or forty years old. His face was calm as he looked indifferently at Chu Yang's group, "Did my appearance scare you?"

The moment he said this, an immense aura surged out from his body. It created a fierce pressure that could crush citadels and bring down the sky.

His body suddenly became deep ravines and great mountains in the eyes of the people in Chu Yang's group! Towering and untouchable!

"Your skill is very powerful, but scare us? Not necessarily!"

Three people seemed to have spokes these words in unison.

Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang!

Then the three simultaneous took a step forward! The lifted their heads and looked in the direction of this person at the same time!

Their gazes made the person feel as if two swords and a saber suddenly appeared in front of him!

Swords' arrogance reached the sky!

Saber cut through the universe!

The person frowned slightly, showing a look of admiration in his eyes.

The three young men in front of him had much lower cultivation than his. All he had to do was raise a finger, and he could grab them! But there was not a trace of fear in these young men's eyes!

Instead, their bodies glowed with an unparalleled spirit!

It was as if his appearance gave to a goal to strive for! Their gazes were filled with maximum zeal!

"Ha! Big brother is right! You can kill us, but scare us? Hahaha... Even a supreme level master could not do it!" The person speaking was Luo Ke Di. He just froze for a moment. Then he, Ji Mo, and Rui Bu Tong immediately advanced forward and stood next to Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang.

The six had been training and fighting together. They rarely talked, but all six shared the thought that sharing feelings was unnecessary among men.

But at this moment, facing a powerful master the likes of which they have never seen before, the six stood side by side. A different feeling suddenly rose inside them: If we stand together like this, we can stand together forever!

If we stand like this, we don't have to be scared! Even if we are facing a Supreme master!

If we stand like this, as long as there are others by our side, we will never fall down!

A feeling of sharing life and death together quietly rose in everyone. At this moment, the six people truly felt relaxed and warm.

When I step forward, my brothers immediately stand by my side! They do not care who I am facing!

Regardless of whether my opponent is a foe or a friend, powerful or not, they still stand by my side!

Chapter 211: The brotherhood forms

The pupils of the stranger in front of them momentarily contracted! A trace of admiration showed from the depth of his eyes. Compared to his strength, the strength of these youths was less than that of an ant. But they were filled with camaraderie and pride for each other, enough to make people admire and envy them!

The stranger distinctly felt: In front of me, there is clearly not a wholly unified group of six youngsters! In fact, there is some separation between them! But as I appeared in front of them and put on some pressure as a trial, they quickly became one unit!

Right now, if he was to deal with any one of them, he would be dealing with six people working together seamlessly!

Dealing with six people like this, unless he killed them all, even in death, the six would die together. There was no separating them!

The stranger let out a sigh, feeling emotional in the moment. He clearly knew how mystical such an incident was!

These six people in front of him were obviously in an important stage of integration. There was still a gap in their character and temperament from the level of brotherhood cooperation!

And this gap was their weakness. If their enemy took advantage of this weakness, they would easily be separated and defeated!

However, in such a coincidental event, his sudden appearance at this crucial time had unintentionally created a deadly pressure upon them with his supreme power!

When the stranger heard Chu Yang talking from a distance, he immediately became interested with the speaker and appeared to meet him.

And after seeing their faces, his superior sight naturally saw that

these six youths were, in essence, not ordinary! Thus, he subconsciously wanted to test the strength of these youths.

This was just a natural reaction of a martial expert whenever he meets others of his kind.

His power had already reached the level where it could be activated at the very thought of it. So within the moment he thought of this, his massive aura burst out! It created a powerful oppression over the six youths in front of him!

It was also under his oppression, facing the greatest danger ever, they had fully cooperated with each other in one giant leap!

He had provided them with a key catalyst!

And the key character was the person standing in the middle among the three youths who advanced first! At a glance, this person was the youngest, but he played a key role that no one else could replace!

In fact, even Chu Yang did not know what had just passed. As for Gu Du Xing and company, they were even more clueless.

Only the stranger who contributed to the phenomenon in front of him recognized the great mystery within.

The six people seemed to have responded randomly, but there was still a differentiation!

Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang, as well as Dong Wu Shang, felt the gigantic pressure at the same time and called out before stepping forward. But it was Chu Yang who advanced first!

Within the moment Chu Yang moved, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang also walked after him!

The difference was miniscule, but it made the stranger feel Chu Yang's terrifying power.

Chu Yang had made his move without hesitation; he had only one thought in mind: I have to be the first to block him!

It was precisely the kind of fearlessness clearly demonstrated by this line of thought! Facing such a master, the first person to make such a reaction surely did not pay any mind to life and death!

This one step of Chu Yang was a showing of his decisiveness!

If it was in a real battle, this one step of his would give his brothers behind him a chance at living! While it would be slim, it was a chance for respite or escape nonetheless!

However, it was also because he was decisive and without any hesitation, that a clear sense was born in Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang's minds. Therefore, at that moment, the two were determined not to let their big brother face the enemy alone! So they did not hesitate to follow!

The moment they picked up their heels, Chu Yang also felt a clear sense of brotherhood and their movements. So he unconsciously slowed down a bit and waited for his brothers!

The feet of the three people touched the ground at the same time! In that moment, the three became one absolute and indivisible unit! In the process of uniting six people, half was completed!

The reason the three did this: first, it was because they would not allow their own brother to face a powerful enemy on his own; and second, it was because of their surviving together and dying together mentality. While only a short amount of time had passed and they essentially did not have to process that much, they did so unconsciously!

Therefore, their momentum implicitly stated to the remaining three: We will block, and you guys run!

The decision echoed among the three! Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong were also young and hot-blooded. When they realized the intention of Chu Yang and the other two, they stepped up with almost no considerations!

Birth at the same place, makes brothers!

Death at the same place, makes brothers!

You would do anything for my sake, and I would also risk my life for your sake!

So the other three also followed closely. The moment the six people stood side by side, a bond of brotherhood had begun to form!

From a group of divided misfits, they formed into an impenetrable fortress!

And while the analysis was lengthy, they had all done this subconsciously! They did not have time to consider these matters!

It was because they did not time for considerations that made it most truthful, and enabled them to form this united front!

If anyone of them had thought about it and took time to consider, that person would be tossed aside by the other five, and, in the end, that person would not have the opportunity to enter a group like that again! But all of them did not take time to consider it and acted subconsciously!

Therefore, this bond of brotherhood, from this point on, had truly formed!

The interaction between person and person was indeed mysterious. Between men, there were times when a look could create enemies that could not share the same sky and fight to the death! Sometimes a momentary action could create a bond of brotherhood for a lifetime!

Some things are so mysterious, they cannot be explained!

The stranger sighed; he had never dreamed that his subconscious test could catalyze the formation of such an odd group!

He also did not think about his own position. With such a cultivation level, forget about Lower Three Heavens, it was even rare in Middle Three Heavens. Just appearing from out of

nowhere, apart from everything else, that was enough to stress out people...

If Chu Yang's group did react, that would be strange!

But the gaze of the stranger focused on Chu Yang because of all this. He could feel that Chu Yang was probably a central figure in this team of six!

His indifferent gaze suddenly made contact with Chu Yang's. Chu Yang suddenly felt dizzy. It was as if his opponent's eyes contained the limitless universe and he was being pulled into it, spinning and lost within...

Chu Yang knew well that his mind was being oppressed by his opponent, and all he had to do was look elsewhere or close his eyes, everything thing would return to normal!

But he did not want to do that. He had discovered that his opponent's eyes seemed to be emitting a fierce pull that rendered his eyes unable to look away or close!

He could only allow his eyes to be controlled by his opponent and helplessly float in his opponent's vast power...

Chu Yang felt that he could collapse to the ground at any moment. And, in his consciousness, he had already tumbled down countless times under his opponent's mental power...

But at this very moment, the stranger suddenly let out an "Oh." Right after, Chu Yang felt his mind returning to his body, and his gaze had finally escaped from that saintly force of the opponent.

At this point, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, and Rui Bu Tong had roared out in anger and pulled out their blades. The five attacked in the direction of the stranger! With no chance of return!

They had all recognized that Chu Yang had met with danger!

Facing such a powerful enemy, initiating an attack was

tantamount to asking for death. But the five was not the least bit hesitant and attacked simultaneously!

“Stop!” Chu Yang had just recovered his state of mind and immediately yelled out loud!

But he was too late. Gu Du Xing and company knew that their opponent was powerful so they put their full force into their attack! This was attacking without any reservations; their moves were resolute, and, the moment the made them, there was no pulling back!

The stranger’s gaze remained fixed on Chu Yang’s face, but the bone-chilling pull was no longer there. He carelessly waved his left arm and said, “Leave!”

With a bang, a monstrous amount of snow suddenly filled the air!

Snow in the air, snow on the ground, and snow in the forest all flew up together, and a few large trees even became uprooted. The snow formed a wall that pushed Gu Du Xing and the other four out!

“Senior, please have mercy!” Chu Yang yelled out loud. Then he immediately pushed his legs hard and pulled his right arm into his sleeve! Silent and unseen, Nine Tribulations Sword’s point appeared on his finger tip!

“Don’t worry, they will not die.” There was a touch of emotion in his voice, seemingly suppressed with great effort. He said casually, “They just have to suffer a little pain and nakedness…”

“What do you mean?” Chu Yang intently looked at the stranger. At this point, he no longer had any avoidance. If his opponent was to say that Gu Du Xing and the rest were dead, Chu Yang would immediately would use all of his effort to try to escape, even if that meant revealing the secret of Nine Tribulations Sword!

This was not cowardice; it would be for the sake of vengeance for his brothers that he must live first!

As long as my enemy is not dead, I will not die!

He would hide himself in the forest, and wait until he became more powerful to kill all of the stranger's clan!

But now that he knew Gu Du Xing and the others were okay, Chu Yang felt assured and pulled back Nine Tribulations Sword.

The stranger's body glided forward by a few steps. He carefully looked at Chu Yang's face and asked, "What is your surname?"

"Chu!" Chu Yang replied absently as he tried to listen for any movements from Gu Du Xing and company. Then there were thumping sounds as if some things were falling to the ground...

Immediately after, a painful wailed was heard in the wind. It was followed by angry cursing, "Motherf*, my clothes... Oh, hey... my butt..." It was the voice of Luo Ke Di...

Chu Yang was finally relieved. Luo Ke Di strength was essentially the weakest. If he was okay, then the others would of course be okay also.

"Your surname is Chu?!" The stranger's face suddenly showed some emotion. He said, "What is your name?"

Chu Yang was now assured so he could concentrate all of his efforts in dealing with the strange man in front of him. He rolled his eyes and said, "Why do you ask?"

Chapter 212: I don't mind!

"I am asking. You, name!" The stranger in blue growled out each word. His gaze suddenly became extremely sharp; people would not dare to look straight at him!

These words rang in Chu Yang's ears like thunder! They suddenly created a fierce feeling of shock as if the whole universe had unexpectedly collapsed at this very moment!

"Why do you care about my name?" Chu Yang tried to control the uncomfortable feeling that was created by the fierce shock. A sudden strong rebellious feeling rose inside of him: Who are you? What are you? Why do I have to give you my name just because you ask?

"Speak." The stranger's voice became gentle as if he had realized the shock caused by his voice had caused damage in Chu Yang.

"Why? Do I have to tell you just because you asked?" Chu Yang smiled coldly. There was actually a feeling of anguish. He had not have this kind of feeling in a very long time.

"If you don't speak, I will immediately kill them." The stranger in blue said calmly. He pointed his finger in the direction of Gu Du Xing and company as they desperately ran toward his direction.

The first person that advanced because of his brother was certainly one that valued brotherhood.

"Okay! I will tell you!" Chu Yang immediately conceded. This move of the stranger in blue hit directly at his weak spot!

"My name is Chu Yang!" Chu Yang said in annoyance, "Do you want to find a wife for me?"

"Huh..." A faint smile appeared in the stranger's eyes; he said, "Chu Yang... finding a wife for you... what's so difficult?"

One of his arm suddenly reached out, and a strong pull was

emitted from his palm. It unexpectedly sucked Chu Yang's body forward. Chu Yang felt as if he was tied up by ten thousand ropes, unable to move even if he wanted to. He said angrily, "What are you doing?"

"What am I doing?" The stranger in blue smiled suddenly grabbed his ankles. He turned Chu Yang upside-down and shook him a few times. Everything that was on Chu Yang's body fell all over the ground.

"Huh... This punk. You have a lot of stuff on you."

The stranger looked at the pile on the ground and suddenly frowned and said, "Damn, why are they all shady poisons?"

Being suspended upside-down, Chu Yang's body wiggled back and forth. Unable to control himself any longer, he said, "Motherf*! My strength is not enough. If I don't use shady poisons, should I just wait to die?"

The stranger in blue tilted his head and thought. Then he unexpectedly spoke in agreement, "That makes sense."

Then he pushed around Chu Yang's things with his foot. His countenance became increasingly difficult to look at as he muttered, "Why is it not here?"

There was sudden ripping sounds as all of the clothes on Chu Yang fell to the ground. Big brother Chu immediately received the same treatment as Luo Ke Di; he had become naked from top to bottom.

The stranger's eyes unexpectedly widened as he looked at what was between Big brother Chu's legs. He smacked his lips, "Not small at all. You look like you propagate easily... But, why is it not here?"

Chu Yang almost vomited blood.

"Bastard! Put me down immediately! I... I... I will kill you!" Chu Yang could feel the blood rushing to his head as he became

enraged.

Plop! A naked minister Chu was tossed into a pile of snow. Without a care for gracefulness, he quickly grabbed his clothes and put them back on. The stranger did not bother. He only scratched his head looking confused and sad as he muttered, “The likeness is uncanny… why is it not here?”

“You little bastard, who is your father?” The person thought for a long time and suddenly looked up and asked.

“My father? He died a long time ago.” Chu Yang said angrily. The moment the stranger asked this, Chu Yang immediately realized that this person was probably looking for the piece of Pure Purple Jade Essence that represented his identity!

The piece of Pure Purple Jade Essence that Chu Yang had long ago asked the sword spirit to absorb into Nine Tribulations Sword’s space. The person in front of him was currently not clearly identified as friend or foe, how could he just take it out?

“Impudent!” The stranger roared as he smacked Chu Yang’s face. He huffed, “This is the kind of attitude you have for your father?”

“Son of a b*! Stop!” An angry voice came from a few dozen feet away. Gu Du Xing and company were running forward looking disheveled. Seeing the stranger smacked Chu Yang, they immediately became enraged and yelled.

The stranger’s face became downcast, and he yelled, “Shut your mouths! And obediently back out by three hundred feet! If you make another sound… I will crush his bones!”

Gu Du Xing and company wanted to spit out blood, but Chu Yang was in his hand; there was nothing they could do but eye this person with hatred as they stood motionless.

“Haha…” Chu Yang slowly lifted his hand and wiped blood from the edge of his mouth. He smiled icily and said, “Why are you so bothered? How I speak… can you control that?”

The stranger in blue was huffing angrily as he gave Chu Yang a ferocious look. Chu Yang also refused to yield and glared back.

After a while, the stranger's gaze gradually calmed, and he said dejectedly, "Fine. I am not going to have a battle of wits with you! Let me ask. Have you seen a piece of jade about this big with this kind of shape, and made completely of Pure Purple Jade Essence?"

Then he immediately used his hand to draw a picture of a jade pendant on the snow.

"I have never seen it. What is it?" Chu Yang's countenance remained unaffected. His gaze did not move as he spoke casually.

What the stranger in blue just drew was the shape of his Pure Purple Jade Essence.

"Never seen..." The stranger's gazed became forlorn and lost as he muttered, "How could this be..."

"Who is your father? What is your mother's name? What is your grandfather's name? What clan are you from? Where are you from?" A ray of hope the appeared in the stranger's eyes ask he asked a series of questions.

"My father's name is Chu Da Zhuang, a hunter. My mother's surname is Yang so I am called Chu Yang. My grandfather's name is Chu Ying Jun; that's why I am very handsome (TLN: yingjun). I am from Iron Cloud Nation's Little Cap Mountain, Three Lake Village. I don't have any clan. I am from a family of hunters." Chu Yang did not even blink as he fluently talked about his birthplace. Looking at his fluency, he probably would have been able to speak about all of his family ancestry without any trouble.

"Chu Da Zhuang... Chu Ying Jun. Chu Yang... Iron Cloud Nation's Little Cap Mountain, Three Lake Village..." The stranger's face was filled with suspicion. He carefully looked at Chu Yang's face and muttered, "It can't be. It can't be..."

"Oh? Perhaps... I look like someone you know?" Chu Yang asked

calmly.

“Truly alike!” The stranger in blue seemed to have recovered his composure. He quietly sighed. Then he frowned and said, “Why is there such likeness?”

“Oh? That person has a very deep relationship with you?” Chu Yang smiled.

“It is deep!” The stranger in blue said dolefully, “Also the same last name... Damn!”

It could be seen that the stranger currently was a little disappointed and did not want to speak further.

But just because he did not want to speak did not mean that Chu Yang did not want to speak. This matter was extremely important to Chu Yang! How could he not ask?

Chu Yang could sense that this person was the greatest connection to his identity. But he did not dare say that at this moment.

The situation was by no means simple. There was no question about that. Could this person be a mortal enemy? Or a family member? How could Chu Yang trust him with just a few words?

Moreover, Chu Yang did not understand the strange feeling he had. This feeling was akin to something like fear.

Was he abandoned on purpose or by accident? What kind of clan was this?

There was no doubt that if he was abandoned on purpose... then in this lifetime, Chu Yang would not return to this clan! Revenge? Chu Yang asked himself. I am not coldblooded to the point that I would take revenge on my own parents. But I also cannot let them find me, and I would not admit to my identity. This much is certain!

Before this could be verified, Chu Yang would absolutely not let

his identity be exposed.

He was very worried.

Chu Yang had lived two lifetimes. He no longer had the kind orphan mentality would cause him to become weepy the moment he met his relatives. I am me, but you people did not bother and tossed me away. I am still me!

I grew up by myself; I can succeed by myself! I can still achieve my goals!

But these things could not cover the pain that was in Chu Yang's heart.

While he was contemplating, his body suddenly became stiff. He was once again pulled by the stranger. With a few ripping sounds, clothes disappeared from his body once more... The stranger stared at Chu Yang's body carefully from head to toe.

Chu Yang currently did not even have the mind to curse this person...

He is far from human; what is the use of cursing?

"Not a birthmark... Motherf*, how could everything be so clean?" The stranger unexpectedly scolded. Following that, Chu Yang's freedom was also restored. He refused to put on his clothes, and stood naked in the snow as he boldly faced that guy.

"Put on your clothes!" The stranger's face darkened.

"Forget about it. On the off chance you want to look again, I would to take them off." Chu Yang said naturally, "It's nothing; I don't mind. Never mind if you are a man; even if you are a woman, I still don't mind."

The stranger in blue was dumbfounded. He helplessly turned his head and spat. Blue veins gradually thickened on his face. He ground his teeth and said, "Punk, you should be glad that it's not you! If you are... just opening that mouth, I would kick you eight

hundred times!”

“Thank you very much.” Chu Yang had begun to slowly put on his clothes one piece at a time. He laughed loudly and said, “Seeing my stuff, you have an inferiority complex right?”

“Inferiority complex?” The stranger in blue was puzzled.

“It’s big, right?” Chu Yang arrogantly shook his hips.

“Leave!” The stranger immediately boiled with anger, “Punk, don’t think just because you look like… like me, then I won’t kill you!”

Chu Yang icily said, “I don’t depend on you for anything. Everything is in your own head…” Chu Yang looked up and said casually, “You can do whatever you want! That’s your business; it has nothing to with me!”

“If I want to kill you?”

“That… is also your business!” Chu Yang said faintly. There was not a little bit of emotion in his voice.

“Very gutsy!” The stranger in blue became somber; he turned sad as he quietly looked at the sky. After a long time, he let out a sigh and said in a low voice, “How long must I search…”

All of a sudden, he said to Chu Yang, “Punk, our meeting today could be considered as fated. I smacked you, and you cursed at me. I will be leaving then…”

Chu Yang calmly nodded and said, “I won’t be sending you off…”

Chapter 213: A lifetime of searching in regret

“The more I look the more he looks like… Even that annoying demeanor is similar.” The stranger in blue sighed, turned and took two steps. Suddenly he swung his arm and a ray of purple light flew in Chu Yang’s direction. He said, “This is for you. You can see it as a small gift from me.”

After a few more steps, he turned his head back and looked at Chu Yang’s face. Then he shook his head and took in a deep breath. Finally, he stomped his feet on the ground and flew into the air. With a flash, he disappeared saying, “Punk, see you later!”

Suddenly, from a distance, a faint voice was echoed over the land, “…going through a thousand mountains without pause, a heart filled with regrets; the road vast road is foggy; getting drunk day to day, hard to get rid of sorrow…”

The desolate voice was unexpectedly filled with misery. It lingered for a long time in the snowy sky…

Chu Yang looked blankly in the direction the person had disappeared in. He did not know why he felt sad… It was as if his emotion had become blurred like the snowy sky; it grew confused, foggy, and unreal.

He opened his palm to see a piece of purple jade lying in quietly in his hand and shining with a clear radiance. It was an ordinary pure purple jade piece without any writings within…

With a sigh, he put away the jade piece and thought about the lingering question: Who was that person?

“Big brother, are you alright?” Gu Du Xing and company hastily ran toward him asking warmly.

“I am fine.” Chu Yang forced a laugh and said, “Let’s go back.” For some reason, Chu Yang suddenly felt that his mood was very

low. He quietly got on his horse and cracked his whip. The horse let out a neigh a rushed forth like the wind in the snowy air.

Gu Du Xing and company looked at each other. They all saw the worry in each other's eyes. Without daring to delay, the five jumped on their horses and chased after Chu Yang.

The horses galloped forth like the wind and quickly disappeared.

Heavy snow continued to fall creating a dense covering on the ground. Within a short time, all traces left by Chu Yang's group were erased. There was only white snow between heaven and earth. It cover everything so evenly that one could not see where people had been; they also could not recognize that there was a road there...

After Chu Yang's group traveled for a while...

The stranger in blue flying away looking like a stream of light in the blowing snow. He constantly flashed and disappeared overtaking a great distance.

All of a sudden, he stopped and muttered, "There was something amiss."

He stood like that in the snow and thought carefully. Then he suddenly smacked his forehead and murmured, "You have the brain of a pig. Such a valuable item, and he is only a weak Martial Master, why would he dare to carry it on his body? Just because it's not on his body... does that mean he really does not have it?"

He sighed in irritation and muttered, "When asked about his father, that bastard said, 'My father? He died a long time ago.' This makes sense. How could there be such hatred? If he was speaking the truth that he is the son of the huntsman... It does not fit!"

Thinking, he said, "I will turn back and see."

Then he immediately turned and flew in the direction where he just met Chu Yang...

But at this time, Chu Yang was long gone…

Standing at the place where he just talked with Chu Yang, the stranger in blue looked around once, but the great snow had erased all traces. He could not see anything.

“Little bastard, you are really fast.” The stranger in blue let out a hmm. The edge of his mouth curled up with a satisfied smiled, “Does that piece of jade I gave you not have eyes?”

Closing his eyes and activating his martial energy, he sensed carefully.

He had left a trace of his own energy inside that piece of jade. That way, no matter where the piece of jade was, as long as it was not more than three hundred miles away, he could sense where the jade piece was by simply activating his martial energy.

Over these past years, for the sake of finding someone, he had given away hundreds of such jade pieces… While the results were all disappointing, this method to find people had never lost its effectiveness.

After a while, the stranger’s eyes widened, “Strange! Even if he was riding a horse, he would have covered at most a few dozen miles at most. Why can’t I sense anything at all?”

As it turned out, the energy in the piece of jade had already completely disappeared as if it had never existed in this world…

“Strange. What’s going on?” The stranger in blue slowly picked up his steps. He walked around with a worried look on his face. Now that he lost all traces, it was like searching for a needle at the bottom of the ocean. Where should he go to search?

“I will spend a few days looking for him. If I can’t find him, I will go back and report…” The stranger in blue scratched his head, feeling a headache from this situation. He thought about how giving away hundreds of pieces of jade had riled up the clan a few hundred times. But each time he was met with failure and

scolding. This thought made him shudder.

“Motherf*! This is torture…” The more he thought, the more the stranger in blue lamented. He could not help but curse, “Motherf*! You people managed to lose a child not even a month old. And you make me search. Motherf*! How many people are in this Nine Heavens? Isn’t this like searching for a needle at the bottom of the ocean? You take out your anger on me every time the search fails. Are there any heavenly laws…”

After sighing for a while, he finally stomped and disappeared in annoyance…

At this time, Chu Yang had already returned to Iron Cloud Citadel…

The stranger in blue gave him the piece of purple jade, but the sword spirit had sensed a strange energy within it and had warned Chu Yang. That energy has tracking characteristic; carrying that around is unsafe.

Therefore, Chu Yang allowed the sword spirit to absorb this into Nine Tribulations Sword’s space. And the moment the sword point received this piece of purple jade, it immediately swallowed everything…

Completely destroying any traces!

Chu Yang did not think that such a thing could bring so much trouble. He only felt that the stranger was not a good person. He did not expect that the stranger would leave a tracker? What does he want? Humph!

Tie Shi Cheng’s funeral was carried out within three days! For a ruler of a nation, such a rushed funeral was indeed a little simple. But Iron Cloud Nation was currently in an extraordinary situation. The more time they took, the more time Diwu Qing Rou would have to recuperate.

Therefore, after deliberating, they came to a simple unanimous decision.

After Chu Yang returned to Bu Tian Pavilion, Cheng Zi Ang came to report and hesitantly said, “The prince never mentioned Minister Chu…”

Chu Yang said casually, “Hmm, you should get back to work.”

Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong hastily backed out.

Of course everyone thinks that I am out of luck.

During the funeral, Iron Cloud officials had asked Tie Bu Tian why the mysterious King of Hell Chu did not come to pay his respects. No matter who he was, he should have at least done so…

But this was ruthlessly rejected by Tie Bu Tian, “Minister Chu? Humph! What would he come here for?” His voice was extremely angry and resentful.

And these past few days, Bu Tian Pavilion’s work had been ordered by the Judicial Department, not the minister! Therefore, everyone guessed that King of Hell Chu had fallen from grace!

All the signs were proof of this. For a time, many people felt elated. Some of them even started to make plans. Wait until King of Hell Chu gets deposed, I will definitely humiliate him! He had been torturing me so much I could barely eat or sleep.

When it came to these rumors, Chu Yang could only laugh. He naturally understood the reason why Tie Bu Tian would not let him come to the funeral. Tie Bu Tian was currently very angry, but he would definitely not turn on Chu Yang!

And a more important reason was: Chu Yang’s identity cannot be leaked at any time! Plus, there was also another reason: Tie Bu Tian needed to cool down.

Tie Bu Tian needed time.

There was yet one more reason: The nation could not be without

a ruler even for one day! After the previous emperor died, a new emperor ascended the throne. With a regime change, there was a multitude of things to do. Tie Bu Tian would definitely be very busy!

He truly did not have the state of mind to come and look over Bu Tian Pavilion.

And Bu Tian Pavilion had few things to do for the very reason that they did not have experience with the death of an emperor and the ascension of the new emperor. Therefore, the Judicial Department had to tell them what to do. These things were not the least bit related to Bu Tian Pavilion.

Chu Yang understood this very well so he was very happy and relaxed. For a short period, he had some free time...

Leaving Bu Tian Pavilion, he went to Heavenly Armament Pavilion. He immediately received good news: After returning, Dong Wu Shang immediately cultivated and unexpectedly broke through!

Everyone was happy for him. Only Dong Wu Shang alone was sad. Just a little behind and third brother became fourth brother. How could anyone be happy about that?

Dong Wu Shang still remembered Chu Yang's promise. Now that he saw Chu Yang return, he immediately asked, "Big brother, you had once said that I only needed to break through this month, you would give me a saber!"

Chu Yang nodded. Seeing his eager attitude, Chu Yang could not help but laughed, "What? You can't wait?"

Dong Wu Shang scratched his head in embarrassment, "Then I should go back to the clan and get Mo steel now?"

"Mmm."

After getting Chu Yang's affirmation, Dong Wu Shang practically did not pause as he turned and ran out the door. He yelled back

from a distance, “I will be back right away.”

He disappeared without a trace.

Then Ji Mo sneakily stepped forward, “Big brother, haha…”

“What is it?”

“Didn’t you say… that I only needed to be able to stay here, you would give me a sword…” Ji Mo stood erect with his chest puffed looking serious while rubbing his hands together, “A sword… a sword…”

“You remember it wrong.” Chu Yang was surprised. He tilted his head and thought for a little, “At the time, I said… you only need to be able to remain here and make a great contribution, then I would reward you with a weapon. Mmm, and I only said that to Dong Wu Shang because his saber is special. I don’t remember saying anything to you.”

“Beloved big brother! Beloved big brother!” Ji Mo immediately became anxious and his face twisted and turned red, “Big brother…” He pitifully grabbed Chu Yang’s hand and shook it back and forth, acting no differently than a sulking child wanting candy, “My life’s desire is such a sword! Big brother… Please fulfill it for me. Just see it as a good deed; see it as a charity… see it as…”

“Stop! Stop! Stop!” Chu Yang rolled his eyes as he got defeated by this shameless guy, “I will give it to you! Is that enough?” Chu Yang was afraid that if he was to continue speaking, Chu Yang’s goosebumps would end up weighing at least a hundred pounds…

Chapter 214: Emperor level master

“Ahwooh...!” Ji Mo jumped up and ran all around the yard, “Hahaha... Oh heaven, oh great earth, my life’s desire is finally fulfilled... wow wow wow...”

“Don’t be in a rush to be happy!” Chu Yang’s face became serious.

Ji Mo immediately went as mute as a clam. With a smiling face, he coaxed, “Big brother, what order do you have for me? Rest assured, if you tell me to climb a mountain of blades, I would absolutely not jump into a vat of hot oil. If you tell me go east, I would absolutely not go west... If you want me to beat up that foul Gu Du Xing, I would absolutely not torture Luo Ke Di...”

Right after the words were spoken, two people gave him a dirty look.

“Do you want a long sword or a short sword? Long sword or short sword, I only have one of each!”

The moments those words came out, Luo Ke Di hastily jumped up and yelled next to him, “Big brother, I want a short sword!”

Luo Ke Di’s martial art was of the agile type so the long sword would not have been suitable for him. He had long been tempted by this short sword.

“Go to hell! Did you break through?” Ji Mo angrily yelled out. He thought for a long time and said, “I want the long sword...”

Luo Ke Di finally let out a sigh of relief; his eyes flashed with a touch of gratitude.

“You are sure?” Chu Yang asked gravely.

“Sure!” Ji Mo quickly nodded.

Ji Mo was not like Luo Ke Di. Ji Mo’s Ji clan martial techniques could utilize both long swords and short swords. Short swords had their own use, and long swords had their own advantage. But

when it came to secrecy, short swords were more convenient and had more of an element of surprise.

However, now that he knew Luo Ke Di liked the short sword, while he was confrontational on the outside, he had already decided to leave the short sword to Luo Ke Di. For the sake of brotherhood, he left the more convenient weapon back.

“Good!” Chu Yang’s eyes showed a look of admiration. How could he not see that Ji Mo really wanted the short sword? But the fact that Ji Mo could make such a sacrifice made Chu Yang feel very happy.

That word, brotherhood, had slowly began to imprint deeply in the hearts of these Middle Three Heavens young masters.

“Okay, I will comply.” Chu Yang nodded, “The swords are with Gu Du Xing. Just tell Gu Du Xing to give it to you.”

Ji Mo’s mouth twitched; he was blindsided.

He did not forget that, for the sword, he had kissed up to big brother earlier and had said talked about beating up that foul Gu Du Xing… Now, he had seen karma in the blink of an eye!

He looked in Gu Du Xing’s direction with a grimace. What he saw was second brother’s icy face with the mouth curled up in a sneer. He judgmentally looked at Ji Mo, “Oh, Ji Mo, you want… sword?”

Ji Mo’s mouth widened in regret.

“Second elder brother… dearest second elder brother… living saint, my savior…” Ji Mo hastily ran in front of Gu Du Xing and seize the chance to do some flattery.

Gu Du Xing turned and looked up at the sky.

Ji Mo whizzed in front of Gu Du Xing’s face, “Second elder brother…”

Gu Du Xing turned again…

Ji Mo jumped around for a while in frustration. He was anxiously

sweating.

“Ahhh, my neck hurts.” Gu Du Xing twisted his neck back and forth making cracking sounds...

“Second elder brother, haha, let me massage ir for you...” Ji Mo was extremely diligent as he massaged with a flattering face...

“Ahhh, my shoulders also ache...” Gu Du Xing sighed.

“Second elder brother... let me massage for you...” Ji Mo immediately changed location.

“This arm feels really uncomfortable...”

“Let me massage for you...”

“My lower lumbar, too. I am getting old...” Gu Du Xing sighed.

“Let me massage for you sir...” Ji Mo’s eyes were about to shoot out fire.

“My legs also hurt...” Countless health conditions suddenly appeared on Gu Du Xing’s body.

“Let me massage for you sir...” Ji Mo worked from top to bottom. His whole body was soaked in sweat, but he had to swallow his anger.

“Fine, since you are so obedient, I...” Gu Du Xing intentionally stretched out his words as he looked at Ji Mo...

Ji Mo immediately stood in attention, “Rest assured, second elder brother, from now on, I will definitely listen to you. If you tell me to go east, I will absolutely not go west! If you tell me to hit a dog, I will absolutely not chase a chicken!”

“Hmm, this is all you. Things would have been fine, but you have to find trouble for yourself! You even beg people! How petty!” Gu Du Xing said gravely.

“Yes, yes. My mouth is not right. I am shameless!” Ji Mo was dying from anger. He could not blame anyone; he had to deal with

the consequences of his words…

“Ahhh… fine, fine…” Gu Du Xing was going mad because of this punk so he did not bother him anymore. He walked in slowly, and returned with a long sword within moments. He tossed the whole thing at Ji Mo, “This is yours.”

“Hey, hey… don’t damage it…” Ji Mo jumped forward in distress and caught the sword. The moment he touched it, he felt awe-inspiring!

“Wow… haha… My sword!” Ji Mo clutched the sword and forgot all about the groveling he had to do earlier. He majestically pulled out the sword and smiled from ear to ear with happiness. Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong stared at the sword in envy.

“Hahaha…” Ji Mo suddenly looked up at the sky and laughed crazily. A murderous aura rose, “Gu Du Xing! Second Elder Brother Gu! Come here. Pull out your Black Dragon sword! Junior brother wants to have a match with you…”

The other four stumbled with shock. Their eyes widened and their mouths gaped as they look at that shameless punk with countless blue veins popping on his forehead…

“Muahahaha, dog aunt! Dog aunt!” [TLN: It’s Ji Mo’s gift for gibberish; we will see it again.] Ji Mo looked up at the heavens arrogantly. Under extreme ecstasy and happiness, his mouth started to let out a language that was not of mankind.

Gu Du Xing blinked and yell, “Charge! Beat this little dog!”

With a scream, three people simultaneously rushed up fighting fiercely and ignoring the long sword in Ji Mo’s hand. They neatly sent this punk to the ground with a mix of punches and kicks.

Ji Mo was caught completely off guard, his body was immediately flattened on the ground. Gu Du Xing was riding on his neck with two legs firmly restraining his elbows punching down like rain.

Rui Bu Tong cheerfully sat on his back and constantly slammed down with his butt. With each time, he let out a “huh”... As for Luo Ke Di, he sat on Ji Mo’s voluptuous butt. His two hands became talons as they grabbed the two helpless thighs. Pinched on the right, pinched on the left...

“Oh, oh... Ah... don... dar...(I don’t dare.)” Ji Mo’s face was so deep in the snow that he could only let out some muffled sounds begging for mercy. His two legs continued to kick and twitch...

After a long moment of chaos, Chu Yang yelled for everyone to stop. Holding down his laughter, he pulled Ji Mo, who had become a flat sesame cake, out of the pile of snow...

Ji Mo screamed angrily and wanted to fight.

“Okay, that’s enough. Everyone tell me; that person in blue that we ran into...” Chu Yang’s countenance became somber, “According to you guys, what is his rank?”

“Definitely Emperor level! Possibly higher.” When it came down to official business, the four immediately became serious. Luo Ke Di thought a little and stated.

“Hmm, I think so, too.” Gu Du Xing recovered his icy countenance and said, “Plus, this person was very strange. He exposed himself like that, and then just left... What was his purpose?”

After he finished speaking, Gu Du Xing immediately looked at Chu Yang. He knew that the person in blue sent them flying away because he wanted to speak to Chu Yang alone. In other words, Chu Yang definitely knew what that person’s purpose was.

Chu Yang’s countenance became subdued.

Gu Du Xing’s trio could feel a kind of sadness. They could not help but looked at each other and decided to let that be.

“In your clans, are there such martial experts?” Chu Yang asked.

“No!” Gu Du Xing said straightaway.

If the Gu clan had an Emperor level master, their position in Middle Three Heavens would have been completely fortified and Gu Miao Ling’s little discretion would have been ignorable...

“Our Ji clan has two elders... Cough cough, probably not too different from that person... It’s just, they are not as scary as that person...” Ji Mo said reluctantly, “This is a secret...”

“Hmm, our Luo clan also has two, but they are no match for that person.” Luo Ke Di answered fluidly. He winked a few times and said, “That is also a secret.”

Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang looked at each other. They both already knew about the Gu clan’s situation!

No wonder the Gu clan reacted so fiercely when Gu Miao Ling stole the herbal medicines. As it turned out, the state of the Gu clan was truly not good!

The Ji clan had Emperor level masters, and the Luo clan also had Emperor level masters! It could be inferred that other clans like Hei Mo or Mo clans were also not so different. They definitely had secret Emperor level masters!

Otherwise, they would not have been able to maintain the balance of power like that.

They were all in the rank of super clans, but the Gu clan’s highest cultivation level was only ninth grade King level! While that was only a short step from Emperor level, this step was equivalent to a thousand mountains and ten thousand rivers!

This gap was truly too great!

“In that case, that person in blue would not be a person of Middle Three Heavens?” Chu Yang asked pensively.

“Right. If that person belongs to Middle Three Heavens, he would have caused a big commotion a long time ago. He would not

be anonymous like that.” The four nodded simultaneously. If such a character appeared in Middle Three Heavens, given their information network, they would absolutely not be ignorant of it!

All four of them were confident of this point.

“Then it’s Upper Three Heavens.” A mysterious light flashed in Chu Yang’s eyes. He lifted his head and quietly looked at the snow floating in the air, but his mind was already at some strange unknown place.

Upper Three Heavens... My progenitors, my creators... are from Upper Three Heavens?

Chu Yang suddenly became angry!

You people live in Upper Three Heavens and you tossed me down to Lower Three Heavens! Emperor level master... Huh! Given the resources of Upper Three Heavens, and they could not find me in Lower Three Heavens?

Why was there not even a little bit of news in seventeen years?

Seeing something odd with Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing and company did not dare to say anything else.

After a long time, in order to break the awkward silence, Ji Mo stuck out his head and said with a smile, “In a short time, I have to make a trip home.” He paused and laughed. He scratched his head in embarrassment, “My birthday is on the ninth of the twelfth month.” [TLN: Lunar calendar is a given so I won’t say that every time. Not that it really matters. :-)]

“Oh...” Luo Ke Di said thoughtfully, “So that’s it...”

Chapter 215: Battle of words

“Haha…” Ji Mo once again did not hear the hidden meaning. His face reddened, and he said, “It’s important that I spend my birthday with my mother. I was told that she became seriously ill giving birth to me…”

The four people became solemn. When it came to elders, especially someone so revered like mothers, no one dared to joke around.

Two parents were the most respected people in this world. Anyone who were unfilial to their parents would ostracized by the world!

Among a hundred kinds of good deeds, filial piety took the lead!

This was the core moral in this Nine Heavens!

“Haha, big brother, when is your birthday?” Rui Bu Tong laughed and said, “We must have a big celebration at that time.”

Rui Bu Tong’s words immediately touched the deepest pain in Chu Yang’s heart.

“I, I don’t know when my birthday is.” Chu Yang’s voice was very calm, but behind this calm there seemed to be a fierce storm. The edge of his eyes twitched unconsciously as his voice became hoarse, “My master found me…”

He became silent. Then he looked up letting the cold snowflakes in the air touch his face and said, “I also do not know who my dad is, who my mom is… what their names are.”

“I never had a birthday.” Chu Yang smile faintly and let out two dry coughs. Then he said lightly, “I also do not know what birthdays feel like… I definitely do not know my mother’s birthday… what kind of feeling… ahhh…”

His countenance was truly calm, and his voice was very cool

without any changes. He even smiled a little. But within that steady voice, Gu Du Xing and company could clearly sense that Chu Yang's heart was bleeding!

It was as if his heart was slowly breaking apart...

"Big brother! You still have us..." Luo Ke Di became anxious. For some reason, he wanted to cry. Rui Bu Tong along with Ji Mo and Gu Du Xing's eyes were also glistening. They looked at Chu Yang and said, "Yes! You still have us."

"Yes, I still have you guys." Chu Yang cracked a smile and said, "A birthday is just... just another day."

"No! Us six brothers, with the exception of you, all of our birthdays will be your birthday!" Gu Du Xing said emotionally, "This way, you will have at least five birthdays a year! The five of us will make will make it up to you!"

"No! Six of you!" Chu Yang smiled warmly and said, "There is another; my junior martial brother. His name is truly strange; he is called Tan Tan."

"What are you talking about?" The other four were tongue-tied, they could not figure out why in the world anyone would have such a name.

"Tan for the Epiphyllum flower." Chu Yang smiled and said, "You don't know, but that punk is very interesting." He laughed as he introduced Tan Tan to them, "If you meet him, you would definitely like him."

"Especially his personality... super narcissistic, enough to scare people, hahaha..." As he spoke, Chu Yang thought about Tan Tan's demeanors and could not help but smile...

"Really... hahaha... We must meet him then; such a smug person is rare..." Gu Du Xing and company were immediately interested.

In the Nine Heavens, it was snowing in Lower Three Heavens. Amidst the funeral in Iron Cloud, Chu Yang and his brothers were chatting, Cheng Yun He was battling the wind and snow, and Diwu Qing Rou was still in the minister mansion planning and waiting...

The battle at the border temporarily ceased.

In Middle Three Heavens, it was only cold, but there was no snow.

Mo Tian Ji returned to the clan with Mo Qing Wu; it had already been seven days.

During these seven days, the Mo clan seemed to have put on a new face.

Mo Tian Ji sat cross-legged in his residence. In front of him was a small intricate tea table. Steam was rising up and filling the room with the tea aroma. At a glance, he seemed very relaxed. But currently, Mo Tian Ji's handsome face had a slight hint of anxiety and anger.

Mo Tian Ji had never let joy or anger show. His being like this was proof that the situation was far beyond his control.

Thinking about the day he returned to the clan, Mo Tian Ji felt such uncontrollable anger that he almost exploded.

The day he returned, what surprisde him was the fact that his eldest brother, Mo Tian Yun, who was supposed to be travelling in Lower Three Heavens was also home. As he held his little sister's hand and walked in, he ran right into Mo Tian Yun.

Mo Tian Ji's original intention was to quickly return to the clan and avoid Mo Tian Yun. Then he would clearly explain his sister's situation, and, as long as his eldest brother and his gang was not there, everyone would be more lenient. At the least, he would have been able to buy some time.

But he never thought that he would run into Mo Tian Yun the moment he came home. And from the looks of it, it seemed to Mo

Tian Yun was especially waiting for his return.

“Oh? You’re back?” Mo Tian Yun’s mouth curled up, revealing a charming smile. Compared to a composed Mo Tian Ji, Mo Tian Yun had softer face with slender eyes which tend to often be narrowed. They shot out a cold light that made people shiver.

This was also what Mo Tian Ji hated most.

You are terrifying, and that’s fine. It’s enough that you know you are terrifying; why must you try to show people that you are dangerous all the time? Are you afraid people wouldn’t know you are dangerous? Mo Tian Ji always looked down on this act of his elder brother.

“How long have you been back?” Mo Tian Ji asked calmly. Mo Qing Wu sheepishly held on to her second brother hand and hid behind him. With a timid voice, she greeted her eldest brother.

“Little sister, you’re back.” Mo Tian Yun looked at Mo Qing Wu and smiled brightly. He immediately looked up at his younger brother and said casually, “Yes, I’ve been back for seven or eight days already.”

“Hmm, are you tired from waiting at the door for these seven or eight days?” From the depth of Mo Tian Ji’s eyes, anger flashed. He did not want to talk to Mo Tian Ji, but, at this moment, he could not control the anger inside himself!

It was because of his little sister, the person he cared about most, who was hurt! Mo Qing Wu!

Mo Tian Yun had returned seven or eight days ago; that means that he was in Lower Three Heavens for a total time of less than a month before immediately returning. Why?

During this time, how could he not know that little sister and I were attacked? And yet he acted as if he knew nothing and directly went home!

Plus, once he is home, he waits for our return at the door acting

as if he has some preemptive plans.

This made Mo Tian Ji think of some things truly terrifying; icy thoughts and fiery anger rose up fiercely!

“Is it tiring waiting at the door every day?” Mo Tian Yun said softly, “In order to see second brother and little sister return safely, I would be willing to wait at the door for the rest of my life.”

“Thank you eldest brother! Your love for us, I do not know how to repay.” Mo Tian Ji gently breathed in as he suppressed the emotions inside him. He made a show of gratitude and said lightly.

Mo Tian Yun looked at Mo Tian Ji’s expression and only wanted to punch him in the face! Mo Tian Ji had always been like this. No matter what happened, even if he was enraged, his face never showed even a little bit of emotion!

Now that he was showing an expression of gratitude, it was hard to tell if this was real or fake!

“I heard that little sister was injured?” Mo Tian Yun asked with concern.

Mo Tian Ji shook his head in shame and pain, “It is all because I am useless. As her older brother, I am no better than an animal. I have the heart of a wolf and stomach of a dog. I did not protect her properly and allowed little sister to get injured. This older brother deserves to be chopped into ten thousand pieces by a thousand blades!”

Mo Tian Yun immediately became angry!

Each one of Mo Tian Ji’s words sounded like he was reprimanding himself, but in reality, he was cursing Mo Tian Yun. How could Mo Tian Yun not have recognized this?

“Second brother, you don’t need to blame yourself like that. Good and bad things happen. It is all heaven’s will; we cannot change it.” Mo Tian Yun said casually, “Even if little sister is

injured, it is not necessarily a bad thing for her. At least now she will not need to roam around in Jiang Hu and risk her life."

I am the eldest; you should not compete with me! If you compete with me, it would be difficult for you to keep your life!

Mo Tian Ji smiled and said emotionally, "Eldest brother is right. Even rulers in this world will change from time to time; their empires could fall into shambles. What is heaven's will, who can tell?"

Don't be certain that you will win!

After Mo Tian Ji was done, the two brothers did not bother to speak any further. One person inside the door and one person outside the door stood there and looked at each other silently. The two pairs of eyes were filled with aggression.

Then they smiled intimately as if they were loving brothers who had no seen each other for a very long time.

Mo Qing Wu huddled behind her second brother; her little face was completely pale.

When she was little, what she was afraid most was these two older brothers having confrontations. This time, the two big brothers were also smiling warmly, speaking cheerfully, having lively discussion every now and then, praising each other at times, sighing together at other times...

She seemed to understand what they said, but then again, she did not understand anything. And even though they were talking warmly or calmly, she could not help but shudder...

At that time, the two King level masters standing behind Mo Tian Ji did not say a word. There were also two King level masters behind Mo Tian Yun looking like statues.

"Oh, I am really negligent!" Mo Tian Yun smacked his own forehead, "My little brother and sister are home, and I am blocking the door. Haha, if outsiders were to see this, they would think that

big brother is picking on you two. Haha, second brother, little sister, come in quickly. Father has been talking about you these past few days. He said you two are bright, and if we three are to work together in the future, the Mo clan would really flourish. Haha, he even said second brother's intelligence is second to none in this world, and you would be my greatest assistance in the future."

Father already said that you are only going to be at a subordinate position. You can only assist and cannot be the leader of the clan! I still have the final say!

"Big brother is right. Standing at the door like that definitely looks you are blocking the way. If anyone were to see, they would think that this little brother is arrogant and won't let big brother pass." Mo Tian Ji joked intimately.

With me here, don't even think you could pass!

The two brothers closely walked side by side and headed in...

Chapter 216: Mo Tian Yun

The two brothers were naturally and sincerely beaming brightly like a spring breeze. Anyone who saw this would inevitably be envious. Those two Mo brothers have such a good relationship. From the looks of it, they must even share the same pants. [TLN: common interests]

No one would know that, in the mind of these two brothers, they had already considered each other mortal enemies…

The bodyguards outside the door looked at the two young masters walking in and shuddered. Lifting up their sleeves, they saw their arms were covered with goosebumps…

The two young masters so kind and amicable, but murderous auras simmered within. It was truly horrifying…

And those two brothers continued to talk cordially with each other as they walked off…

“Second brother, how is Xiao Wu’s injury?” Mo Tian Yun asked with concern, “Who did it?”

“Very serious!” Mo Tian Ji’s eyes flashed with killing intention as he answered coldly, “It was the Hei Mo clan. These heartless bastards deserved to be chopped to pieces! I cannot believe they damaged Xiao Wu’s Three Yin Meridian! I am very angry about this! Rest assured, big brother. I have sworn that if they try to make a move on little sister again, I would drag these heartless bastards to hell myself even if it means I destroy myself!”

There was no hiding Mo Qing Wu’s injury; it would have been easily found out. It was better to say it all out directly that his little sister’s Three Yin Meridian was damaged. If you try to hurt her again, I might not be able to get the clan, but don’t expect that you will get it either!

“Heartless bastards.” Mo Tian Yun murmured an echo. His eyes

flashed with rage, “Yes! Hei Mo clan ranks below ours. They dared to make such offense. They are truly heartless; they cannot be forgiven! If I run into them, I will chop them to pieces!”

If you dare, I will bury you!

The two brothers coincidentally smiled and looked at each other. The four King level masters walking behind the two brothers all felt their palms dripping with sweat and their entire bodies getting the chills!

Going with the two young masters like this was truly a test of their hearts’ endurance! Especially when these two were together, for those around them, it was a kind of torture!

Mo Tian Yun suddenly paused. He crossed his arm and said with a slightly changed attitude, “Uncle Cheng Yu, do you know your crime?”

Mo Cheng Yu’s countenance changed for the worse; he bowed and said, “Yes, I know my crime!”

“Huh, you are little miss’s bodyguard. I cannot believe you neglected your duties and allowed little miss to suffered from an irreparable injury! Mo Cheng Yu, have all these comfortable years made you stupid?” Mo Tian Yun’s eyes flashed with a cold light.

“I have sinned!” Sweat poured out of Mo Cheng Yu’s head. He wanted to justify, but there was no denying that Mo Qing Wu was indeed injured! Moreover, Mo Tian Yun was clearly using him to deal a blow to Mo Tian Ji! If he dared to talk back, Mo Tian Yun would probably have someone beat him to death right there!

Mo Tian Ji also wanted to say something, but he remained silent.

Earlier, Mo Tian Yun was talking to him as a brother. But it was different now. He was using the position of a young master. If Mo Tian Ji said anything, he would be charged with insubordination!

“Huh, you also know that you have done wrong. I will announce the clan’s decision!” Mo Tian Yun’s face remained unchanged, “Mo

Cheng Yu had neglected his duties and cannot be forgiven! But because of his former merits, he will not be punished. He is to be removed from his guardian position and moved with his family to Cang Lan battlefront to help contribute to the clan!”

Mo Cheng Yu’s whole body trembled slightly! This is to get me away from little miss?

“Isn’t eldest brother going a little too far?!” Mo Tian Ji frowned, “If it was not for Mo Cheng Yu risking his life to protect her, little sister would not be alive now. Mo Cheng Wu might have sinned… but such a punishment is too harsh!”

“This is the decision of the clan’s elders!” Mo Tian Yun sighed and said, “Second brother, I also do not want this. But, in any case, I am currently not the leader of this clan. The leader of this clan is, of course, father! Could it be that you have something to say about father’s decision?”

Who do you think you are? You dare to find faults?

“I will explain it clearly to father.” Mo Tian Ji said lightly.

“I hope you can be successful so Uncle Cheng Yu would not have to suffer hardships in the battlefront.” A trace of sarcasm flashed in Mo Tian Yun’s eyes.

“I don’t want Uncle Cheng Yu to go!” Mo Qing Wu protested in fear.

“Good girl. This is an adult issue; understand?” Mo Tian Yun smiled and gently rubbed Mo Qing Wu head, comforting her.

Mo Qing Wu’s body shook. Her face unconsciously showed a trace of fear as took half a step back.

A gloominess flashed in Mo Tian Yun’s eyes, and he immediately smiled and said, “Let’s go. Father is still waiting for all of you. Father and all of the elders are very concerned about little sister’s injury.”

Mo Tian Ji's countenance slightly changed as he thought about this. He gritted his teeth tightly.

Just like that, after they returned to the clan, there was immediately a meeting. Mo Cheng Yu was sentenced; the morning after, he and his family left the clan to go to Cang Lan battlefront!

Even though he tried his best, facing the clan's power, no matter how intelligent he was, he could not do anything.

The elders did not give him a chance to even argue back! It was merciless!

They immediately checked his little sister's body. The whole grouped sighed; their eyes had a look of pity.

Mo Tian Ji still remembered clearly. At that time, his little sister was holding tightly onto the saber Chu Yang gave her and she huddled in the main hall. Her lively eyes looked like those of a pitiful rabbit. His heart ached from watching that scene...

He still remembered his little sister running toward their father with tearful eyes. He stretched out his arms, and then, with a conflicting look, pulled them back.

At that time, his little sister halted. She looked at her father in surprise, and tears ran down her cheeks...

Bam! Mo Tian Ji angrily punched the tea table...

...

Mo Qing Wu was still young, but her heart was sensitive. She had recognized the abnormality. Looking at the elders who were usually easy-going with her, now all of their eyes showed a strange reaction.

Regret, anger, disappointment... but there was no mercy; there was no love!

Even her very own father who was so loving toward her, when she looked in his direction, he only looked away and sighed.

Mo Qing Wu was filled with apprehension. Fear and anxiousness filled her little mid and quickly enveloped her. She was completely clueless as to what was going on... Why has everything changed after I just went out for a little fun?

Mo Qing Wu felt as if she was collapsing! At the moment, she felt as if her spirit had left her body!

In that very moment, she could not help but think about Chu Yang! She remembered his loving eyes filled with doting attention...

All of a sudden, at that moment, Mo Qing Wu's little heart longed to return to Chu Yang's side!

Internally, she cried out. Brother Chu Yang, where are you? When will you come to visit Xiao Wu... Xiao is currently... really... really... pitiful...

Mo Tian Ji frowned; he could feel that something was not right.

Mo Tian Yun had returned eight or nine days ahead of him and had arranged everything with the clan! Even... the treatment of Mo Qing Wu!

While the clan had not clearly stated this, Mo Tian Ji knew that Mo Tian Yun would definitely not neglect this matter!

Mo Tian Ji racked his brain trying to think of how he could help to make his little sister's life a little more comfortable. He had already lost all hopes of her being treated the same way as before.

Mo Cheng Yu's leaving was definitely a clear sign!

In eliminating the strength on Mo Qing Wu's side, Mo Tian Yun had taken a definite lead in the battle for power between himself and Mo Tian Ji!

Mo Tian Ji clenched his fists tightly and muttered, "You are wrong... Mo Tian Yun, if you don't see me as an opponent, I would not have fought with you... Too bad, you are too suspicious and

dealt with me first... You have made me your enemy! Now that you have made a move against Xiao Wu, you and I will not share the same sky!"

Thinking about this, he smiled bitterly. Before, big brother was his idol. He was always proud of his big brother because he was only five or six years older, but he was able to think of things that Mo Tian Ji did not even think of.

At the time, he thought that if they had worked together, and he listened to his older brother, the Mo clan would rise under their hands! They would be fortified in Middle Three Heavens!

But these past few years, he had unexpectedly ran into danger repeatedly. Then, he had inadvertently discovered that his big brother was starting to deal with him. And since then, he had begun to change.

He was no longer the Mo Tian Ji of before!

Because if he was to maintain the same state of mind from before, it would have been no different than waiting to die! His character was slowly honed from such a state...

However, compared to big brother, who was the rightful heir to the clan and had a ten years head start, he was still vulnerable! It was not until these past two years that his intelligence had grown more matured, and the situation slowly became reversed.

But right now, Mo Qing Wu had ran into such a mishap because of her closeness to him!

There was nothing that happened by chance! Mo Tian Ji had always believed this! Accidental was intentional! The Hei Mo clan, even with intelligence capability, would not have known of their whereabouts.

But they acted with precision. Plus, they had prepared an ambush just in time. All of these things, Mo Tian Ji could not think of a different explanation!

Mo Tian Yun returning home early was also equivalent to him showing Mo Tian Ji his cards! Or perhaps he thought that he was sure to win and the final result had been decided since their little sister's power was eliminated by him?

You are measuring a good person's heart with that of a petty person! You should know that I had never intended to use little sister's power to back my own! It is hers and hers alone!

I want to use my own strength and defeat you righteously!

"People like you are well-versed with plotting against others. You do not know Mo Tian Ji's pride." Mo Tian Ji closed his eyes and let out a sigh.

"Second young master, the clan leader sent a notice. You are told to join in the clan's meeting; he said that there will be an important decision!" A voice interrupted Mo Tian Ji's train of thought.

This information made Mo Tian Ji's whole body trembled!

Finally... the move against little sister has been made? I... what should I do?

Chapter 217: A clan conference, the nightmare begins

At this time, Mo Qing Wu's little body was curled up into a ball as she cried nonstop in his room. Her little mouth pouted sullenly as she did not dare to cry loudly. She could only cry in her heart: "Brother Chu Yang, I am so pitiful; they all picked on me... Please come quickly... Hoo hoo hoo..."

During these past few days, Mo Qing Wu was sensitive enough to feel that even her own maid's attitude toward her had changed a lot...

Every time she saw her mother, her mother would hold her and cry with grief and helplessness...

Mo Qing Wu could sense that something bad had happened to her...

This was a foreboding sense!

But she could not do anything; she could only watch fearfully as these changes occurred. It seemed that the only thing that could make her feel safe was the saber Brother Chu Yang gave her...

The clan conference of the Mo clan finally began!

When Mo Tian Ji walked into the great hall, his heart immediately sank!

Within the great hall, incense smoke lingered. Ancestral tablets were brought out and placed neatly on the altar above. Their father, Mo Xing Chen looked solemn as he sat motionlessly.

On two sides were eight chairs; each one was occupied. Some people had peppered hair, some people had white hair, and some people had young faces with black hair. But Mo Tian Ji knew that the age of these people were not very different from each other. Nothing could be seen from the exterior.

These were the eight elders of the Mo clan!

The two middle-aged men were sitting nearest to their father. In reality, they were two elders with the highest cultivation levels, and the greatest hope of the clan.

Big Brother Mo Tian Yun, in an outfit white as snow, sat on the left. Facing him was one empty seat. There was no doubt that this was Mo Tian Ji's seat.

Below the two of them were seven or eight more chairs. On each one was an important martial expert in the Mo clan.

Everyone's faces was solemn; the whole atmosphere was stifling.

Mo Tian Ji's heart sank into the abyss. Even the ancestral tables were invited! Of course an important decision was going to be handed down! And this decision was probably related to Mo Qing Wu!

Little sister is still not here.

Mo Tian Ji sullenly walked in. His back was straight, and his eyes were calm as he looked straight at his father. He wanted to find a trace of warmth for his little sister on his father's majestic face.

But in the end, Mo Tian Ji had to face disappointment. Mo Xing Chen's face did not show any emotion. When his eyes met with his son's, a trace of sadness showed momentarily.

Mo Tian Ji sensed this sadness. He immediately halted and stood in front of his seat. He slowly turned and faced Mo Tian Yun. The two closest blood relations to him and his little sister.

A trace of pleasure flashed in Mo Tian Yun's eyes. On the other hand, Mo Tian Ji's eyes flashed a ray of iciness. Since you are inhumane, don't blame me for being underhanded!

Mo Tian Ji did not say anything and slowly sat down in his seat.

In the entire great hall, only Mo Tian Ji and Mo Tian Yun were wearing snow white clothing. As the two sat facing each other,

their faces looked calm, but the moment Mo Tian Ji sat down, everyone in the room could clearly sense a competitiveness coming from these two brothers.

“We are convened here today because we have to announce a matter of great importance.” Mo Xing Chen’s beard flew even though there was no wind. His lips slightly quivered and he called out in a low voice, “Bring Mo Qing Wu in!”

Mo Tian Ji’s pupils constricted.

Outside the door, an apprehensive Mo Qing Wu was escorted in by two old nursemaids. Her little face was pale white without any color left.

She hugged a shabby looking saber close to her chest. She held onto it tightly as if it was her only solace.

And like that, she stood alone in the middle of the great hall. She looked pitifully at her father, and then fearfully looked around a little. Finally, her distressed gaze fell onto the face of her second brother. Her little lips trembled like a little sapling in the wind.

Mo Tian Ji’s heart twisted with pain. He could no longer bear to look at his little sister’s pitiful condition and sadly lowered his gaze.

Tears immediately fell from Mo Qing Wu’s eyes. Her gaze remained fixed on Mo Tian Ji for a short while, and she finally dropped her head. When Mo Tian Ji decided to say something, he discovered that his sister had lowered her head, and her soft hair had covered her face…

Mo Tian Ji did not know that he had made a mistake. When he lowered his gaze earlier, it was because he could not bear to look at his pitiful sister, not because he was not going to help her. But this was Mo Qing Wu’s most vulnerable moment; she knew that she was about to face her fate.

Mo Tian Ji’s one action had completely destroyed the little bit of

hope that Mo Qing Wu still had in her heart! For a very long time, this would make Mo Qing Wu stubbornly believe that, in the whole Mo clan, no one else was good to her except her mother!

Even my second brother, who is so close to me, is not willing to help me...

This would leave a great shadow in Mo Qing Wu's heart...

If Mo Tian Ji had known that Mo Qing Wu had this misunderstanding, he would have immediately held his sister in his arm even if he had to die right away. But he did not know!

Mo Qing Wu kept her head down and only looked at the saber in front of her chest as if Chu Yang's warmth still lingered there.

She did not even hear what the others were saying. Mo Xing Chen let out a sigh and said, "When members of the Mo clan went out to train, Mo Qing Wu was still childish and should not have gone with them... And because of this, a tragedy has occurred!"

In the room, everyone sat erect, and listened quietly without saying a word.

"The Hei Mo clan ambushed and caused Mo Qing Wu to be severely injured. The Hei Mo Sword King caused a serious consequence with one slash!" Mo Xing Chen sighed heavily and said, "Mo Qing Wu's Three Yin Meridian... is completely destroyed...!"

There was no doubt that this was the unified consensus from all of the Mo Clan's elders.

In the great hall, everyone immediately started whispering to one another. Many people had already learned of this, but there were some who were still in the dark.

"In Middle Three Heavens, the strong survive and the weak die. Only with force can you rise and continue to exist. Our Mo clan was established with martial arts. Because of this, we value the competition between our younger generations. While this is

somewhat brutal, only in such brutal competitions can we ensure the continued long-lasting prosperity of our Mo clan!”

Mo Xing Chen’s voice was grave, “Therefore, for those talented disciples, male or female, our clan nurtures them with all of our resources! We do not spare any cost for them to increase their strength!”

“Mo Qing Wu had Three Yin Meridian and was valued by the entire clan! She had first priority when it came to all cultivation resources. Whether it was eating or sleeping, she had it better than the rest of her peers! Our clan had paid such a price for seven years!” Mo Xing Chen’s voice grew a little hoarse, “But now... Mo Qing Wu’s Three Yin Meridian is destroyed... therefore, the clan has decided to remove... Mo Qing Wu from her original position...”

“We will definitely take revenge on the Hei Mo clan! But with her Three Yin Meridian destroyed, the highest achievement she could reach in her lifetime is Revered level! If we use any more resources, it would just be a waste...”

Mo Xing Chen closed his two eyes. He looked at his daughter, and for a moment, he seemed to not able to bear it, “The clan and the elders had discussed and decided...”

“Wait!” Mo Tian Ji calmly raised his hand and interrupted him, “Father, let me speak my thoughts!”

“What is it that makes you interrupt Father’s announcement?” Mo Tian Yun slowly spoke from the opposite side, “Second brother, I am begging you. In a clan conference, in front of the ancestral tablets, please think before you speak and keep face for our father!”

“Mo Tian Yun, you are poisonous!” At this moment, Mo Tian Ji had lost all hopes with this big brother! Mo Tian Yun’s unhurried statement had pushed him into the greatest of predicaments. Moreover, these words also gave Mo Tian Yun the winning edge. No matter what Mo Tian Ji said now, there would be prejudice!

“What is it? Speak.” Mo Xing Chen’s face became grave.

“There is not necessarily no cure for little sister’s injury!” Mo Tian Ji said, “In Lower Three Heavens, I once met a strange person. He said that he could gather enough herbal medical supplies and heal little sister’s Three Yin Meridian in a year’s time! I swear on this with my life; it is not false!”

“Strange person in Lower Three Heavens?” Mo Xing Chen sounded a little odd. In the great hall, quite a few people smiled cynically.

“You should know that I went to Upper Three Heavens with two elders these past few days.” Mo Xing Chen said with a bit of anger. He was annoyed with his son speaking gibberish, “We found a saintly doctor. The moment he heard that her Three Yin Meridian was damaged, he returned all of our gifts!”

Saintly doctor!

He was the number one doctor in Upper Three Heavens. His medicinal skill was extraordinary, but he had an odd rule of seeing only one patient a day. Even so, Saintly Medicine Valley was still as crowded as a festival ground!

Everyone’s expression changed! They were even a little surprised that the clan’s leader had went to find the saintly doctor because of his daughter’s injury! What price did they have to pay for this?

Everyone understood what it meant when the saintly doctor returned their gifts. That was because the saintly doctor was helpless when it came to Mo Qing Wu’s injury! Even when the saintly doctor could not… you found a strange person in Lower Three Heavens capable of curing this?

It’s enough that you speak gibberish; you even use your own life as guarantee! This was what annoyed Mo Xing Chen.

“I know that this is difficult for you all to believe. However… Father, please believe me this once!” Mo Tian Ji stood up and

spoke determinately.

Mo Xing Chen remained pensive.

“Haha, second brother, every one of us is anxious about little sister’s injury. Everyone is tortured by this. Do you think you are the only one that is concerned?” Mo Tian Yun sighed emotionally, “It’s just that, the truth is what it is! When the saintly doctor has no way, you say that there is a doctor in Lower Three Heavens that could? Second brother, this is the clan’s conference. You... should not try to cause trouble anymore!”

The color red suddenly rose on Mo Tian Ji’s handsome face! At this moment, what little brotherly love he had left in his heart disappeared completely! He only hated the fact that he could not strangle Mo Tian Yun to death at that very moment.

Too malicious!

With your own younger brother and sister, I cannot believe that you would make such a move!

“That’s enough. You don’t need to say anything else.” Mo Xing Chen yelled. Mo Tian Ji was about to speak, but an elder in a black robe sitting above slowly opened his eyes and looked at Mo Tian Ji, “Tian Ji, one more word here, and you will lose your position!”

Mo Tian Ji suddenly became stiff. He felt so angry, his chest was practically bursting!

Chapter 218: My saber…

From the depth of Mo Tian Yun's eyes, a trace of satisfaction and schadenfreude appeared.

Obviously, Mo Tian Ji's speaking out of turn had invoked the wrath of the elders.

He stood quietly for a while then quietly sat down. His face still maintained a calm look, but the iciness in his eyes gradually grew heavy.

Mo Tian Ji had wanted to walk out, but he was worried that there would be no one to help his little sister if he left! Therefore, he had sat back down.

"The clan has decided…" Mo Xing Chen glanced at Mo Tian Ji with a blameful look and said, "First, stop providing Mo Qing Wu with cultivation resources. From today forth, she would treated as an ordinary disciple."

"Second, Mo Qing Wu's right to inherit the title of Lofty Red Dust will be revoked. Another outstanding female disciple in the clan will be chosen to inherit this title."

"Third, Mo Qing Wu's position as a core disciple of the clan will be revoked. Her guardian will be removed."

"Fourth, Mo Qing Wu's inner court privilege will be revoked. From today forth, she is to move out of the inner court."

"Fifth, revoke her existing benefits. The clan will now treat her differently."

"Sixth, revoke…"

"…"

With each announcement, Mo Tian Ji's face grew redder until it finally became completely pale. His two hands formed tight fists; he did not even notice that his nails had dug deep into his palms…

Mo Qing Wu remained standing there with her head down. She continued to look the saber at her chest seemingly not hearing anything that what being said. For a young child like her, such a treatment was indeed very cruel.

Each announcement from her father was no different from thunder exploding in her head! She felt dizzy as if the whole world had went away from her!

“Father!” Mo Tian Ji finally could not control himself and stood up, “I have something important to report!”

Mo Tian Ji’s voice once again interrupted Mo Xing Chen. As a contemplative person, Mo Tian Ji knew very well what consequences his action would have, but at this moment, for his sister, he decided to take the risk once.

Only, he did not know and was not sure that his action would be good or bad or whether it could cause greater injuries for his little sister. He had carefully weighted this matter and decided it would be better left unsaid. However, he had changed his mind! If he did not speak up at this moment, his father would conclude his announcement, and his little sister would be finished! Her whole life would be doomed!

While he was uncertain, and this was risky, Mo Tian Ji chose to fight back!

“What is so important?” Right now, Mo Xing Chen snapped as he stood in front of everyone. While his voice was gloomy, it made Mo Tian Ji feel happy.

This was his father giving him a single chance!

If the elders were to open their mouths first, everyone would have attacked simultaneously, and there would be no chance for him to speak.

“Have you noticed… the thing that is in Xiao Wu’s arms?” Mo Tian Ji gritted his teeth as he made the final determination to

speak up.

He had originally wanted to keep this saber a secret and let his little sister keep it to protect herself. But in this moment, this saber was Mo Qing Wu's greatest advantage.

As long as the clan valued this saber, his little sister's position would not be so bad! At least it would provide her with a better situation! Retaining some good treatment...

But it was not certain that she would be able to keep the saber! Mo Tian Ji had decide: In the worst case scenario, I will take bake that saber for little sister one day!

But the saber's greatest use right now is to give littles sister some breathing room! A chance for her to grow!

"This saber?" Mo Xing Chen asked suspiciously.

"Yes! This saber is a gift from Xiao Wu's savior!" Mo Tian Ji said solemnly, "This saber is an ancient treasure and a rare masterpiece! Plus, it also has the name 'Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber'! The fact that it ends up Xiao Wu is heaven's will!"

Mo Tian Ji did not say it directly, but the moment he spoke those words, everyone understood his meaning: This is an ancient treasure with Mo Qing Wu's name carved on it. This is a coincidence, but it is also heaven's blessing!

How could a person with heaven's blessing become disabled?

At the moment, everyone's eyes rested on Mo Qing Wu!

However, Mo Qing Wu lifted her head and looked at Mo Tian Ji. She could not believe: Why did second brother tell them about this saber? Don't you know that this saber is the only thing I could keep...

"Xiao Wu, let me see your saber." After Mo Tian Ji spoke, Mo Qing Wu remained quiet and just stood there. So Mo Xing Chen could not help but speak up.

Mo Qing Wu was now in a chaotic state of mind; nothing was real to her. Her father who had always loved her suddenly became a stranger. The elders who normally doted on her were now acting as if they did not even know her. Even her dear second brother did not even dare to look at her. Moreover, he even told them her biggest secret...

Given her age, she still did not know that if everything was taken from her as her father announced, her position in the clan would fall from the peak to the bottom. She would be even lower than a concubine!

As for the words after, she did not even hear them. She had completely crashed already. While the body was still there, she was unable to think, unable to act...

“Little sister, give me the saber...” Mo Tian Ji walked in front of her. He knelt down and said softly, “Let father see it.”

Then he immediately reached out his hand to grab the saber Mo Qing Wu was holding. When he reach out his hand, his palm was already soaked in sweat. This saber was what his little sister loved most, and it was also her greatest hope at this moment.

Without this saber by her side, how would she fare?

But regardless, this was currently the only way!

Feeling that someone was about to take her saber, Mo Qing Wu unconsciously tightened her grip. She yelled loudly, “Don’t take my saber! Don’t take my saber!”

After she screamed, her eyes were filled with tears. Two streams of tears ran down her white cheeks and fell to the ground.

With an aching heart, Mo Tian Ji said, “Little sister, I am not taking your saber; father only wants to see it.”

Mo Qing Wu held tightly onto Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber. Her eyes were filled with fear, “Don’t take my saber... Brother Chu Yang gave this to me...”

“Xiao Wu!” Mo Xing Chen yelled, “Give it to me!”

Mo Qing Wu felt her whole body went numb, and the saber fell into Mo Xing Chen’s hand. The moment the saber touched his hand, Mo Xing Chen was immediately shocked! The saber was almost as light as nothingness!

“My saber…” Mo Qing Wu yelled out. She looked at her empty hands in terror, and tears did not cease to fall down.

Right after, Mo Xing Chen pulled the saber out of its scabbard!

The entire great hall was filled with a red glow. Within the red glow was twinkling starlight!

The two or three dozen people in the great hall simultaneously stood up.

“Good saber!”

Only looking at that blinding red glow was enough to know that this saber was an incomparable treasure!

They could not believe that someone would give such a saber to little naïve girl to play with. Right now, a thought rose in the minds of all of the clan’s members: Could this person be an idiot?

“Stars, this saber is very light?” The voice from an old man made Mo Tian Ji tremble slightly. His two eyes were glued to the saber that was emitting a blinding radiance!

This man’s name was Mo Wu Xin. He was one of the elders in the Mo clan and also one of the Emperor level masters!

“Yes, the whole saber weighs no more than four ounces!” Mo Xing Chen held the saber without seeming to be the least bit affected.

“No more than four ounces.” Mo Wu Xin took in a deep breath and hastily said, “Let me see.”

Then Mo Wu Xin carefully stroked the saber. His paled face suddenly turned violently red as he muttered, “This is definitely

Red Cloud Steel! With Star Iron as well."

"No! No!" Mo Wu Xin immediately frowned and carefully checked. Then he said in shock, "Red Cloud Steel Essence. Star Iron Essence!"

He carelessly waved his hand, and a sword of one of the clan's martial experts standing outside flew toward him.

Then he held the saber in one hand with the sharp edge facing upward. The other hand held the sword high in the air and dropped it.

In front of everyone, the long sword gently dropped down on the saber blade. With a soft clang sound, the sword was cut into two fragments and fell to the ground.

The great hall immediately became muted! Everyone's gaze was fixed in the direction of the saber!

A sword of one of the clan's masters, how could it not be good? And yet it was freely cut like it was a block of tofu. It did not even make a loud sound as it was cut into two!

There was even a sheath!

How sharp was this saber?

In all of the Nine Heavens, no such heavenly weapon had appeared before.

This was a priceless treasure!

Gently tilting the saber blade, Mo Wu Xin muttered, "Dreaming of a gentle dance, who needs earthly fame and fortune... [TLN: Engraving on saber blade.] This saber is definitely beyond earthly fame and fortune..."

"Xing Chen, this saber is definite a top treasure in the Nine Heavens!" Mo Wu Xin lovingly looked at the saber; he could not bear to let it go, "Such a saber coming to our clan is fate! We must... protect it!"

Then he put the saber back into its scabbard and hesitantly handed it over to Mo Xing Chen.

“This saber was given to little sister by her savior.” Mo Tian Ji took a deep breath and said, “This savior said that the saber only belongs to little sister.”

“Little sister is the true owner of this saber!” Mo Tian Ji said sternly.

Everyone understood his meaning.

This saber belonged to Mo Qing Wu. It was given to her by a benefactor of the clan. It only belonged to Mo Qing Wu and no one else.

“No one is allowed to let out the fact that this saber is at the Mo clan!” Mo Wu Xin’s eyes flashed as they swept over everyone.

Everyone simultaneously nodded with their eyes ablaze! They all knew what such a saber meant! The precious saber had returned to its scabbard, but the amazing scene from earlier was permanently etched in everyone’s mind!

“Only belong to Xiao Wu?” Mo Xing Chen frowned. Such a precious saber in the hands of a little girl with no future, how wasteful was that?

“Second brother, could it be that you want to use this saber to threaten the clan?” Mo Tian Yun looked at the saber with fire blazing in his eyes, “Second brother, you went a little too far.”

Chapter 219: A heavy blow

“I don’t want to threaten the clan! I only hope that little sister could live a better life!” Mo Tian Ji took a step forward and knelt in front of Mo Xing Chen, “Father, please show some due deference toward the owner of this saber and protect… Xiao Wu…”

As long as Mo Qing Wu had this saber, the clan would protect her. While her life would not be comparable to the one in the past, and she would not receive the cultivation resources she once did, Mo Qing Wu’s life would be much easier.

In the continents of Nine Heavens, kindness, friendship and filial piety were greatly valued.

These things were the core of morality!

Only someone ungrateful would give away a benefactor’s gift to someone else. This was a model of life’s principles! It was also the only thing Mo Tian Ji relied on in this risky move. It was also his greatest wish and hope!

Great conflicts and struggles showed in Mo Xing Chen’s eyes. The sounds of whispering rose in the great hall. They suddenly grew louder as everyone started to discuss with each other.

“Second brother, you are too naïve.”

“Do you think that little sister truly has the ability to keep this saber?” Mo Tian Yun sneered, “Leaving the saber in her hands, is that loving her or harming her?”

“What are you trying to say?” Mo Tian Ji said coldly, “This is for father to decide! Father has yet to make a decision; what gibberish are you saying? Perhaps… you even intend to covet your little sister’s saber?”

“I am not that evil!” Mo Tian Yun sneered, and turned toward Mo Xing Chen, “Father, I believe this saber should not be left in little sister’s hands!”

“Little sister is still young! She does not have the strength to protect this saber! Placing this saber in her hands is no different from putting her in harm’s way!” Mo Tian Yun said, “At that time, not only would little sister be in danger, the saber would also fall into enemies’ hands and become a weapon against our Mo clan! It would bring great calamity to our Mo clan!”

Mo Xing Chen remained silent.

“Father! Can you bear… to see little sister not only being disabled, but also be put in danger by a saber?” Mo Tian Yun said sincerely with concern, “Father, please reconsider.”

“Mo Tian Yun, you are talking nonsense! As long as the clan increases protection for little sister, how could she be harmed?” Mo Tian Ji angrily said, “Plus, this saber is a gift from a benefactor. Do you want our Mo clan become a heartless and ungrateful clan?”

“Ungrateful? Huh! Mo Tian Ji, not being responsible with a gift from a benefactor, that’s ungrateful!” Mo Tian Yun retorted fiercely, “And heartless, how is that? Perhaps you think that our Mo clan is heartless?”

Mo Tian Ji sneered, “In the end, who is heartless and ungrateful, everyone knows! Mo Tian Yun, you treat your little sister so harshly like this! She is only nine and a half!”

“But her Three Yin Meridian is destroyed! I am protecting her!” Mo Tian Yun said furiously, “Mo Tian Ji, don’t think badly of others like that! In this great hall, everyone is loyal to the clan and values Xiao Wu no less than you!”

“Don’t you forget that little sister’s name is on that saber! This is heaven’s will!” Mo Tian Ji said imposingly, “Do you want to go against heaven’s will?”

Everyone’s countenance changed!

Against heaven’s will! Since ancient time, the word heaven was held highest; who dared to offend?

“This is just a coincidence!” Mo Tian Yun coldly smiled, “Like my name, Tian Yun. There are ancient texts with the two words Tian Yun! It was written even as far as ten thousand years ago! In that case, should I, Mo Tian Yun, execute heaven’s will?”

“Execute heaven’s will? You?” Mo Tian Ji was enraged.

The two young masters clashed fiercely against each other. Their eyes flashed brightly. Even a person who was always calm like Mo Tian Ji now had rage in his eyes. The two brothers continued like so in front of the clan’s leader, all of the clan’s elders, members of the clan, and the ancestral tablets! Extremely tense!

“Enough!” Mo Xing Chen slam on a table and said angrily, “Do you two want to rebel? You two are brothers and you show all of your ugliness in front of everyone. Are you two not the least bit embarrassed? Sit down!”

Mo Tian Ji and Mo Tian Yun bitterly looked at each other. With a grunt, each sat back down to his seat.

“Elders, this saber…” Mo Xing Chen probed.

“This saber… is a priceless item. How could we leave it in the hands of a disabled young girl?” Mo Wu Xin rolled his eyes and said casually, “You are the leader of our clan; a thing like this… could it be that you do not know how to handle it?”

“Elder!” Mo Tian Ji could barely believe his own ears. How could his elder have spoken such words?

“No need to say anything else!” Mo Wu Xin grunted and said, “We don’t have a choice. If Mo Qing Wu is not disabled, her having this saber is not an issue! But she is currently without a future. Should we let her hold the best resources?”

“While this saber is a gift from a benefactor to Mo Qing Wu, Mo Qing Wu is still a member of the Mo clan. In other words, this is a gift from the benefactor to the Mo clan. Now that the clan takes care of it in her stead, how could that be ungrateful?”

Mo Wu Xin opened his eyes, and a cold light flashed. He sneered at Mo Tian Ji, “Tian Ji, do you have any objections?”

“Yes! I have a big objection.” Mo Tian Ji stood up.

He did not know why his constantly calm self was so emotional today, “This saber does not belong to the Mo clan! It only belongs to my little sister! Mo Qing Wu!”

“Insolent!” Mo Wu Xin raised his hand and ferociously slapped Mo Tian Ji’s face. Then he said fiercely, “Get out!”

“Father!” Mo Tian Ji gritted his teeth and looked indignantly at Mo Xing Chen.

“Get out!” Mo Wu Xin raised his arm, and a strong wind suddenly surged up. Mo Tian Ji flew out before he had a chance to say anything.

With a boom, Mo Tian Ji fell on the ground some distance away. He continued to yell, “This saber belongs to little sister! Our Mo clan cannot do such a thing! Elders, father, please think this over. Don’t become the subject of ridicule by the world…”

“Shut him up!” Mo Wu Xin spoke coldly.

Mo Tian Yun said, “Yes.” He immediately waved his arm, and two people walked out. Outside, Mo Tian Ji suddenly yelled loudly, “You will all regret this!” Then he immediately became quiet and not made another sound.

“Mo Qing Wu, the clan will protect this saber in your stead… Do you agree?” Mo Wu Xin glanced at little Mo Qing Wu.

“But… But it is mine…” Mo Qing Wu looked at Mo Wu Xin with trepidations. She bit her lip and suppressed the urge to cry out loud.

“Insolent! Are you not a person of the Mo clan?” Mo Wu Xin waved his sleeve, “It’s decided! As compensation, Mo Qing Wu can maintain a little bit of her past living condition.”

Mo Xing Chen sighed and said, “As you say.”

“It’s my saber…” Mo Qing Wu stubbornly stood. She bit her lip and spoke softly but firmly, “It’s mine! Brother Chu Yang gave it to me…”

But no one paid attention to her.

It was a gift from a benefactor. If the benefactor was a super level master from Upper Three Heavens, they would have had a different situation at this moment. But the benefactor was from Lower Three Heavens. How could a great clan from Middle Three Heavens like this pay any mind to a strange person from Lower Three Heavens?

Mo Xing Chen sighed and said, “Send little miss back.”

“Father!” Mo Qing Wu suddenly wailed. She curled herself up on the ground in despair, “Give me back my saber. Give me back my saber…”

Mo Xing Chen was livid; the edge of his face twitched slightly, but he remained silent.

The two old nursemaids advanced and lifted Mo Qing Wu, “Little miss, let us return.”

“I want my saber!” Mo Qing Wu’s gaze suddenly went blank as she looked at her father and muttered, “My saber…”

“Send her back!” Mo Wu Xin yelled. He waved his sleeve and left.

The two old nursemaids carefully used force and carried Mo Qing Wu out.

“My saber! My saber.” With her feet off the ground, Mo Qing Wu was lifted out. She struggled violently as she wailed, “Father… father. If you are not giving back my saber… could you give me the scabbard? Give me the scabbard, okay? Okay? Hoo hoo hoo…”

Her cries became further and further away.

Mo Xing Chen let out a sigh. Swoosh. The saber left its scabbard

and immediately vibrated. The scabbard flew outside like a flying dragon and landed neatly into Mo Qing Wu's arms...

Mo Qing Wu was crying loudly when her eyes brightened. She held tightly onto the scabbard. She closed her eyes and pressed her tiny face against the scabbard. Tears fell like rain as the tiny heart was filled with pain...

Brother Chu Yang... I am sorry; I lost the saber you gave me...

Brother Chu Yang... I miss you so much; I am so pitiful... hoo hoo...

In her little heart, she suddenly remembered that night when Chu Yang held her face and said, "Xiao Wu, you must remember if one day everyone does not like you, Brother Chu Yang still likes you..."

"Brother Chu Yang..." Mo Qing Wu cried sadly and loudly...

As he watched Mo Qing Wu leave, a fire started to burn in Mo Tian Yun's eyes. Looking at the twinkling red glow of the saber in Mo Xing Chen's hand, "Father, this saber..."

"This saber... It would be better if you do not think about it." Mo Xing Chen said casually.

"Yes." Mo Tian Yun's head dropped.

Mo Xing Chen quietly watched his eldest child leave. After a long time, he sighed and said, "Yun'er..."

"Yes, father."

"As a person with power, it is not a bad thing to be a little ruthless. This is a necessity for a leader. But..." Mo Xing Chen said solemnly, "But in life... there are many things that you should not throw away completely."

Mo Tian Yun remained quietly for a while then said, "Father, I will remember this..."

Mo Xing Chen sighed. He wanted to say something but did not.

After a long time, he said with a melancholy voice, “Three heavenly talents have appeared in the Mo clan in the same generation! Plus, they are all direct descendants! Tian Yun is devious and ruthless with the appearance of a leader. Tian Ji plans thoroughly with a cautious mind. Qing Wu was most likely to inherit the position Lofty Red Dust... With such blessings, I was sure that the Mo clan would advance straight into Upper Three Heavens. I cannot believe that this happiness lasted for less than three years...”

Chapter 220: I want Brother Chu Yang

Mo Tian Yun took a deep breath and did not say anything.

Mo Xing Chen stood for there for a while, then he looked at Mo Tian Yun with a conflicting gaze and said, “In a few days, I will send Tian Ji to Cang Lan battlefront. As for you, continue to go and gain more experience in Lower Three Heavens. Use all of your efforts to find the whereabouts of Nine Tribulations Sword’s master. You two will go separate ways. Understood?”

“I understand.” Mo Tian Yun nodded.

“As long as you understand.” Mo Xing Chen turned and walked away with saber in hand.

Mo Tian Yun respectfully bowed, and watched as his father departed. He was now the only one left in the great hall. At this time, he slowly looked up and revealed a soft smile. He muttered, “Father, what I understand is… my position is a dangerous one. The one to make their move first remains powerful. The one to make their move last… is finished…”

“Cang Lan battlefront might be far, but… it’s still in this world.” Mo Tian Yun smiled and shook his head, “Blood relations. Haha… In this world, who is not blood relations? Isn’t everyone children of this world? In that case, isn’t there fratricide in the world every day?”

“Fratricide [TLN: Original words mean murdering one’s limbs]… If it is your own limbs, then it is considered fratricide. But in reality, with your own limbs, how could it be murder?” Mo Tian Yun laughed softly, “It is only murder when it is not your own limbs…”

He smiled brightly, clasped his hands behind his back and waltzed out. Before stepping out the door, he turned around, looked at the chair his father was sitting on… and faintly smiled.

All of Mo Qing Wu's privileges were taken away; she was only left with the privilege to remain in the inner court. In the inner court, she could remain by her mother's side.

This was the only privilege that was given for the exchange of Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber.

After learning of this, Mo Tian Ji looked up at the heavens and laughed mournfully and bitterly!

At this time, he suddenly remembered.

In Lower Three Heavens, the night before they parted with Chu Yang...

"Don't force me to declare war against your Mo clan!" Chu Yang said lightly, "If I find out that Xiao Wu suffered any grievances, I will make your Mo clan pay!"

...

"Brother Mo is too polite! This saber is, in part, my sincerity; but it also has a deeper meaning. Not anyone is worthy of such a gift from me..." Chu Yang replied frankly, "As long as Brother Mo understands that, I am happy."

Remembering these words from Chu Yang, Mo Tian Ji smiled sadly.

He had a feeling that in taking Dreaming of a Gentle Dance Saber and treating Mo Qing Wu this way, the Mo clan was inviting great trouble!

Thinking of Chu Yang's words, he was oddly concerned. Mo Tian Ji could feel some faint danger still lurking in the darkness slowly creeping toward the Mo clan...

Thinking of Chu Yang's martial brothers, Gu Du Xing, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo, Dong Wu Shang... Mo Tian Ji sighed. During the conference, he did not mention the names of these people. Even if he told them, the Mo Tian Yun would just laugh and ridicule.

These people were only second young masters! They were not valued successors!

But Mo Tian Ji could immediately see the potentials of these people! If Chu Yang could unify them, they would definitely become a terrifying force!

However, this force needed time to grow.

If Mo Tian Yun knew about them, he would use tactics to divide and conquer these people!

Therefore, Mo Tian Ji did not speak of them. He must give them time. Because what Chu Yang's group was aiming for was also something he should do!

In the past few days, Mistress Mo did not part from her daughter. While her daughter's heavenly gift was destroyed, the child was still a treasure in her heart. With the clan's decision, Mistress Mo was unable to fight back. Plus, the Mo clan had always been cruel like that. Everyone had grown used to this. But this also could not affect the love Mistress Mo had for her daughter.

She was only worried how her young daughter could cope with such a big blow.

But she discovered that her daughter had changed.

The lively and lovable Xiao Wu who liked to talk and laugh and disappeared. In her place was a quiet little lady of few words...

All day long she would hold that tattered scabbard and remained silent.

While her age was still young, a quiet sorrow grew more and more on her face.

Furthermore, there were times when she would unexpectedly stare into the distance with a pensive gaze. But after each time, her state of mind became a little more sorrowful.

Mo Qing Wu was currently still young; she was, of course, not

capable of being lovesick. In fact, the majority of her thoughts did not have anything to do with Chu Yang.

But it was because of this pensiveness that her heart became closed.

“Why is it like this? A Hua might be a servant, but I have always called her Sister A Hua. When her mother got sick, it was me who stole medicine from the clan and gave it to her. That day, she said that she would treat me well for the rest of her life. But after what happened, A Hua does not pay any attention to me. I even heard her telling Xiao Yue that I am a disabled person…”

“Why? Every time father came back, he always gave me a hug. But after that day, it’s no longer like that anymore. Plus, he immediately turned away each time he sees me. If he did not turn away then there would be a scowl on his face. Did I make father hate me?”

“The other day, I went to the clan’s herbal storage to get some medicine, but they did not give it to me. I still remember whenever I wanted anything before, they would give it to me. Why? Is it because I turned into a disabled person?”

“That day, in the great hall… second brother did not even dare to look at me…”

“The saber Brother Chu yang gave me… hoo hoo…”

Mo Qing Wu had thought like that. At such a young age, her heart had unexpectedly become so burdened… As for her body, it had grown more haggard by each day that passed…

It pained Mistress Mo to see her daughter so.

Then one day, Mo Tian Ji received notice from the clan that he would have to go to Cang Lan battlefront. Before leaving, he went to say goodbye to his little sister.

At that time, he saw for himself how Mo Qing Wu sat at the door with her chin resting on her arm as she stared blankly into the

distance without any spirit.

With a pained heart, Mo Tian Ji gently walked in front of his little sister and sat down.

“Xiao Wu, your second brother is here.”

“Uh…”

“Xiao Wu… what’s wrong?”

“Nothing.”

“Xiao Wu, I have to go to Cang Lan battlefront.”

“Uh…”

“Before I leave, I am a little worried about you. What do you want? Second brother will bring it back for you.”

“Uh…”

“Xiao Wu!” Mo Tian Ji agonizingly held Mo Qing Wu’s frail shoulder and shook it gently, “Say something.” He was suddenly shocked, “How are you so frail?”

A sign of life finally appeared in Mo Qing Wu’s empty gaze, “Second brother.”

“Uh, I am here!”

“Second brother… did I turn into a disabled person?”

“Gibberish!” Mo Tian Ji became angry, “Who told you that?”

“They all say that. Is it true?”

Mo Tian Ji silently hugged his little sister, “Little sister, you will definitely be fine! You will not become a disabled person!”

“None of you need me!” Mo Qing Wu sobbed.

Mo Tian Ji was stunned.

“I have nothing left. Uncle Cheng Yu left, and you are also leaving.”

“…”

“Second brother, can I still get my saber back?” Speaking of the saber, a look of longing flashed in Mo Qing Wu’s eyes.

“…”

“Second brother, why did you not get my saber back that day?” Mo Qing Wu looked up. She was young, her eyes were supposed to be naïve and lively; but there was now an unexpected trace of caution…

Mo Tian Ji was at a loss for words. What could he say? How could he explain?

“You took my saber out, and it was immediately taken away.” Mo Qing Wu’s voice was so soft, it was almost faint.

Mo Tian Ji sighed deeply.

At did moment, he knew what he did wrong.

If he did not take out the saber, Mo Qing Wu’s situation would definitely not be any better than it is now. With that saber, she would at least get a more peaceful environment. In the worst case scenario, this was still the inner court. With the strict rules here, the servants dared not say anything. Mo Qing Wu would also be very safe. Plus, she also had her mother by her side.

With her mother’s care, Mo Qing Wu would not be mistreated.

This was the greatest gain.

But Mo Tian Ji had overlooked one thing. After all of her privileges were taken away, in Mo Qing Wu’s mind, there was only one person she could trust; that was Chu Yang.

Because it was that Mo clan who decided her fate. They had placed her into a helpless and pitiful state.

But it was Chu Yang had once saved her life from the brink of death. Plus, he played with her and gave her that saber…

When she was dealt this major blow, in this little girl's heart, the time she lived with Chu Yang seemed even more cheerful.

Comparing between the two, Chu Yang was, of course, the better one.

Given such a big blow, Mo Qing Wu valued those memories and that saber. It was also that saber alone that could give her warmth.

But Mo Tian Ji had used it in exchange for this living condition.

The moment that saber was taken away, it was as if the last refuge of her little mind was taken away from Mo Qing Wu! This caused her to be both physically and psychologically injured; something she could not handle.

This was Mo Tian Ji's biggest mistake!

Because Mo Qing Wu was still very young, she still did not understand the value of the exchange. Such an exchange, to her, had no meaning. Because she had been living here and was still living here...

She could only feel that she had lost her most beloved saber!

And that saber was lost because of Mo Tian Ji.

Perhaps she would understand Mo Tian Ji's pain someday, but right now, she definitely did not...

Mo Tian Ji stood there in shock. At this moment, even with his heavenly intelligence, he was helpless...

He could only grit his teeth and say, "Xiao Wu, rest assured! One day, second brother will take back that saber for you! And hand it to you myself!"

"You will?" Mo Qing Wu looked up; her eyes shined as she looked at Mo Tian Ji. After a while, those eyes grew dim again, and she said sadly, "Second brother, I am tired."

Then she dropped her head and did not pay any mind to her second brother anymore. She dreamily looked at her feet with an

unfocused gaze and murmured, “I miss... really miss... Brother Chu Yang...”

When Mo Tian Ji left the little court, even he did not know how to describe his feelings.

He only knew that he wanted to kill someone!

And the most ideal target was none other than Mo Tian Yun!

Chapter 221: An eye for an eye

Mo Tian Yun, I will get you for this! I will build my strength at Cang Lan battlefront and return. Mo Tian Yun, just you wait!

Mo Tian Ji finally left. He had originally intended to find his father and speak to him before leaving. But after seeking him out many times, Mo Xing Chen was always busy. Or it could be said that he intentionally did not want to meet. Seeing that it was the day for his departure, Mo Tian Ji abandoned such effort.

He knew that his father did not want to see him.

When he left, Mo Tian Yun unexpectedly represented the clan and went to see him off. The two brothers glared at each other without saying a word.

The group going with Mo Tian Ji waited quietly outside the door as they bid each other farewell. In the front was a female warrior with a delicate frame.

At this moment, the warrior's gaze was directed in Mo Tian Yun's direction.

"Let's go over here and talk." Mo Tian Ji gritted his teeth and walked to the side with Mo Tian Yun.

"Second brother, I want to wish you a good trip." Mo Tian Yun smiled with satisfaction as he walked, "Do you have something you want to talk to me about?"

"It's nothing; I just want to let you know something." Mo Tian Ji became silent for a moment and finally whispered, "Mo Tian Yun, open your ears and listen carefully!"

"What did you say?" Mo Tian Yun said angrily.

"Listen well!" Mo Tian Ji's countenance was as cold as a block of ice as he spoke, "Three years ago, when Lan Mei was sent to serve me, I already knew that she is your person."

Mo Tian Yun was frightened, “You!”

“Keep it down!” Mo Tian Ji smiled icily, “Not only do I know that she is your person, I also know that you are crazy about her! Mo Tian Yun, I also know that she gave birth to a son for you. It’s just that you are not married so this has to be kept a secret.”

Mo Tian Yun’s face became pale; the edges of his eyes twitched slightly.

“You really like this woman, and you all really like this son of yours. That little boy is very innocent and lovable; I also like him a lot.” Mo Tian Ji licked his lips and said, “Mo Tian Yun, you would do well to remember, while I am not home, if Xiao Wu has to suffer any grievances, you should be prepared to go to Red Lantern House to find your woman. I will surely place the Mo Tian Ji seal on her body. At that time, I am sure that your enemies will be very interested!”

Mo Tian Yun’s lost all of its color.

Red Lantern House was a famous brothel in Middle Three Heavens. It was also the visiting place of all the great clans’ disciples. When Mo Tian Yun liked a woman, it would not be to the point of not being able to let her go. But it was about how he let her go. If she was sold to a brothel by Mo Tian Ji, this humiliation would drive Mo Tian Yun mad!

Mo Tian Ji relished in Mo Tian Yun’s reaction and said slowly, “There is also your son; since he was born, he always followed his mother. Haha, I can promise you… he will live very well.”

A trace of madness appeared on Mo Tian Ji’s face as he smiled, “I also do not want to do this to you… Do you understand now?”

Mo Tian Yun’s eyes suddenly reddened, “Mo Tian Ji, do you plan to die together with dead fish and broken nets?”

“Xiao Wu is not a fish!” Mo Tian Ji said casually, “You also do not need to search; your son is no longer there. Rest assured, as long as

Xiao Wu is safe, mother and son will be safe!”

“But that is your nephew!” Mo Tian Yun let out a low roar!

“You don’t see me as a brother; why do I have to see him as my nephew!” Mo Tian Ji smiled warmly, “Mo Tian Yun, why do you remain so naïve like this?”

Then Mo Tian Ji took a step back and looked at Mo Tian Yun coldly. He continued to back up step by step. After five steps, he suddenly pointed his hand straight at Mo Tian Yun’s nose. He poked at thin air twice and said casually, “Eldest brother, remember what I said! Let’s hope nothing unpleasant will happen, right?”

After that, he immediately turned and yelled, “Let’s go!” He jumped onto a horse and let out a laugh that echoed throughout. A cavalry of three hundred moved as one like a black cloud breaking through the cold wind as it sped away!

There was not even one look back.

That warrior Lan Mei only caught a glance of Mo Tian Yun’s pale face earlier. Before she had a chance to react, she had to leave with the cavalry and disappeared in a blink of an eye.

Mo Tian Yun stood silently at the door; the muscles on his face twitched. After a long time, he let out a punch. The entire door was smashed to pieces by that punch! He breathed heavily as his eyes were filled with indignation. He said in a low voice, “Send out my order to cancel all actions in the inner court!”

“Huh? Eldest young master?...” The guard behind him could not help but feel shocked when he heard this.

“Do as I say!” Mo Tian Yun turned around and yelled angrily, “Are you deaf?”

The terrified guard paled, and repeatedly said yes. He then turned and ran as if he was flying.

Mo Tian Yun hyperventilated with madness rising in his eyes, “Mo Tian Ji! I will kill you!”

In a distance, Mo Tian Ji’s countenance showed a conflicting emotion. He also did not want to use this tactic, but at this time, his hand was forced; not using it was not an option!

Getting Lan Mei was part of Mo Tian Ji’s plan from three years ago! It was at that time that the struggle between two brothers became fierce.

Mo Tian Yun was certain that Mo Tian Ji did not know Lan Mei’s identity. Having Lan Mei serve under Mo Tian Ji was tantamount to having his own super spy there! But never did he imagine that Mo Tian Ji got Lan Mei for this very reason!

It was to prepare for this very step!

Now that he used this tactic to deal with Mo Tian Yun, it was an eye for an eye!

With Mo Tian Ji gone, Mo Qing Wu was even lonelier in the inner court...

Each day, she held on the tattered scabbard. She even held it when she went to sleep. She hugged it tightly as if this old, tattered scabbard was now her only consolation. The sorrow on her little face made everyone feel extremely sad.

“Scabbard, do you miss the saber?”

“Scabbard, do you miss Brother Chu Yang?”

“Scabbard, do you want to leave this place?”

“Scabbard... I only have you by my side...”

“Brother Chu Yang... when will you come here...”

*****

During this time, Chu Yang put all of his effort into brutally training himself!

Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong successively broke through. Luo Ke Di ranked fifth, and Rui Bu Tong was bitter with a gap of only one hour. But, in the end, he still had to take the last position.

The duty of washing undergarments for a month fell onto the shoulders of the future lone bandit, Rui Bu Tong.

Rui Bu Tong was now grimacing every day.

Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang were a little better than Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo who were not the least bit polite. They made sure that their socks were filthy each day before tossing them on Rui Bu Tong's bed...

Rui Bu Tong was getting stunk to death...

Especially bad was the fact that Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di always loitering around him with satisfaction.

"Sixth, let me hear you say third brother."

"Sixth, let me hear you say fifth brother."

"Good..."

"Good..."

"Sixth, are you done washing those socks? Third brother wants to give you a few pointers in martial arts."

"Sixth, are you done washing those socks? Fifth brother wants to have a match with you."

Rui Bu Tong suffered from a bombardment of physical and psychological blows... Under the torture of these two people, his cultivation broke through new heights...

As for Chu Yang's current state, it was enough to make people click their tongues!

This punk had placed his life on the life for cultivation!

After breaking through third grade martial master, he began to make a jump with his challenges. Starting with Rui Bu Tong, all

four people had to fight with Chu Yang at least five times a day!

Moreover, Chu Yang requested that they must not go easy on him!

Thus, after each match, Chu Yang suffered a total beating. But no matter how he was beaten up, after less than an hour, he would jump up with full rigor and proceed with the next match!

His ability to withstand such abuse terrified the four!

While they were able to give this big brother a beating each time, this unrelenting endurance... was too disturbing!

The four thought to themselves that if it was them, they would surely not be able to withstand it!

Plus, Chu Yang seemed to make progress every time. His agility, footwork and cultivation state created a different feeling each time they fought.

The four of them had never seen such an anomaly, nor had they ever heard of one.

Chu Yang was also in endless pain. He had fought like mad and made total use of Gu Du Xing and company to slowly reach a new level of understanding!

But the four of them were currently high ranking Great level masters.

He felt great pressure from them each time.

And his state of enlightenment also soared under this great pressure. His advancement speed gave Gu Du Xing and company a complete understanding of the word terror.

Half a month ago, Chu Yang was only at fourth grade! But right now, he was already at the peak of seventh grade Martial Master!

There were many states of enlightenment he had already experienced from his previous life so he advanced quicker. But it was enough to scare people!

Moreover, what drove Gu Du Xing and company crazy was Chu Yang's new fighting technique which was slowly forming. Especially during the time period when he understood Gentle Force of Water. He had now started to gradually incorporate it into his techniques and movements...

This kind of fighting technique was very difficult to deal with.

If it were not for the fact that their martial power greatly exceeded his own... a second or third grade Great level master, for example, would definitely be beaten by him. There was no doubt about that.

Being chased by Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing and company also felt massive pressure!

If someone from the level of third grade Martial Artist managed to unexpectedly catch up to seventh or eighth grade Martial Great Master... they would lose too much face! As a result, the four spontaneously trained for their lives...

In this dull state, their lives passed day by day.

The weather grew colder and colder. Bu Tian Pavilion also had ample gains. In addition to nonstop training, they gathered new recruits and quietly laid out a spy network. In term of domestic issues, they had no movements.

Since his coronation, Tie Bu Tian had many things waiting for him to deal with. He was so busy that he no longer had time to go to Bu Tian Pavilion.

In the eyes of the Iron Cloud people, Bu Tian Pavilion had quieted down.

In the eyes of countless "caring" people, this was proof of rumors of King of Hell Chu falling out of favor and on the verge of losing his position. In Iron Cloud Citadel, gossips grew, and those who were nervous before were feeling very happy now.

Today, after finishing with his cultivation, Chu Yang could feel

that his cultivation level had risen to eighth grade Martial Master. Looking at Gu Du Xing and company still fiercely training, he could not help but wonder.

“After one month of nonstop training without going out, don’t you guys feel bored?” Chu Yang smiled and asked, “Today, big brother will treat you. Well? Where do you want to go?”

Perhaps, he was waiting for the right time to go to that place?

“Drink wine with girls, drink wine with girls…” Ji Mo cheered loudly with two bright eyes, “Find some pretty girls and talk about life…”

Luo Ke Di, Gu Du Xing and Rui Bu Tong all stepped back at the same time. They looked around casually while showing an expression that clearly spoke, “Don’t look at me, I don’t know him…”

Chapter 222: House of Exceptional Beauties

“Speaking of drinking wine with girls… I have never done that before.” Chu Yang coughed and rubbed his nose in embarrassment, “What… is drinking wine with girls? Is it good?”

“Bull…” The four people yelled in unison as they looked at Chu Yang contemptuously!

“I really don’t know… I have never tried it before…” Chu Yang said innocently.

“Big brother, you’re saying you have never been to such a place?” Ji Mo stared with wide eyes.

Rui Bu Tong and Luo Ke Di laughed loudly.

“Why not go today and see?” Chu Yang scratched his head; a light flashed in his eyes.

In Iron Cloud Citadel, there was one place that Chu Yang was very interested in, but could not be certain of. This place seemed charming and lovely, but it could also be considered the most dangerous place in Iron Cloud Citadel!

For Lower Three Heavens, calling it dragon bay or tiger cave would not be an exaggeration!

House of Exceptional Beauties!

(TLN: Four verses to follow. I will try not to butcher them during the translation process… too much.)

Singing and wine pouring at all times;

Careless dancing in the night erases all worries;

Where do beauties worth discarding the world for go?

House of most exceptional beauties in the world!

Since the time House of Exceptional Beauties first appeared in Iron Cloud Citadel, whether it was endless fighting or changing

dynasties, it remained standing!

In the previous life, after Golden Horse Riders Department toppled Iron Cloud, their greatest loss was to House of Exceptional Beauties!

The House of Exceptional Beauties was, as the name suggested, a brothel. But, this one was different from other brothels. The ladies here only sold their talents, not their bodies. (TLN: I know the definition of the English word brothel does not fit. But I will translate it as brothel to be consistent as the original uses the same term for all types.) Plus, the price was also very high-class. If some someone was not a rich master, he would surely not be in the position to pay for one night of entertainment.

At that time, Iron Cloud Citadel fell into the hands of the enemies, and the Golden Horse Riders Department men went to House of Exceptional Beauties to have some fun. Then they demanded the ladies accompany them to bed; the people of House of Exceptional Beauties beat them up and tossed them out.

Right after, an entire battalion attacked, but they were also beaten with their teeth all over the ground. In the end, Diwu Qing Rou himself showed up to pacify this situation. No one knew why, but House of Exceptional Beauties remained House of Exceptional Beauties.

What did this say about them?

Given Diwu Qing Rou's strength, he had unexpectedly let House of Exceptional Beauties off! One did not have to think to know its terrifying power.

Chu Yang also did not know what was hidden behind House of Exceptional Beauties. But what he did know was that it must be a great monster! House of Exceptional Beauties was clearly a tool for gathering wealth for some power. Besides that, he did not know anymore.

But this was enough for Chu Yang to respect it!

Chu Yang had always thought about the possibility of recruiting House of Exceptional Beauties to his side. If that was the case, his strength would certainly increase. But House of Exceptional Beauties had been in Iron Cloud Citadel for so many years; how could Tie Bu Tian and Tie Long Chen not know of its value?

If they had no way to recruit them, Chu Yang estimated that his chances were not all that great.

If he was to carelessly bother House of Exceptional Beauties, everything could be ruined. So Chu Yang kept off.

Now that the world was on ice and Iron Cloud Citadel was busy, his Bu Tian Pavilion was actually in a leisurely state. Chu Yang wanted to go and check out House of Exceptional Beauties. Of course bringing Ji Mo and company with him was for fun, but it was also for their powerful assistance.

Chu Yang thought a little and said, “Wait for me here a while. I will go to Bu Tian Pavilion first and see. If there is nothing, we will go to House of Exceptional Beauties for a little fun.”

“House of Exceptional Beauties?” Upon hearing these words, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong became excited, “Exceptional beauties? How many exceptional…”

Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo looked at each other and suddenly laughed lewdly.

“Keep in mind that they sell talents not bodies. Don’t make fools of yourselves.” Chu Yang warned.

“That’s what makes them more captivating! What fun is there when they sell themselves? It’s disgusting just thinking about it!” Ji Mo let out the full blown laugh of a pervert, “It’s exactly what I want… ahwoo…”

Gu Du Xing looked coldly and said, “House of Exceptional Beauties? I am not interested! Huh, in this world, besides Xiao

Miao, are there any other exceptional beauties?”

The four others rolled their eyes. It seemed that, with the exception of Gu Miao Ling, all women in the world were dirt...

“Let’s go, let’s go... Hey, hey, what are you waiting for? We will go to Bu Tian Pavilion with you. Then we will go to House of Exceptional Beauties together!” Luo Ke Di said hastily. This punk was so excited that his face reddened. His eyes shined with hunger, “I am too anxious...”

Then he looked down and said grievously, “You see, it’s even ready...”

Sure enough there was an eye-catching bulge in his crotch...

Chu Yang scoffed and kicked.

Luo Ke Di quickly moved aside. He reached in his hand and tucked away his little brother. Then he said sadly, “I still remember when I was enjoying my travels... I did not expect to be grabbed by you people the moment I reached Lower Three Heavens. From the open ocean, I fell into a desert. Damn it; it is on the verge of exploding...”

The five flew away as they argued.

Gu Du Xing really did not want to go, but Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di grabbed him from either side and dragged him along.

The great snow fall had ceased a few days ago, but it was still extremely cold. Dark clouds filled the air, and the snow formed a thick layer on the ground without melting.

Since the day Mo Qing Wu left him, Chu Yang felt a little uneasy. During this time period, he had trained like mad and beaten himself, but he could not alleviate the sadness in his heart.

However, he could not speak of this pain to anyone. If Gu Du Xing’s group knew that he was lovesick with a nine and a half year old girl... they would probably look down upon him!

According to his calculation, Mo Qing Wu was surely home by now. Plus, the clan would probably know about everything. What would the Mo clan do?

Chu Yang was a little bothered. What he regretted most was the fact that Dong Wu Shang ran so fast. He did not have time to tell him to ask for some news on Mo Qing Wu...

They argued all the way to Bu Tian Pavilion.

While the weather was cold, all of Iron Cloud Citadel remained bustling as before. The only exception was Bu Tian Pavilion, which was normally the busiest place, but was now deserted.

Most people were sent to do work outside by Chu Yang. Within Bu Tian Pavilion, there were only new recruits training. Wu Qian Qian oversaw the operation. Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong were also not there; where they went was not known.

“Where did you send them?” Wu Qian Qian asked.

“It is a secret.” Chu Yang said casually, “Little miss, you should not be so curious.”

Wu Qian Qian was utterly annoyed. I am your elder martial sister!

“I have a few things to do these next few days. If there is nothing happening at Bu Tian Pavilion, don’t bother me.” Chu Yang said lightly.

“Who would dare to bother you?” Wu Qian Qian was fuming. Then she said warmly, “The prince... ah no, the emperor needs you?”

“He needs me? Does he want me to marry his little sister?” Chu Yang rolled his eyes.

“You are quick when it comes to pretty girls...” Wu Qian Qian’s eyes widened, “He has a little sister?”

“He doesn’t have a little sister?” Compared to Wu Qian Qian, Chu

Yang was even more surprised.

“Where is his little sister from?” Wu Qian Qian stared with round eyes, “All of Iron Cloud Nation knows that the prince was the only successor of the emperor!”

“Oh…” Chu Yang said freely, “It’s because he hid her away… Huh? That doesn’t make sense… then who is it?”

Chu Yang frowned and thought. Then he said slowly, “Iron Cloud’s number one beauty. But given such… how would you know if she is beautiful?”

“Big brother, are you done?” Ji Mo called from outside the door, “You are gutsy to talk about House of Exceptional Beauties right in front of a beautiful woman!”

“What House of Exceptional Beauties?” Wu Qian Qian immediately became alert, “House of Exceptional Beauties in Iron Cloud Citadel?”

Her words interrupted Chu Yang’s train of thoughts. He said nonchalantly, “I want to take them there for some fun…”

“You are taking them to House of Exceptional Beauties for some fun?” Wu Qian Qian’s eyes immediately widened. Her smiling face gradually turned cold. Then she suddenly roared, “You can’t go!”

“What?” Chu Yang looked at her in surprise and said, “You can’t be unreasonable like that! Us going to House of Exceptional Beauties, what does that have to do with you?”

“I…” Wu Qian Qian bit her lip.

“I, what?” Chu Yang turned to walk out, “You can continue to do your work. Let’s go!”

“Hold on!” Wu Qian Qian ran out, “I am going, too.”

These words shocked Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Rui Bu Tong. You are going, too? That place is a brothel… where men go to play with women!

“You can’t go!” Chu Yang said categorically. Bringing a female to a brothel? What is this? Plus, I am not really going to play…

“I must go!” Wu Qian Qian did not yield.

“You tell me… What are you going to do there?” Chu Yang scratched his head in annoyance, “What are you going for? You can play with prostitutes? You…”

“In any case, I must go!” Wu Qian Qian showed a rarely seen resilience. You want to go and play? Don’t even think about it!

“You have to stay here!” Chu Yang said seriously, “This is a command!”

“I will resign immediately and go!” Wu Qian Qian said angrily.

The two glared at each other like two fighting cocks.

Gu Du Xing and company’s gazes shifted from one to another. The stood there with their arms folded as if they were watching great entertainment.

At this very moment, a savior appeared. Cheng Zi Ang ran in with a pile of documents in his arms, “Oh, miss. This… ah, the minister is here. That’s good. This…”

“What is it?” Wu Qian Qian said carelessly.

“I am going to the royal palace…” Chu Yang immediately ran away.

Wu Qian Qian yelled after him, “Wait!” Then hastily gave chase.

Minister Chu yelled, “Cheng Zi Ang, I command you to stop her! If you let her cross the door today, I will punish you!”

Then with a wave, he and the rest escaped.

“Oh, hey, hey… Miss Wu, Miss Wu…” Cheng Zi Ang stretched out his arms, “Aunty, please have mercy on my old bones…”

Seeing that Wu Qian Qian wanted to give chase, Cheng Zi Ang almost cried.

“The minister is going to the royal palace for official business!” Cheng Zi Ang was still unclear. What is going on? Why do you want to stop him from going to the palace?

“Is the royal palace at the House of Exceptional Beauties?” When Wu Qian Qian saw that Chu Yang had disappeared from sight, she stomped bitterly, “He wants to go to the House of Exceptional Beauties to play…”

“Huh?” Cheng Zi Ang’s eyes immediately widened. The minister wants to play with prostitutes?

Seeing that Wu Qian Qian’s eyes had turned red, Cheng Zi Ang immediately coaxed, “Going to the House of Exceptional Beauties is no big deal. At most, he will be listening to them singing. The people at the House of Exceptional Beauties sell their talents not their bodies…”

He criticized internally: This minister. There is an exceptional beauty right next to you, and you are going to the House of Exceptional Beauties to play with prostitutes? How Miss Wu feels about you, who in Bu Tian Pavilion does not know…

“It’s still not okay that they sell their talents and not their bodies!” Wu Qian Qian said angrily.

At this moment, she never stopped to think: I am trying to stop Chu Yang, but what does Chu Yang have to do with me?

Chapter 223: The mysterious person in blue

Chu Yang awkwardly escaped.

Ji Mo and company followed behind him.

“I have to say, big brother. This Miss Wu is not bad to look at!” Luo Ke Di tooted his praise, “This young master is well versed with countless women, but even in Middle Three Heavens, there are not many better than she! A top beauty…”

Chu Yang’s face darkened as he continued to rush forth.

“Big brother, I can see that this Miss Wu has some feelings toward you. I can’t believe you choose to play around instead…” Ji Mo said sneakily, “The way I see it, there must be some affair between the two of you…”

“What affair?” Chu Yang said angrily. He glared, and Ji Mo shrunk back in fear.

“In fact, this Miss Wu is very good.” Gu Du Xing said casually as he followed from behind, “She really does like you. We can all see this. You… If you don’t mind, you should reconsider.”

Chu Yang sighed. His impression of Wu Qian Qian had also changed. Even she did not know this. But what kind of person was Chu Yang? How could he have not perceived her feelings?

He remained cold in this aspect. This was something he could not comply with, but he definitely could not reject it either!

Because Wu Qian Qian never made her choice clear and maintained an aloof attitude. She quietly liked him without saying anything! So Chu Yang had few choices.

I never said I like you. I never showed any intentions up to this point. Would you even reject my silent intentions?

So Chu Yang feigned ignorance.

Upon hearing Gu Du Xing’s words, Chu Yang sighed and said,

“How could I not know? It’s just… I currently don’t have the mind to talk about love…”

“Why don’t you?” Ji Mo jumped in once again, “We can talk about love, discuss official business, and practice martial arts… That would be enjoyable.”

“Get lost!” Chu Yang said angrily, “One more word out of you, and I will ask for the sword back!”

Ji Mo shrunk back and obediently remained silent. They have lived together for so long and had grown thick skin. At this point, only saying that could threaten him. If he was to say: “One more word out of you, and I will punch you!” He would probably get the response: “Come on! Come on! I have been itching these past few days…”

“You already have someone in your heart?” Gu Du Xing asked thoughtfully. This was the only reason why Chu Yang would not chase after this alluring beauty.

“Mm.” Chu Yang nodded.

“Who is it?” Gu Du Xing’s eyes immediately widened, “Have I met her yet?”

“I am certain that you have already met her!” Chu Yang smiled mysteriously.

“I have?” Gu Du Xing was truly puzzled. He started to think hard about all the beauties he met… but after thinking over and over, he simply became even more puzzled. He could not figure out anything.

The problem was everyone was essentially not a beauty in Gu Du Xing’s eyes. They were simply women! And all women were the same.

“You already have someone in your heart?” Luo Ke Di snorted and happily suggested, “Men with three wives and four concubines are common place. So what if you already have a lover? To be

solely taken by one person, that could affect your little brother's firmness..."

"Get lost!" Gu Du Xing yelled loudly. He gave a kick, and Luo Ke Di flew out like a cloud.

"I cannot figure it out." Gu Du Xing frowned while still maintaining his kick stance.

"Mm, keep thinking about it then." Chu Yang smiled strangely. He was currently not in the mood to talk about romance. Mo Qing Wu had been weighing down his heart for two lifetimes. If he developed feelings for Wu Qian Qian now...

Then his conviction after his rebirth would be as worthless as bubbles in the sea!

"That House of Exceptional Beauties, is it much further..." Luo Ke Di ran back with snow all over himself and changed the subject.

"Not too far. Given our speed, the whole trip takes less than an hour." Chu Yang said cautiously, "It's just there is something I must tell all of you first. The background of the House of Exceptional Beauties is extremely mysterious. But it is also extremely powerful! Don't think that you are young masters from great clans in Middle Three Heavens and you can just dismiss them! In my opinion, internally, the House of Exceptional Beauties is no less than any of your clans!"

"Oh?" Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, and Rui Bu Tong showed a look of interest as they looked at each other and smiled thoughtfully.

"F*!" Luo Ke Di was shocked, "This is the House of Exceptional Beauties? Grandmother! What magnificence!"

Not only him, but even Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing were somewhat surprised!

Snow had fallen nonstop for four days and did not melt. All of Iron Cloud Citadel, including the royal palace, was covered in

snow. But within a hundred feet radius of this House of Exceptional Beauties there was unexpectedly not a bit of snow!

Everything was clean! Even the ground was extremely dry. The roof was also surprisingly clean.

In the local area, the only thing that had snow was the little trees that were not afraid of the cold growing in the courtyard. Snow remained on the branches and further contrasted the green color of the leaves creating a dreamy atmosphere like that of a magical realm...

Two sets of lanterns hung from the roof.

The nearby neighbors were completely covered in snow; this was the only place that was dry and clean. Under such fierce contrast, this place looked even more mysterious. It was as if it did not belong to the mortal realm at all.

Young masters came and went nonstop; there was even a merchant walking in with his giant belly.

“This place is really lively.” Luo Ke Di’s two eyes brightened as he forcefully took in the fragrance of makeup carried toward them by the cold wind. He said dreamily, “My god! It’s as warm as spring... Being here, I feel like a fish that just found water...”

“Let’s go. Come on.” Chu Yang immediately recovered after the initial shock.

As they were about to go in, he suddenly sensed something out of the ordinary. He could not help but stiffen as he listened carefully. But he did not discover anything. Still with a thoughtful look in his eyes, he turned back and walked in with Gu Du Xing and company.

A few hundred feet behind them, by the trunk of a large pine tree, a person in blue appeared without making a sound. With a look of great dissatisfaction, he muttered, “This punk, I can’t believe he is taking his friends to a brothel to play with prostitutes...”

He then frowned and murmured, “Motherf*, it was a lot work finding him. But how do I verify that it is him? He still doesn’t seem to have the Pure Purple Jade Essence on him. Could it be that I am mistaken again…”

Thinking about the last time he reported back, the person in blue’s popularity had suffered. He had told the master of the clan that he did not find positive proof, and he was kicked out for it.

“No jade essence? Why bother to report back?” That time, the master whacked the man’s back with his walking stick, “Damn you! You said you can find what? You are supposed to find a person, but have no one to show for it! More than a hundred times before, your elder brother and sister-in-law hastily ran over just to have your sister-in-law go back in tears… You… can you do anything with certainty?”

“Ah, sir, I suspect… I suspect that this time is certain…”

“You suspect? You suspect your grandmother!” The master of the clan roared, “One hundred thirty-five times, each time you were certain that you were right!”

“This time is certain… his looks are too much alike… really, that demeanor, that face…”

“One hundred thirty-five times before, didn’t you also say the same thing each time?!”

“Sir…”

“Get out!”

“It is right this time…”

“Get out! Still not leaving… Fine, fine!”

Of course that walking stick slammed down again. The person in blue awkwardly ran away.

He could hear the clan master’s roar, “Each time you return without finding him, I will toss you into the latrines!”

At this thought, the person in blue's face became as ugly as a bitter gourd.

After reporting, he went directly to Iron Cloud Citadel. Then he searched for a few days and practically turned over all of Iron Cloud Citadel. It was not until this morning that he accidentally saw Chu Yang as he exited Heavenly Armament Pavilion.

Even with his speed and skill, he was still exhausted.

"I still can't sense the purple jade essence. Could it be that he had hidden the piece I gave him as well?" How could the person in blue lose hope? He swore that the youth he found this time looked exactly like his elder brother! Compared to the one hundred thirty-five people before him, he looked much more alike. (TLN: Not sure if it's worth mentioning; unless given other specifications, we cannot assume biological relationship like Mo Tian Ji and Mo Tian Yun.)

Moreover, the demeanor was also extremely similar this time! There was also the fact that the mouth looked very much like his sister-in-law's.

However, the clan was extremely busy right now. He could not see his elder brother or sister-in-law. Instead, he ran right into the master of the clan... This old man's temper... was truly...

"Ah... a brothel... I really hate these places..." The person in blue sighed and softly flew in.

The best thing to do right now was to follow this punk and slowly verify things... Of course being able to find that piece of jade would be best!

"Hey, hey, it has been a while since you young masters come here. Young masters, welcome... Girls, come and greet our honored guests..."

The moment Chu Yang and company entered the door, they were instantly greeted happily by an obese woman of about thirty or

forty years of age with a face caked with makeup.

“Oh.” Ji Mo made a retching noise and said angrily, “Is this not House of Exceptional Beauties? Can this also be called an exceptional beauty?”

“This is the madam, you fool!” Gu Du Xing looked at young master Ji Mo in surprise. For a self-proclaim expert with beauties, this reaction was a little shocker.

Ji Mo’s face reddened as he said forcefully, “I thought the madam would be an exceptional beauty, too…”

“Get out of here! An exceptional beauty can be a madam?” Luo Ke Di stuck up his nose and dismissed Ji Mo from his regard.

The three continued to speak without minding anyone. The madam’s face turned red and white as she listened to this feeling greatly ashamed. At this time, five young ladies in white appeared and spoke in unison, “Welcome, five young masters…”

Then they immediately advanced and led each young master inside with arm in arm and warm smiles.

The moment these five young ladies appeared, even Chu Yang could not help but let out an exclamation…

Of course these five young ladies were not at the level of exceptional beauties, but they were each very graceful. In terms of figure or beauty, they were all above average. The makeup on their faces was very light. Their eyes were bright, and at first glance, they did not look like courtesans!

Moreover, each one had shyness on her face and looked like the girl next door. Looking at these young ladies was enough to tell that House of Exceptional Beauties was not an ordinary place!

Chapter 224: Three masters, one zither master

At this time, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing could hear the sound of heavy breathing that seemed to come from great anxiousness. They turned to look and did not know whether to laugh or cry.

If it were not for their great fortitude, they would have rolled out on the floor laughing.

They could see that the two self-proclaimed Casanovas, young masters Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di, were walking stiffly with two young ladies holding their arms. With their chests pushed forward and their backs straight, their bodies looked slightly awkward. And while they tried to maintain a calm countenance, a faint trace of anxiousness could be seen...

Especially with Ji Mo, a few droplets of sweat had appeared on the top of his nose.

Was this the behavior of Casanovas?

“Ji Mo.” Gu Du Xing called out.

Ji Mo did not hear anything. Ever since the young lady in white had taken his arm, he was no longer aware of anything else in this world.

“Ji Mo!” Gu Du Xing increased his volume.

“Huh? Ah, yes.” At this time, Ji Mo finally regained his consciousness.

“Compared to all the other places you have been to... how is this place?” Gu Du Xing said as he suppressed the urge to laugh.

“Ah... not bad. It is still not as good... but it’s acceptable.” Ji Mo tried to put on an “expert” look with his red face and said, “I still remember when I was home. Haha. I went to places like this every day... These small venues are not worth mentioning.”

“Hmm, Ji Mo, you are truly experienced! Not like the rest of us who don’t even know where to go.” Chu Yang said calmly.

“Hee…” The young lady holding Ji Mo’s arm could not help but let out a small laugh. But she immediately realized her mistake and hastily covered her mouth and rolled her eyes.

The other young ladies’ faces showed a look of mockery as well. They lived there; how could they not know? The looks of Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo, forget about being Casanovas, they probably had never been to a place like that ever!

Only young men who visited brothels for the very first time behaved that way. If it was even the second time… they would not be so nervous like that!

And this punk actually went on boasting about going to places like this every day when he was at home. What a laugh…

Gu Du Xing kept from laughing and said, “So young master Ji Mo is very well versed with this kind of place. Would you mind enlightening me a little?”

“What is there to enlighten?” With a knowledgeable look, Ji Mo lowered his voice, “Once they lead you into a room, just take off your pants and climb on…”

“Hahaha…” Gu Du Xing gave a thumbs up, “You are good!” Then he turned his head and walked on with wild laughter.

Other people might not know, but how could Gu Du Xing be ignorant of it? The word lust was the biggest taboo in all the great clans of Middle Three Heavens! This was especially true for all the talented second young masters. Each of them carried the hopes of the clans on their shoulders.

Regardless of what kind of martial arts, premature venting led to a loss that could not be recovered! It would also affect their lifetime achievements. And if these people could not make their achievements, they could not represent their clans…

Under such situations, how could Ji Mo's group dare to go to a brothel? This was simply a dream! If the clans were to find out, they would probably be skinned and beaten to death.

The young masters that played around were all rejects from ordinary clans. The important disciples in great clans were all strictly trained and cultivated; they were absolutely not the type that were allowed to play around!

Because of the great demands the clans had for them; they were disciplined strictly since they were little. This had become a habit and a way of life for them!

As for the rumors about great clans having many Casanovas, Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang took this as a joke! Casanovas only appeared in mid-rank and lower rank clans. If a great clan's successor were to be a Casanova, how could this clan remain standing firmly for many years? Would they not be destroyed already?

Stories of prodigal sons were for ordinary people only. They were not for the descendants of great clans! Because once they took a wrong step, they would never be able to turn back! Even if they could turn back, they would never be able to return to their old positions!

Seeing Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di acting as if they were veterans at the brothels, Chu Yang and company did not buy it for a second.

After they entered, they discovered that they were in an enormous room! In this great hall, there was a large furnace with coals burning and creating a hot fire that made the whole room feel as if it was the warm spring season!

The sounds of voices talking went on continuously.

At the end of the great hall was a stage. It was about three feet above the ground with curtains all around. One could faintly see through to the inside. Behind this curtain was an ancient zither.

Inside, there were surprisingly many people already sitting as if

they were waiting for something. At the place closest to the stage, there were surprisingly some five or six young masters carrying out the loudest discussion in the whole room.

“This place is a brothel?” Luo Ke Di finally asked in surprise, “Brothels… are like this?”

His voice was a little loud so everyone could not help but glare at him.

In this moment, a mistress in her thirties elegantly walked up onto the stage. While this woman was slightly older, her demeanor was still graceful and worldly. Each movement and action revealed a noble character.

In the great hall, all voices immediately ceased.

“Gentlemen, we will now begin our daily performance.” This woman casually smiled; with a lingering gaze like spring water, she looked over all the faces in the great hall and said, “You all know that Miss Xiao Lu is a master zither player. She was given the name Heavenly Zither Melody. Would you be interested in hearing her music?”

“Yes!” The entire crowd loudly advocated.

“Furthermore, Miss Xiao Lu is in a happy mood today. She said that anyone who could successfully invite her out, can ask her three questions about music; if those questions pique her interest that person could enter her room. Miss Xiao Lu would play a melody especially for him and eat dinner with him. Moreover, from today onward, that person would be a special guest at our House of Exceptional Beauties!”

“Whoa…”

Everyone exclaimed with excitement. This was, of course, a very tempting opportunity!

“Who is this Miss Xiao Lu?” Gu Du Xing said with an icy countenance, “I can’t believe she is so valued…”

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di looked angrily at him.

“You people don’t know who Miss Xiao Lu is?” A person next to them laughed, “Then why did you come here?”

It was as if being ignorant about Miss Xiao Lu was being ignorant in general. Of course everyone in the great hall were in a frenzy because of the appearance of this Miss Xiao Lu.

“Do you not know that the three masters of the Nine Heavens will have a match after twenty years?” Chu Yang laughed dryly.

“A match of three masters?”

“In June, when the lotus blooms, the three masters will meet in the middle of the continent. Who is extraordinary? Who will take the top position?” Chu Yang recited softly, “Angelic transverse flute is like vast waters, saintly end-blown flute is like a floating boat, and the sound of the zither is like the rustling sound of the heavens. One stroke of change paints spring. After twenty years of wind and rain, who still stands? After weathering twenty years, who will remain?” (TLN: Clearly, desperately attempting to translate poetry here. Also, two different instruments that translate into flute in English. So please excuse the technicality.)

“In the Nine Heavens, there were originally nine masters, each of his own musical instrument and at the peak of supremacy. For some unknown reason, one day, these nine people wanted to compete to see who was number one in the world. And so they started to compete.”

“At the time, it was the month of June at Lotus Lake in the capital of Great Zhao. In front of the watching public, they had their competition. Eight people remained equaled, but the sheng master lost and left the ranks of the masters. They became the eight masters from then on!”

“The nine masters’ skills were handed down for many generations; the eight remaining people were equally matched.

Plus, they were all at the pinnacle of their respective art, advancing further would have been very difficult. Therefore, they made a pact to come back to the same place in twenty years to compete once more. But at that time, it would be their disciples competing."

"Twenty years later, some disciples were not so well versed in their arts and ended up quitting. They then became six masters!"

"And now, there are only three masters! They are transverse flute, end-blown flute, and zither. June of next year will be the twenty years period, and it will be the time when the three masters will compete for the very last time! The best in the world must be determined then! And this Miss Xiao Lu is the only disciple of the zither master!" Chu Yang said slowly.

"While transverse flute, end-blown flute, and zither are not martial arts, their fame and influence in this world are enormous! Great Zhao, in the center of the continent, would probably suffer a great headache come June of next year." The moment Chu Yang said this, his eyes flashed, and a mysterious smile appeared on his face.

"Ah... but what does 'one stroke of change paints spring' mean?"

"Of course the witnesses of that competition between the nine masters had recorded the event..." Chu Yang said slowly.

"So you are not really bringing us here today to play." Gu Du Xing smiled. He had guessed Chu Yang's intention.

The meeting of the three masters in the center of the continent was a world event! If used properly, they would surely be able to give Diwu Qing Rou a big headache. Given a great opportunity to play Diwu Qing Rou, how could Chu Yang let it pass him by?

Chu Yang's coming here today was an extremely important move!

Chu Yang smiled and said, "This zither master, Miss Xiao Lu... Hahaha." He only laughed and did not explain anything.

Such a world event, how could Chu Yang have not known about it in the previous life? He still remembered clearly. In the previous life, end-blown flute master took the top position, transverse flute master took second, and zither master took third. In other words, this Miss Xiao Lu was defeated!

However, her failure was not because her craft was not refined. It was because her zither was suddenly stolen right before the battle of the three masters in the center of the continent... The zither of a zither master could be considered a priceless treasure and the most valuable item in the world!

How could her state of mind be good when she had lost her zither? And where could she go to find a suitable zither in such a short amount of time? Among zithers, how could there be two that are exactly alike?

So it was only logical that the zither master lost.

After losing, the zither master did not seem to accept her defeat. The other two masters were then murdered at almost the same time! Their two great clans also collapsed! This case caused an uproar in the world. But in the end, nothing could be done because no one knew who did it.

It was until years later that Chu Yang understood, this was done by the power backing the zither master! This move was extremely cruel because it was not certain who stole the zither. But it was certain that one of the two clans took part in this matter so at least one was guilty and deserving of their punishment.

Even though they could not find any evidence, they unexpectedly killed both clans! A total purge!

An overkill! But there was no other way, being excessive was most effective... But after killing people, the zither was still not found. And like that, the nine masters faded away with time...

“This is our chance.” Chu Yang smiled and winked at Gu Du

Xing...

Chapter 225: One melody to see reincarnation

“But what can we use to invite her out?” Ji Mo scratched his head and asked, “Should we use silver?”

“You are exactly right! We use silver!” Chu Yang nodded.

Ji Mo was immediately dumbfounded. He thought it would have to be some genius who spoke in verses or something. Money was the one thing that even he, himself, thought would be the least likely answer. He never expected that money would be it.

“This place is where the zither master perfects her craft, but it is also the place for amassing wealth!” Chu Yang said in a low voice, “It was said that when the zither master made her appearance here, it cost ten thousand taels of silver for her to play one song!”

“Ten thousand taels?” Luo Ke Di’s eyes widened, “I… damn! Can you directly jump to Emperor level after hearing the zither’s melody?”

“Is ten thousand taels expensive?” Chu Yang glanced at him, “Since that time on, the zither master does not show her skill for anything less than ten thousand taels! Yet the rich and powerful of Iron Cloud Citadel never grow tired of it. In fact, they even competed with each other… Therefore, the zither master’s income becomes increasingly high… Plus, this House of Exceptional Beauties does not have just a zither master.”

“After the zither master finishes her melody, the person who gave the highest price could listen to her play a melody alone! This melody has the name ‘The Only Ecstasy’. This is a symbol of the person’s status. As for the rest of the people, they could choose from the remaining ladies. While they only sell their talents and not their bodies… if you catch their eyes, you can negotiate further…” Chu Yang laughed.

"..." Luo Ke Di's eyes widened, "If you catch their eyes... you still need silver, right?"

"No kidding!" Chu Yang stared at him.

"Brilliant..." The four people gasped. That's right, they were only there to entertain and did not sell their bodies, but if one had enough sincerity, the beauties would surely be in admiration. The problem was, how much silver would be enough to show one's sincerity?

"Then that zither master... is also up for grabs?" Ji Mo asked.

"This is a no!" Chu Yang shook his head, "This is absolutely not possible. You are not even allowed to think about it."

"Big brother, you seem to be the real adept when it comes to these brothels." Rui Bu Tong said in admiration.

Chu Yang smiled wryly; he never thought he would ever become a brothel adept. How could he have not researched about this House of Exceptional Beauties and its rules when he was interested in it?

While the five were still busy in their discussion, someone had already raised his sign.

"Ten thousand taels! Ah, Boss Qian bid ten thousand taels."

"Fifteen thousand taels. Official Wang bid fifteen thousand!"

"..."

"They are really rich!" Ji Mo stuck out his tongue. While he was a descendant of a great clan that was much more powerful than these people, putting out ten thousand taels of silver just to hear a melody would probably get him skinned alive once he returned to the clan...

"Young master Lian has given out a bid of thirty thousand taels! Are there any higher bids?" There was a loud call from the stage.

Chu Yang blinked and said, "Watch as big brother makes his

move!” He suddenly raised his sign and yelled, “One hundred thousand taels!”

A young master sitting near the stage was shaking his head and laughing; he was saying something to the person sitting next to him. Thirty thousand taels was his bid. That thirty thousand was already considered very high, and he was certain that he would win. He never imagined that somebody would suddenly jump out and bid one hundred thousand. He could not help but frown and turn back to look at Chu Yang.

“This young master, you gave a bid of one hundred thousand! One hundred thousand taels! Are there any higher bids?” On the tall stage, the graceful lady was shocked, but she had time to recover.

Jumping to ten thousand taels from thirty thousand taels... This was truly... the first!

“One hundred fifty thousand taels!” Young master Lian stared at Chu Yang with raging anger.

“Three hundred thousand taels!” Chu Yang sneered.

The entire great hall was in total silence! Three hundred thousand taels just to hear one melody... The term wasteful spending could no longer be used to describe this behavior.

Young master Lian’s face darkened. He gave Chu Yang a ferocious look then turned his head icily and sat back down. He muttered in a low voice, “Where did this punk crawl out from? Does anyone know this punk?”

All of the young men around him shook their heads. One of them said, “It seems that he is new wealth with money to burn. Young master Lian could easily squish him to death!”

Young master Lian sneered, “None of you recognize him?”

Everyone shook their heads.

Young master Lian smiled icily.

He had pursued this zither master for half a year already. These past six months he had tossed out countless wealth. Now there was a great snow fall in the citadel, he knew that the zither master loved snow and she must be in a great state of mind. He had planned to do this a few days ago, but with the old emperor's sudden death and the coronation of the new emperor, he did not dare to stick his head outside during such a sensitive time. Thus, after everything became peaceful once more, he immediately rushed here.

He never thought that a country bumpkin of an upstart would crawl out and steal his thunder!

"In this Iron Cloud Citadel, who would dare to compete with me? Haha, I want to see what kind of character he is!" Young master Lian sneered. He turned around and said, "Follow this punk. Afterward, break his legs and bring him to me!"

A person in black behind him coldly glanced at Chu Yang and smiled ruthlessly. He said in a low voice, "Rest assured, young master."

How could Chu Yang not know that this zither master was the real person in charge of this House of Exceptional Beauties! This meeting was related to Chu Yang's grand plan! Therefore, Chu Yang absolutely had to get this face-to-face meeting no matter how much it cost. In any case, it was not his money. He was just putting out an advance. If this young master Lian's home had so much money, Chu Yang would not mind paying him a visit.

He certainly did not care who he offended...

A young master Lian, in Iron Cloud Citadel, there was only one wealthy family with such surname: The Minister of Revenue, Lian Cheng Gui. This youth must be Lian Cheng Gui's son.

A minister of revenue's son... was able to toss out one hundred

thousand taels of silver to hear a melody. There was no need to contemplate how wealthy this family's was. But where did all that money come from? The annual salary of a minister of revenue was only several hundred taels of silver...

Minister Chu had not seen any action for a while. In this snowy weather, he could now conveniently give the officials of Iron Cloud Citadel something fun. And at the same time, he could give everyone a little reminder, "Even if the reign has changed, Bu Tian Pavilion remains Bu Tian Pavilion! King of Hell Chu remains King of Hell Chu!"

Moreover, Chu Yang also used this big move to say to Diwu Qing Rou: King of Hell Chu is still fighting in Iron Cloud...

Using young master Lian as a sacrifice to start this campaign, Chu Yang was very happy!

"This young master gave the bid of three hundred thousand taels! Anyone else..." The middle-age beauty on the stage shouted and stopped midway. Three hundred thousand taels to buy a melody... Besides this big boss, no one else was that foolish.

She smiled and said, "Young master, what is your surname?"

Chu Yang smiled, "My surname is Chu." Then he immediately took out an extremely thick stack of bills and patted it between his hands. The bill on top clearly bared the words "Ten thousand."

"This is a small token of my sincerity toward House of Exceptional Beauties. Even if Miss Xiao Lu does not play her zither, this money still belongs to the House of Exceptional Beauties!" Chu Yang smiled and readily handed that thick stack of bills to the young lady in white next to him. He said, "No need to count, there are three hundred thousand taels, no more, no less. Would Miss Xiao Lu please come out?"

The young lady in white held the stack of bills with trembling hands. Since her birth, this was the first time she had ever held

such a large amount of money. She could not help but feel a bit excited as she took them in.

Young master Lian looked coldly; the edges of his mouth curled up as he smiled and muttered, “He is really someone with money; what I like most… are people with money.”

The young masters next to him were also a little regretful: Such a fat sheep like this, why does he have to tease Lian Fan Lei? Why didn’t he run into me? If that was the case, wouldn’t all that money go into my hands?

Readily tossing out bills worth a few hundred thousand taels, what fat sheep is this… Such a pity!

After a while, there was suddenly a pop at the edge of the stage, faint white smoke rose up from six corners. The smoke immediately enveloped the entire stage.

Then a delicate thin curtain slowly came down and covered the whole stage.

Bells rang out as a slim and graceful figure dreamily appeared in the middle of the stage and slowly sat down. In the hazy fog, the zither master seemed to take a quick glance in Chu Yang’s direction.

Behind the swinging curtain and the lingering fog, her appearance could not be clearly seen. The only thing that could be seen was her clear and cold eyes that looked like the cold water of a bottomless autumn lake.

The fragrance of incense slowly diffused outward…

The entire great hall was silent. Everyone’s gaze was quietly directed toward the dreamy figure. The splendid figure sat down in front of the zither…

“Ting” was heard as one of the zither’s strings vibrated. The sound slowly rang out as if it was from some distance away.

The sound of the zither seemed as if it was coming from outside. It was soft and delicate like some soft music sound, but it was capable of making all worries, sadness, and uncertainties in life disappear and become no more than dreams...

The zither's music rang out and diffused outward like smoke. It slowly flew up and gradually filled the entire great hall.

Chu Yang closed his eyes slightly; his mind unconsciously drowned in the wonderful sound. Before coming here, Chu Yang never imagined that a music melody could have such power. But right now, he believed.

With just a prelude, there was already limitless magical power to sway his spirit along.

Suddenly, a soft voice faintly came down from the stage, "This melody is called 'Reincarnation'!"

The zither's music suddenly disappeared, but still seemed to ring out from some distance. Within moments, even softer zither music sounded and slowly spread outward... But this time, the feeling was completely different!

Chu Yang felt as if he just appeared from nowhere and came into this world. An arm gently held him. Then he came to a snowscape... Every scene from the previous life appeared to him like so.

Boundless memories came and swept through Chu Yang's mind.

Reincarnation! This melody had unexpectedly brought Chu Yang through reincarnation once more...

Chapter 226: Reincarnation, lost love

The zither's music lingered. The sound was clearly soft and faint, but it awakened people's hearts like thunder. Each person unconsciously followed this music into a wondrous realm.

Chu Yang's heart was as calm as water; he quietly watched his life as if he was a third person. He watched heart-broken memories; he watched as pain broke his insides into pieces!

When he was a teenager, fire raged all over Beyond the Heavens Sect. Meng Chao Ran, in his white robe, fought with his long sword among the flames. His face seemed calm but hopeless at the same time. With one palm, he knocked Chu Yang out and buried his body underneath all the corpses. He had given Chu Yang a chance at life...

Leaving Beyond the Heavens Sect, he had no one to rely on. At first, he was a youth without any experience and trusted the wrong people. He almost lost his life and had to flee becoming the dust of life... Time and time again, people deceived him and hunted him. Time and time again, he had to find a way out from places of death. This gradually made him cruel, cold, and heartless...

He retreated deep into the mountains to cultivate. When he went into Iron Cloud, war and destruction was raging on...

Travelling all over Jiang Hu, he killed and robbed. Thus, he was on the cruel path to becoming a Revered Martial Artist. It was a bloody path, with countless corpses trailing behind him...

He was not a heartless person by nature. He was sickened for three days after killing the first person. But if he did not kill people, they would kill him! The world was vast, but there was no one with him. He was alone on a bloody path for survival...

Until that one fateful day, he discovered a purple bamboo forest. It brought back memories of his childhood so he lingered there.

Unexpectedly, he met a woman in red... What kind of woman is she? She is graceful, stunning, and fragile looking, but there is strength and arrogance hidden within; there is even a sense of sophistication and elegance.

Each of her movements carries a finesse...

She is like a heavenly being standing quietly in front of me...

He still remembered that conversation...

...

"... May I ask what your name is, miss?"

"My surname is... Mo, Mo Qing Wu..."

"Good, that is a very good name."

"Really?" Mo Qing Wu's beautiful eyes suddenly became melancholy, and she murmured, "My mother once said..."

"Said what?"

"My daughter's heart... Mo Qing Wu..."

"My daughter's heart... Mo Qing Wu..." At the time Chu Yang thought and said, "Your mother is truly a caring person..."

Qing Wu, with the surname Mo in front, gave it a completely opposite meaning. Her daughter's heart should not be weak like a gentle dance. If the heart was weak, you would also be weak, and people would betray you!

This was a name, but it was also Mo Qing Wu's mother's advice to her daughter!

"... What a coincidence that you are also here at this purple bamboo forest!"

"I like purple bamboo..." Mo Qing Wu smiled softly covering the melancholy in her heart, "Purple bamboo, the color I liked most as a child was... the color purple... It is truly unforgettable..."

"Really? Haha, me, too. As a child, I grew up in an area with

purple bamboos... Then, the people were gone, and the purple bamboos were also no longer there...”

The voices of the two were faint, but they both heard the yearning and sadness in each other’s voice. They were also able to sense the irreconcilable hatred in the heart of the other person... They also recognized that the other person was full of burden...

At the time, Chu Yang did not know. But now he had come to understand...

Mo Qing Wu liked purple bamboo because of her second brother’s purple jade flute...

“Brother Chu, you have come again...”

“Those times, it is all like a dream. The purple bamboo has been engraved in my heart... Not coming to see it, I feel as if something is missing in my heart...”

“Mm, me too...”

“Brother Chu, if you come here next time and coincidentally meet me...”

“Go on?”

“Ah... nothing...” Mo Qing Wu smiled...

Chu Yang closed his eyes; two different lifetimes separated by reincarnation. It was as if he could see Mo Qing Wu’s smile from that time once more. The purple bamboos swayed creating waves like a sea. Mo Qing Wu’s red outfit fluttered as she stood in the purple bamboo forest; her beauty was unmatched.

A smile without any sorrows, it carried a shyness along with a touch of sweetness...

Qing Wu... you know, it was that smile that conquered my heart!

Unfortunately, I did not know it...

“Qing Wu, are you here?”

“What a coincidence…”

“Umm, today is the Double Ninth Festival (TLN: 9/9). Qing Wu, will you drink with me?”

“Umm, sure.”

…

“Brother Chu… Chu Yang…”

“Mm…”

“Brother Chu Yang, do you think my dancing is beautiful?”

“I will have to see first…”

“Haha, today, we drink. And with the purple bamboos as witnesses, I will dance for you.”

At that time, Mo Qing Wu’s eyes were full of sweetness and joy as she looked at him as gently as the flowing water…

Her red clothes softly fluttered. And in that moment, Chu yang felt as if all of Nine Heavens was reduced to a dainty red. And that graceful figure was like a fairy flying on the moon…

“A gentle dance in the misty smoke; looking at purple bamboo in the deserted horizon; a lifetime, a dance, man’s enjoyment; a lifetime, a dance, a step in life!” Mo Qing Wu’s gentle singing seemed to echo at that moment…

The zither’s music slowly rose high and meandered around when suddenly…

The music peaked then suddenly fell. Everyone’s heart moved along with it!

And at this moment, Chu Yang’s burdened heart was violently shocked; it was as if fate was starting to be reversed…

…

“Chu Yang… don’t go…”

“I want to get revenge for my master, for my brothers; I have to go…”

“Chu Yang…”

“Chu Yang… Your heart is too cruel…”

“Chu Yang… Will you return?”

“… I do not know either…”

“Chu Yang, I finally found you. And you are still… like this? Go back with me, please? Can you go back with me?”

“…”

“Chu Yang… I am worried… I have been feeling very uneasy these days…”

“…”

“Chu Yang… your heart, is it really made of stone?”

“… My heart is long dead.” At that time, what Chu Yang thought about was the ruins of Beyond the Heavens Sect, the bodies on the ground, the deep sense of hatred… renouncing love, cultivating his martial arts, and revenge!

He never bothered to notice, or did not dare to look at, the heartbreak that was in Mo Qing Wu’s eyes…

Crushed, Mo Qing Wu turned and left…

Not long after, Chu Yang suddenly had an ominous sense that something bad had happened. Thinking about Mo Qing Wu, who had just left, Chu Yang felt even more uneasy. In the darkness of the night, he felt as if he could hear Mo Qing Wu calling him over and over…

“Chu Yang… save me…”

“Chu Yang… you are too cruel…”

“Chu Yang… I want to see you again…”

“Chu Yang… I miss you…”

With a flash, Chu Yang’s body became a rapidly moving shadow chasing after her. At the time, he also did not know why he gave chase nor what he was chasing…

But after a dozen miles or so, he discovered that Mo Qing Wu was ambushed and suffered grave injuries…

Chu Yang could only feel an explosion inside of himself…

He rushed toward them, and, almost without reason, killed everyone…

In her last moments, Mo Qing Wu lay in his arms with a look of happiness while in despair…

“Chu Yang… it has been a long time since you held me like this. I am very happy…”

“Don’t move… Let me see your injuries; let me see your injuries…”

“I feel no pain, no pain really…”

“Chu Yang… if there is another life, if I can still see you again, I hope you will give me a proper look and see that I am prettier than a sword…”

“Chu Yang, hold me tight, hold me tight… I, I want… to be held by you like this forever… Chu Yang, being able to die in your arms, I am very satisfied…”

“I do not regret… after all, I got to see you at the last moment.”

“If… there is another life…”

That person’s eyes were filled with hope and desire, but everything stopped at that very moment! Her loving gaze remained fixed on Chu Yang’s face, but it had lost its liveliness…

That loving gaze had become eternal…

Chu Yang let out a long sigh and discovered that the zither’s

music had stopped some time ago.

At this moment, in the great hall, no matter who they were, everyone was looking solemn, sighing, or in a daze without making the slightest of noise in a still state.

Gu Du Xing sat next to Chu Yang with moistened eyes. He was also remembering about the person who had to pay a dear price because of him... Gu Miao Ling.

Each person had his own encounter. This one melody had made Chu Yang experience the sorrow from his previous life once again, but what other people experienced were frustration, anger, guilt and love from this lifetime...

This one reincarnation melody was like a cleansing and purification of fate!

“What a beautiful melody...” Chu Yang sighed internally, “The zither master’s reputation is truly well-deserved. It’s just that this reincarnation melody is still lacking.”

Lacking was Chu Yang’s own judgement!

Chu Yang did not exactly understand music. In the previous life, Mo Qing Wu used to dance with many melodies old and new. So Chu Yang naturally gained some knowledge about music.

This one reincarnation melody, while Chu Yang was no musical genius, he was the only one who understood it! Because he was truly the only one... who experienced the taste of reincarnation!

When it came to reincarnation, there should at least be two lifetimes! Even then, that could barely be called reincarnation! But with this melody, Chu Yang only recalled his past life! He did not recall this lifetime at all!

When his mind was preparing to move to the next life, which was clearly possible, the zither’s music immediately halted right there.

Therefore, Chu Yang said that it was lacking!

The entire great hall was in silence. Only the large furnace in the middle of the great hall subtly cracking with glowing fire and exuding uninterrupted heat...

After a long time, they burst into thunderous applause...

The zither let out two sounds as if acknowledging the applause.

“Young master Chu, you may ask me three questions about music. If I cannot answer, I will eat dinner with young master Chu.” That faint voice came from the zither master who just played the melody.

Chu Yang laughed; he had restored composure back to his trembling heart in the blink of an eye, “Before the zither master, who would dare to talk about music? However, about that melody you just played, I have some questions I want to ask Miss Xiao Lu.”

“Oh?” There was an obvious trace of interest in Miss Xiao Lu’s voice.

“This reincarnation melody hit straight into the heart of everyone, whether they are poor or rich, good or bad! It is clear to see that Miss Xiao Lu is very successful in her craft, but...”

“But what?” Miss Xiao Lu asked.

“But this melody seems to be only half a melody! Miss Xiao Lu, why is this?” Chu Yang asked softly.

Behind the curtain, Miss Xiao Lu suddenly became quiet without making the slightest of sounds!

Chapter 227: Three questions to stir the leader

The moment Chu Yang said these words, Miss Xiao Lu seemed slightly stunned. She did not speak for a while.

The people below immediately broke into a big commotion!

“What hole did this country bumpkin crawl out from? Such beautiful zither music, and he dared to say that it is lacking? Incomplete?” A young man in white laughed mockingly, “Do you understand anything?”

“Yes, whether it is artistic conception or the length of this melody, it is a complete melody!” Lian Fan Lei sneered as he looked at the stupid country bumpkin and said eloquently, “This Brother Chu, you probably have never heard such a wonderful melody before, right? What a country bumpkin. Funeral music is probably the only eternal masterpiece to you, right?”

“Hahaha…” A group of people immediately burst out laughing.

“This guy is truly a frog at the bottom of a well. How many masterpieces could he have heard?” The group became even louder with unbridled laughter.

“Cheng!” The zither suddenly rang out. The entire great hall became quiet once again. The zither sounded fierce and determined! Even those who did not understand music could sense that Miss Xiao Lu was angry!

This country bumpkin was disrespectful and has angered the beauty!

Everyone was feeling a bit of schadenfreude seeing somebody else in trouble.

“This melody…” Within everyone waiting eagerly, Miss Xiao Lu slowly opened her mouth, “… is indeed incomplete! This is because

I came to this melody during a dream. It was surreal and faint. Someone told me that this was my past life…”

“After I woke up, I immediate wrote this melody. But because I had abruptly awoken from the dream, when I got to the last part, I found that I could not go any further. Thus, this melody is only half a melody! I brooded over this for a long time… But what I am curious to know is how young master Chu was able to discern this?”

This melody was truly incomplete! It was only half a melody!

These words were like thunder to the ears of those young masters. They became dizzy and dumbfounded as they looked at each other!

They could not imagine that Miss Xiao Lu would agree with the judgment of that country bumpkin!

Furthermore, they were just mocking and laughing at him when Miss Xiao Lu said this. This was tantamount to a big slap on their faces!

Especially Lian Fan Lei. This person was a scholar; he was even proficient when it came to music. At this moment, his face was burning up, and he was feeling humiliated.

“How could I discern this… haha, I just did!” Chu Yang smiled lightly.

Miss Xiao Wu pondered for a moment and said, “If that is the case, then we are done with the first question. Brother Chu, please ask the second question.”

“The second issue also has to do with the incompleteness of this melody!” Chu Yang said confidently.

The moment he said this, the entire great hall became restless. Everyone had heard this melody, and it was simply perfect! And yet this guy repeatedly said that it was incomplete… Could he have some mental issues?

But after the last smack, everyone did not voice their doubts and waited for him to continue.

“Oh? Please clarify.” Miss Xiao Lu’s tone was very humble. This was not out of pretense, but a sincere desire to learn. This could be clearly heard by everyone.

“Umm, it has always been the case that good music were designed to show joy without being crude and to show sadness without injuries. But a person’s life, no matter how difficult, would always have joys and sorrows, ups and downs!”

Chu Yang said casually, “No matter how lowly a person’s life is and how difficult it is, he also has been through happiness and joy. Even if it lasted only for the blink of an eye! And a nobility, no matter how powerful, his life also has been through difficulties! There is no exception to this!”

Behind the curtain, Miss Xiao Lu gently nodded as she contemplated.

“Your melody was captivating and engaging! But it only demonstrated sadness. Sadness without injuries, this was achieved... But if it is reincarnation, it must have joy and happiness, too! Your melody missed this point! And without this, it does not carry the meaning of reincarnation!”

Chu Yang said softly, “In my humble opinion, this melody should be changed! What does Miss Xiao Lu think?”

“Yes.” Miss Xiao Lu no longer hesitated this time; she directly answered with praise, “Young master Chu’s understanding of music is eye-opening to Xiao Lu! Would you mind staying and discuss with Xiao Lu on how to improve this melody?”

The moment these words were spoken, a look of jealousy flashed from Lian Fan Lei’s eyes!

Staying to discuss on how to improve... How can such improvements be done in in a day or two? If they were to continue

discussing... the two will discuss right into bed... Wouldn't they be putting horns on me?

Ah, this green punk is barely starting out and he is already planning to put horns on me...

"Let's put aside that discussion for now. I want to talk about the third issue." Chu Yang said casually.

"Young master Chu, please speak!" Miss Xiao Lu's tone had become respectful.

She was already impressed with this young master after hearing two issues!

This accomplishment was definitely not a simple one!

"It was said that the zither music comes from the hand, the hand is connected to the mind, and in the mind... there is the soul." Chu Yang said, "Miss Xiao Lu's zither music has total dedication and is exceptionally skilled. When it comes to zithers, you are number one of all times! You are at the peak of your field, and there are surely no one more perfect at it than you!"

"But it is missing soul, right?" Miss Xiao Lu softly sighed.

"Yes!" Chu Yang said.

After long silence, the sound of the zither was heard from behind the curtain. It was as if Miss Xiao Lu's mind had wandered off, and her fingers touched the zither unconsciously...

"Young master Chu, please come in for tea. Xiao Lu wants to speak with you alone!" After thinking for a long time, Miss Xiao Lu softly delegated her orders.

"Yes!" A pretty maid next to her replied.

Chu Yang stood up and said casually, "You guys wait here for me. In any case, you won't be too lonely." Then he glanced at the group of angry young masters and smiled.

This was a contemptuous smile.

In this Iron Cloud Citadel, even Tie Bu Tian could be only be angry at King of Hell Chu, let alone some little dandy young masters. Chu Yang did not even care about them. If it were not for the fact that they were of some use to him, Chu Yang would not have even bothered to spare them a look!

As for Lian Fan Lei... Lian Fan Lei was just a fart! No, in Chu Yang's eyes, he was less than a fart. A fart at least had some smell... This guy could only have a little smell if he was dead...

"Rest assured, I will be very restrained." Gu Du Xing smiled coldly and said, "I will not spoil your plans." He knew that if Chu Yang deliberately said so, he would surely have some hidden agenda. And he had discovered that, no matter what he did, he and Chu Yang were related to each other and were part of a greater picture!

Since he met Chu Yang, he never saw Chu Yang do anything carelessly! Each action had meaning! Gu Du Xing would, of course, not carelessly wreck Chu Yang's plans.

Therefore, even if the two idiotic youths, Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo, were here, Gu Du Xing would leave Chu Yang assured!

"That's good then!" Chu Yang slowly walked behind the young lady in white. He went in at an unhurried pace.

He could hear Luo Ke Di almost yelling in excitement from behind him, "Hey, hey, now that the music is done. There are so many beautiful ladies; why don't everyone strip while we sing..."

Chu Yang staggered and almost fell to the ground.

Then there were scolding replies.

"Pig!"

"This pig!"

"You are a pig!"

These words came out of Gu Du Xing, Ji Mo, and Rui Bu Tong's

mouths. Right after, there were loud bangs, and Luo Ke Di cried out pitifully. Then Ji Mo said sweetly, “Okay, beautiful sisters, you don’t need to be angry anymore. I have helped you teach him a lesson. Haha, this lecherous thing is simply intolerable! Rest assured, if he speaks again, I will beat him again. Oh, beautiful ladies, I will be your escort no matter what. Here, here, each of you come and give me a kiss, here, here...”

Imagining the look of Ji Mo’s mouth, Chu Yang two legs quickly increased speed. He immediately turned the corner and could no longer hear anything else. At this moment, he finally raised his arm to wipe away his sweat.

Big Brother Chu regretted bringing these two. Security was not a concern... but these two really made him lose face...

“Young master Chu, please...” When they arrived at an elegant area, the young lady bowed and said, “Miss Xiao Lu is waiting inside.”

Chu Yang nodded and casually judged the entire space. He saw that this area was at the top of three floors; there were buildings surrounding it in all directions. It was well protected in all sides without any dead corners!

This was a most brilliant protective layout!

“Truly remarkable!” Chu Yang knocked on the door.

“Young master Chu, please come in!” A soft voice emitted from inside.

“Thank you!” Chu Yang pushed open the door and placed one foot in. He paused and put the other foot in as well. With his whole body in the room, he stood at the door and waited quietly.

When he stepped in, Chu Yang could clearly sense an aggressive aura locking on him without the least bit of restraint. This careless aura would have been able to kill him in one shot even if the emperor and a million guards were there!

It did not seem to care the least bit about any consequences!

Such an aura reminded Chu Yang of Gu Du Xing from the previous life! In his previous life, the only time he ever saw Gu Du Xing, there was an a fierce, murderous aura on this lone swordsman unlike anything Chu Yang had ever encountered before!

At that time, Gu Du Xing was a King level master! At the peak of ninth grade!

A King level, lone swordsman!

Not long after that encounter, there was news that Gu Du Xing had broken through Emperor level!

Who is this person? Why does he have such a powerful aura?

At this moment, Chu Yang thought of the strange encounter that Diwu Qing Rou's Golden Horse Riders Department had at the House of Exceptional Beauties in the previous life! Everything became crystal clear. There was such a powerful person here!

Chapter 228: Minister Chu? Big Brother Chu!

After a while, that aura finally dissipated. Chu Yang's countenance remained unchanged as he smiled and looked at Miss Xiao Lu sitting in front of him, "May I come in?"

"How embarrassing. Young master Chu, this is my bodyguard. He is a bit overprotective... Haha, please come in. Please sit down!" Miss Xiao Lu stood up and acted very apologetic.

This Miss Xiao Lu's figure was relatively beautiful. Her face was just fine, but not among the ranks of peerless beauties. But her body exuded a strange calming temperament that made anyone who saw her immediately feel at peace.

In her every move, the way she spoke, or when she batted her lashes, they were all filled with a gentle aura. Everyone who saw her would surely have the same first impression!

Gentle!

Truly gentle!

"Miss Xiao Lu is truly an extraordinary woman! You are absolutely worthy of being a zither master!" Chu Yang's gaze was calm with praiseful intentions. His countenance was serious without any frivolousness. He was truly praising from the bottom of his heart and not giving any appearance of flattery.

At this discussion, too much arrogance would lead to failure! Too much flattery would also lead to failure!

The best method was to just say what was right and not be arrogant or fawning!

"Minister Chu is still Minister Chu!" Miss Xiao Lu laughed meaningfully.

"You are truly skilled!" Chu Yang did not show any surprise.

With the power of the House of Exceptional Beauties, it would have been strange if they did not know his identity.

Just like going head to head with Diwu Qing Rou, Chu Yang's web of deception could fool normal people, but he knew that he definitely could not fool Diwu Qing Rou.

His advantage was distance!

The distance was too great! Diwu Qing Rou could not directly deal with Chu Yang himself. If Diwu Qing Rou was as close to him as the House of Exceptional Beauties was, Chu Yang had absolute faith that he would have become a corpse a long time ago even if he had ten thousand lives!

"For the minister to come here, there must be something important." Miss Xiao Wu poured the tea and said softly, "But, regardless of what it might be, let us talk about music first."

She smiled and said, "The three issues the minister brought up spoke directly to the longing in my heart. If the minister cannot help me solve them, I am afraid nothing else could be done."

Chu Yang laughed and said, "I have already expected this. I just never imagined a gentle young lady like you could be so powerful!"

Miss Xiao Lu chuckled, "Even if I was more powerful... I cannot compare to the fierce King of Hell Chu."

"Haha..." Chu Yang also laughed.

"May I ask; how can the first issue be solved?" When it came to this, Miss Xiao Lu was somewhat impatient, "This issue of half a melody, how can I write the remaining half?"

"This issue is easy to solve, but it is also difficult! In my personal opinion, it would be a good thing if Miss Xiao Lu never could write the other half." Chu Yang frowned and said cautiously.

"Oh? Why is that?" Miss Xiao Lu's beautiful brows pinched together as she asked in puzzlement.

“What is reincarnation? From birth to death and then from death to birth again, that is considered one reincarnation!” Chu Yang guardedly, “Reincarnation is death! Miss, you…”

“I have never been dead…” Miss Xiao Lu was lost in thought, “If I have never been dead, then I could never write a complete reincarnation melody! Because, in the end, I do not know what that feels like… And so, I could not create such a thing. But… if I died… Haha, how can I write it after I am dead?”

“Therefore, this reincarnation melody could never be complete?” Deep in Miss Xiao Lu’s eyes, a trace of defiance shined through.

“Life and death… does not have to be experienced only with death…” Chu Yang said softly. The moment he said this, the aggressive aura from earlier showed once more. Within moments, Chu Yang could feel his mouth and nose freeze, and he was unable to talk or breathe.

That person standing in the shadow clearly did not want him to say this!

A light flashed in Miss Xiao Lu’s eyes; seeming to understand something, she said, “If that is the case, reincarnation… is not required! Minister Chu, let us discuss the second issue.”

That aggressive aura immediately disappeared.

Chu Yang laughed internally. This Miss Xiao Lu is extremely intelligent. Even though I was not done speaking, she understood my meaning. That person tried to stop me, but he was one step behind.

While externally, Miss Xiao Lu sounded as if she was dismissing that issue, her eyes told Chu Yang that she would never abandon such an endeavor!

This was an extreme form of fanaticism for music!

“The second issue is the emotion in the music.” Miss Xiao Lu frowned, “The more I think about it, the more I feel that Minister

Chu's words were... not exactly right."

"Oh?"

"Music is simply an expression of one kind of emotion. If it is a sad melody, adding a little happiness into it would essentially be adding sour vinegar to a jug of good wine! The integrity of the music would be lost... It would be likewise for a happy melody." Miss Xiao Lu said with a frown.

"Definitely not! Miss Xiao Lu is one hundred percent wrong on this." Chu Yang said gravely.

"Oh? How am I one hundred percent wrong?" Miss Xiao Lu's beautiful brows pinched together.

"A melody that only expresses one mood is mediocre!" Chu Yang smiled as he spoke Mo Qing Wu's reasoning from the previous life.

Mo Qing Wu was not a dancer or a singer, but her musical abilities were second to none! On the contrary, because Mo Qing Wu's life was full of twists and turns and sorrow, her perception of life was especially deep.

Therefore, when it came to music, she was especially talented.

And this reasoning was something that Mo Qing Wu had pondered for a long time before suddenly having an epiphany. While Miss Xiao Wu was the zither master, she was still young so how could she have undergone the sufferings that Mo Qing Wu had?

"A melody is not for expressing a kind of mood; it is another method for telling a story! And I think that the audience should feel the joyful and sorrowful emotions in that story as they listen to it."

Chu Yang said quietly, "You do not need to open your mouth to speak or give any sort of introduction about that story. And yet, you are able to make anyone who listens to the melody feel the emotions of uniting, parting, anger, pain, death..."

“Allowing the listeners to hear the whole story through their own interpretations!”

Miss Xiao Lu sat with a serious countenance as she thought about each sentence Chu Yang just spoke, word by word. This kind of respectful demeanor was one that only appeared when the zither master sat opposite of her own teacher.

But at this moment, Miss Xiao Lu could sense that the Minister Chu sitting in front of her was younger than her. And yet he was deserving of such a treatment!

While his words seemed incredible at first, after careful considerations, they were infinitely mysterious. In order to achieve the realm he described, how much more effort would I have to put in?

“But each word has to come from the heart, and each heart is different. How can I express the story that I want to tell?”

“Of course there is a difference from person to person. Different people have different lives and different states of mind! A story written by one person could be sad, inspirational by another, or humorous by someone else. It could even change again after that...”

Chu Yang said softly, “There are also people who can make the story dull, also people who would write in such a way that makes others think, and also those who could make it sound magnificent...”

“You should note that stories in this world might come in different forms, but essentially remain the same!” Chu Yang said casually, “An old story, while written ten thousand times, would still essentially... be an old story. Unchanged!”

“I think I understand a little...” Miss Xiao Lu mused and nodded lightly.

“At the peak of musical mastery, you can control people’s

emotions. If you want people to cry, they will cry! If you want people to smile, they will unconsciously smile. All sorts of changes, completely up to you!"

"While you are currently called the zither master, the gap between you and such a realm is..." Chu Yang let out a long sigh and said, "... very large... You cannot reach it yet!"

"Yes!" Miss Xiao Lu respectfully poured tea for Chu Yang, "Big Brother Chu, please enlighten me more."

Ah, from Minister Chu to Big Brother Chu, this was an extremely large change. It was a fundamental change in attitude that showed that this zither master was impressed.

"No need to be so formal. I also hope that I can leave a mark on the path to the top of a talented zither master." Chu Yang said casually, "You should know that it is a great honor for me!"

Miss Xiao Lu chuckled softly, "Big Brother Chu, I know you are... clearly flattering me... but it still makes me feel a little smug."

Chu Yang laughed, and seemed to have a sudden thought, "Could it be... that you still need compliments from people now?"

The two people looked at each other and smiled knowingly.

"Big Brother Chu seems to have such a profound understanding about music." Miss Xiao Lu smiled and said, "I wonder if this little sister could have the fortune of listening to Big Brother Chu play."

Chu Yang immediately became panicky. He wiped off his sweat and smiled, "Ah Lu, you have poked at my pain. This big brother is so embarrassed. I am just telling you some of my reasoning; if you put me on stage... cough cough, you should feel sorry for your zither..."

"Haha..." Miss Xiao Lu laughed. Chu Yang was essentially taking her on as his little sister. (TLN: In Jiang Hu, all close friends are brothers and sisters... but you already know that.) Plus, he had unconsciously called her Ah Lu. Only people who were close to

each other addressed each other that way. Therefore, he had unintentionally decreased the distance between the two of them.

Moreover, not only did Miss Xiao Lu did not object to this, she responded with his embarrassed reaction amicably.

“If so, then I will not trouble Big Brother Chu Yang any further.” Miss Xiao Lu rolled her eyes and smiled.

The moment he heard the words Big Brother Chu Yang, he immediately thought about Mo Qing Wu. And thinking about Mo Qing Wu’s lovable figure, Big Brother Chu Yang could not help but smile warmly and lovingly, “Good little sister.”

Chapter 229: We are Bamboo people

At this moment, a sincere feeling suddenly rose from the bottom of Miss Xiao Lu's heart! It was as if this man in front of her was indeed her martial brother. No matter what she did, he would still love her and indulge her...

This kind of feeling was not related to a man and woman's love; it was more like that of flesh and blood relations.

For a time, her gaze became much warmer.

"Brother Chu Yang, what about the third issue?" As she was saying these words, even Miss Xiao Lu, herself, recognized that her voice had a trace of coyness.

"Ah, the third issue... There must be good tea... good wine... and... Hahaha..." At this moment, Chu Yang immediately shifted his attitude and swung his legs, "This issue is really difficult to solve..."

Chu Yang made himself at home and sounded really demanding.

If Minister Chu had acted like this in the beginning, Miss Xiao Lu would have definitely kicked him out. But at this time, a little joking around made Miss Xiao Lu roll her eyes and give him a glare. She laughed and said, "Get out."

"Haha... I heard that there is good wine and good food here... there is also good tea... and... Hahaha." Chu Yang narrowed his eyes and said cynically, "I have to say, little miss. You want to use your clever mouth to pry out all of the cards in hands? This is too skilled."

"Okay, okay." Miss Xiao Lu said with a helpless tone and smiled, "Uncle Chu, I will wait on you hand and foot..."

"Stop! Please don't!" Chu Yang waved his arms in horror, "I... I... I still don't want a wife yet..."

“Annoying! You only think of enjoying yourself!” Miss Xiao Lu stomped angrily and walked out sulking. After two steps, she turned and said, “Wait here, I am going to brew good tea for you. And while am at it, I will get the young master some food, okay?”

“That’s more like it!” Chu Yang stuck his nose in the air looking arrogant.

The two smiled harmoniously!

Miss Xiao Lu laughed; she had not been so happy in a very long time. With a pretentious pout she sighed, “You are younger than me, but you are acting like my big brother... You are too shameless.”

She walked out.

After not too long, tea and snacks successively came in. The food was placed on eight delicate plates alongside a small jug of fine wine. Chu Yang looked at them hungrily. He ate and drank like the wind without showing a bit of courtesy.

Miss Xiao Lu did not even have the chance to get chopsticks, and the contents on the table had already become chaotic. She looked up to see Minister Chu with chopsticks in one hand and a wine jug on the other. But he tossed his chopsticks aside right away and directly poured a plate of meat in his mouth. The entire wine jug was also so emptied without even a drop left. Then he took the tea pot and chugged it directly. He ate like a madman!

With a woah, he wiped his mouth and sighed with satisfaction, “This was indeed enjoyable... I did not eat breakfast in anticipation of this meal. It was worth it...”

Miss Xiao Lu looked at the eight empty dishes in front of her eyes; they could not have been cleaner if they were carefully washed. She was stunned and dumbfounded!

At this time, she had not even moved the chopsticks in her hand yet!

In other words, before she had a chance to eat anything, the wine and food were gone; even the tea, there were only leaves left…

This speed…

“I say, Minister Chu, does His Majesty feed you at all?” Miss Xiao Lu cried out in bewilderment.

“How could an official’s meal compare to little sister’s food?” Chu Yang sighed, “It seems that I must come here often from now on. In any case, I am an honored guest now.”

“Don’t… Please don’t. If you come here often, our House of Exceptional Beauties will be forced to close down because of your eating…” Miss Xiao Lu raised her hands in surrender.

The two laughed as if they have known each other for decades.

“You’re bullying a weak person. Oh well, since I ate and drank, just taking off would be somewhat wrong.” Chu Yang sighed and lamented, “This third issue…”

“Oh?”

“The third issue… Ah Lu, why don’t you play me a happy reunion melody?” Chu Yang asked with a smile.

“Nothing that can’t be done.” Miss Xiao Lu happily jumped up. With a smiling face, she walked to the zither.

“Listen well.” For some reason, her voice sounded as if she was showing off in front of her big brother.

“Um.”

The zither cheerfully rang out; it was indeed a “happy reunion!”

The zither’s music sounded smooth and was filled with happy thoughts. It was as if two close friends had not seen each other for many years and had many things to say; they were so overjoyed, they could not contain themselves.

In the process of playing, Miss Xiao Lu even closed her eyes. With

a sweet smile on her face, she completely let herself go. Her hands danced nimbly, her body gently swayed with the music...

The melody was over...

“Good happy reunion melody!” Chu Yang clapped with praise.

“Well?” Miss Xiao Lu asked arrogantly.

“Um, extraordinarily good! That was the best melody I have ever heard!” Chu Yang smiled thoughtfully, “Within this melody, there is the zither’s music, technique, feelings, and soul! It is especially complete!”

He laughed and said, “Little miss, do you now know what the soul of music is?”

Miss Xiao Lu was caught off-guard. She closed her eyes as she recalled everything. Then she said with a touch of enlightenment, “So that’s it...”

“You are a master musician; you can put your soul into the music. For an ordinary musician, this would be the pinnacle of their skill! But for a zither master like yourself, it is still not enough!” Chu Yang said slowly, “Ah Lu, first, you must be able to move your own emotion...”

“I understand!” Miss Xiao Lu jumped joyfully. Her eyes glowed with excitement as she spoke, “Brother Chu Yang, thank you!”

“Ah, I will accept this gratitude.” Chu Yang laughed, “You must remember to put yourself into whatever state even if it is different from your own. You must immerse yourself deeply with your heart and your soul; otherwise, it could not be done!”

“Total immersion; you are the zither!”

“Yes, total immersion; I am the zither!” Miss Xiao Lu’s eyes brightened.

“The step after total immersion...” Chu Yang slowly said word by word, “After you make it past this stage, we’ll talk about it... It is

an entirely different state…”

“Past…” Miss Xiao Lu was completely stunned.

“Whether it is zither arts or martial arts, there is no end for any field of study!” Chu Yang said slowly, “In this life, there is never a true peak!”

“There is never a true peak…” Miss Xiao Lu carefully noted these words; she was completely immersed in this.

After a long time, Miss Xiao Lu finally recovered and sat down gently. With her composure back, she said softly, “Brother Chu Yang, why did you come to House of Exceptional Beauties today?”

Chu Yang nodded and said casually, “That’s right; I really do have something I want a little help from you for.”

“You did a great favor for me!” Miss Xiao Lu said calmly, “Whatever you need help with, you just have to tell me.”

“No!” Chu Yang shook his head, “I never helped you! With your intelligence, you would realize it sooner or later.” Chu Yang raised his hand and stopped Miss Xiao Lu from speaking. He said seriously, “And even if I did help you, I would not use it in exchange for a favor.”

“If I had helped you for that, such an exchange would be an insult to music! It would also be insulting to myself!” Chu Yang’s countenance showed a trace of dismay as he said slowly, “Besides, this was the point of view of the closest person to me; it was not my own. She is no longer in this world… Therefore, I want to use it to shake the world and put it above all!”

“In this aspect, it is you who is helping me!” Chu Yang said sadly.

Miss Xiao Lu was visibly moved. She could recognize the helplessness and sadness in his emotion. In fact, it made her sympathetic as well!

She wholeheartedly believed that these were not lies! No one

could lie like that!

“This friend of yours…”

“… the most important person in my life…” Chu Yang smiled bitterly, “I hope that this bit of reasoning can help you and lead you to that top reigning throne! It is also, in a way… fulfilling my own wish!”

“As for her name.” Chu Yang muttered, “It must remain in my heart.”

Miss Xiao Lu looked at Chu Yang deeply; then she smiled and said, “I will definitely accomplish it!” Her tone was determined and decisive; it was as if she had made an agreement with him.

“Thank you!” Chu Yang said sincerely.

“Haha… why don’t you tell me.” Miss Xiao Lu smiled, “What is it that you want my help with? Let me see if I could help you.”

“Umm, you will be going to the center of the continent in June of next year, right?”

“Yes.”

“Perhaps, I will need your help at that time. But you need to start preparing now.” Chu Yang slowly said, “At that time, we will meet in the middle of the continent. I need you to create a few identities for us to use then.”

“Not a problem!” Miss Xiao Lu said with certainty, “While we cannot join you in the fight for Lower Three Heavens, giving you a cover would be easy! Even if Diwu Qing Rou learns of this, he would not dare to do anything to us.”

Chu Yang had just opened his mouth, and she already knew what he planned to do.

“Thank you!” Chu Yang said seriously. When it came to matters of the state, things could not be done carelessly. The support of the House of Exceptional Beauties was the difference between the

success and failure of this mission.

“No thanks is needed!” Miss Xiao Lu said calmly, but then she smiled and added, “I am also not doing any sort of exchange.”

“Haha.” Chu Yang laughed. He unconsciously pointed at her nose, “This little girl.”

Miss Xiao Lu revealed a smile full of warmth. She felt as if she did have a big brother who was watching over her; it was a feeling of extreme happiness.

“Umm, I still don’t know your full name.” Chu Yang scratched his head in distress, “This big brother is really incompetent. He does not even know his little sister’s name. What a shame…”

“Ha, you are making mischief again…” Miss Xiao Lu smiled happily, “My name is Jun Lu Lu! You must remember it well!”

“Jun Lu Lu… ah, a very good name.”

“We are Bamboo people… Brother Chu Yang, do you know of the Bamboo people?” Miss Xiao Lu tilted her head and smiled.

“Huh?” Chu Yang was immediately shocked!

Chapter 230: You are not worthy

“Green bamboo, master of the universe, refined monarch, self-sustaining cherished bamboos; with one move of the bamboo, dragons take to the clouds and tigers move like the wind; when the bamboo is angry, the world is turned upside down!”

In shock, Chu Yang took in a breath of cold air and said, “So… you are all people of Jun Xi Zhu!”

He Mo (Black Devil) An Zhu (Dark Bamboo) Gu Du Ke (Lone Traveler)!* Dark Bamboo! Jun Xi Zhu (Cherished Bamboo Monarch)! This mysterious woman is the leader that oversaw all of the dark forces in Middle Three Heavens! These are people of Jun Xi Zhu!

While Chu Yang had high evaluation of the House of Exceptional Beauties’ origin, he never imagined that they were Dark Bamboo people!

How big was Middle Three Heavens? Chu Yang did not know. But he knew that even if it was smaller than Lower Three Heavens, it was not much smaller! Plus, given the order of things, Middle Three Heavens, compared to Lower Three Heavens, should be bigger!

In Middle Three Heavens, each great clan was a separate group. These clans were many, but the dark factions were also countless! They roared in all directions and were everywhere. It could be said that Middle Three Heavens was a chaotic place, a true Jiang Hu!

But, it also had its own rules for living!

The clans divided into territories and did not encroach on each other. They also had their own allies. While the dark factions were defiant, the also had their own territories. And all of the dark factions in Middle Three Heavens share the same leader; that was Bamboo Monarch League (Jun Zhu League)!

The Bamboo Monarch League, homonym of “Sovereign League,” was none other than Dark Bamboo!

If orders came from the Bamboo Monarch, no dark faction would dare to disrespect! This was a monstrous force!

In term of martial experts, the skill level was mixed! But in term of manpower, it was essentially a sea of people!

Chu Yang still remembered from the previous life. For some unknown reason, two great clans of Middle Three Heavens provoked Jun Xi Zhu. As a result, the Bamboo Monarch sent out an order, and all of the dark factions in the radius of several thousand miles rushed in like a tidal wave. The two great clans could only hold on for seven days before dissipating like smoke!

Such terrifying power!

Chu Yang finally understood why the House of Exceptional Beauties needed so much worldly gold and silver... These things that were not important to the great clans were much needed by the dark factions!

“Oh? Brother Chu Yang, you also know of my elder sister’s name?” Jun Lu Lu was a little surprised. She had thought that her elder sister never appeared at Lower Three Heavens so Chu Yang should not have known her. She never imagined that he would immediately utter her name!

Moreover, the verses of Monarch Bamboo League just came out last year, but Chu Yang read it fluently! At the moment, she could not help but be surprised! She was starting to question Chu Yang’s background.

“With such a great strength, such grandeur... how could I not know?” Chu Yang let out a sigh. From Jun Lu Lu’s words, he knew that Jun Xi Zhu was currently already holding power in Monarch Bamboo League.

Chu Yang never thought that it would happen so early.

He originally thought that since that person became famous around the same time as Gu Du Xing and the others, her age would be about the same. But it seemed that this boss of Monarch Bamboo League was a little older than he imagined.

Thinking back, he thought to himself: People of Middle Three Heavens only needed to reach Revered level then they would generally have longevity. People from a century before achieving fame at the same time with people from a century after... was not exactly strange...

At that very moment, a maid ran in and said in alarm, “Miss, miss, something bad has happened. There has been a fight... Friends of this young master Chu and friends of young master Lian...”

“Why?”

“Because... because young master Lian’s people continued to provoke them.” The maid stuttered.

“Oh?” Jun Lu Lu’s countenance became strange.

With the ferocious fame of King of Hell Chu in Iron Cloud Citadel, the officials would burn incense to thank him for not bothering with them. And yet, these people dared to mess with King of Hell Chu first?

This is too strange. Could it be that Lian Fan Lei’s brain is actually made of feces?

“Ah Lu, it seems that we will not be able to eat dinner.” Chu Yang smiled.

“You still want to eat?” Jun Lu Lu rolled her eyes and said, “What you ate earlier was enough to hold you over for three days!” Chu Yang laughed as he turned and walked out.

...

As it turned out, since Chu Yang went in, Lian Fan Lei and

company said many annoying words out of jealousy. Under Gu Du Xing's control, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di pretended that they did not hear anything.

To the four of them, punks like Lian Fan Lei were not worth any attention. A hundred families like that of Lian Fan Lei were not worthy of their anger!

In the words of Ji Mo, "Killing you myself?! Isn't this giving you too much face?"

Lian Fan Lei's people were feeling delighted with their profanity. But after a while, their opponents did not reply at all so they lost their interest and stopped attacking.

This was the House of Exceptional Beauties, who would dare to do something rash?

They then started to drink tea and chit chat. But their topic unexpectedly turned toward none other than King of Hell Chu.

Lian Fan Lei shamelessly boasted, "What is King of Hell Chu? Haha, I think he is nothing. What superior intellect? Who couldn't do those little things he did?"

During this period, it seemed that King of Hell Chu was out of favor with the emperor so Lian Fan Lei said these words blatantly.

One of the young men among them said cautiously, "You cannot say that. Just the fact that King of Hell Chu used his own intellect to capture so many spies is already admirable enough."

"Intellect? Bah!" Lian Fan Lei laughed, "There was the censor with the surname Li. Haha, he had been taking bribes and treating people like dirt. Who didn't know about this? What was there to investigate? He should just have been dealt with!"

"Plus, there was that vice minister with the surname Wang. He was exchanging communications with Great Zhao for many years. Who didn't know about such a thing? Yet King of Hell Chu actually got the credit... In my opinion, King of Hell Chu is simply

brainless!”

“There were also those other people who spied for Great Zhao. This didn’t need to be investigated by anyone. And yet you say that King of Hell Chu’s intellect reaches the heavens? In my opinion, King of Hell Chu is an idiot!”

…

“Hahaha…” Lian Fan Lei’s spit flew everywhere as he had his discussion. Suddenly, a loud laughter that seemed to have broken out from great suppression was heard. Turning his head around, he saw Ji Mo clutching his stomach and laughing with tears and snot on his face.

“Hahaha… I never expected…” Ji Mo laughed like crazy and said, “Everyone said that Lower Three Heavens was filled with idiots. I still cannot believe there are actually people with such brain damage… I am truly…”

“Have some civility!” Gu Du Xing almost lost control, but he rebuked with a serious face.

“I can’t control myself… I can’t be civil…” Ji Mo held his stomach; his face twisted in pain, “Second brother, I have met many people with brain damage, but this is the first time in my life I meet somebody with brain damage who is so arrogant.”

“Insolent!” Lian Fan Lei’s white face had finally turned red as he said angrily, “Punk… you are talking about me?”

“I… He just became smart in the blink of an eye! He could understand what I said!” Ji Mo was stunned, “Such intelligence, I am really impressed!”

Lian Fan Lei’s countenance became dark, “Sir, even if you want to insult someone, you must have a reason… if you don’t have a reason, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

“Reason… haha…” Ji Mo laughed, “Young master Lian, do you know how funny it is that you are just comfortably sitting here and

judging King of Hell Chu? What you said were all written on imperial announcements... And yet you claimed that you already knew it ahead of time?

“You are an idiot and you still bad-mouth other people! What gives you the right to do that? You use evidence that other people found and placed on notices everywhere. And you bad-mouth them with that? Who is the idiot here? Do you think that needs to be said?”

“Those who have been caught already lost their heads. All the evidence of their crimes are already announced to the public. Aren’t you so smart?” Ji Mo mercilessly ridiculed him, “This is flawed; that is flawed. You are truly wise! Why don’t you try to use your little rotten brain and see if you could find all that evidence if it was you? You can only use other people’s work and fart here! What about Tie Bu Tian? Tie Bu Tian is called the number one talent of Iron Cloud Citadel. But before King of Hell Chu came along, what did he do to those spies? Are you smarter than Tie Bu Tian? You said you are so talented, could it be than Tie Bu Tian is not as smart as you? Is Tie Bu Tian that dumb?”

Lian Fan Lei’s face was completely flushed. He was extremely angry, but he kept his composure. How would he dare to say that he was smarter than Tie Bu Tian in front of everyone? This was the reigning emperor!

“Who are you?” Lian Fan Lei asked sternly.

“Who am I? You are not worthy enough to know!” Ji Mo let out a loud laugh, “The type of SOBs who take credit for other people’s work and arrogantly attack the original is especially not worthy!”

Hearing this, if he could still maintain his composure, Lian Fan Lei would be a saint! He no longer care what the House of Exceptional Beauties, and screamed out, “Fight! Beat him up! I will take responsibility if he dies!”

“Fight?” Ji Mo folded his arms in front of his chest and smiled

condescendingly, “You dare to beat up people as you please? Aren’t you afraid of Iron Cloud Nation’s laws?”

“Laws? In this place, I am the law!” Lian Fan Lei roared angrily. He pointed and yelled, “Fight! Beat him up! Beat him up!”

The bodyguards behind him immediately stepped. The guards of the other young masters also did no less! The whole group rolled up their sleeves and rushed forth!

“Stop!” A cold voice rang out, “Anyone who makes a move at House of Exceptional Beauties will die!”

These thundering words shook the furnace in the middle of the great hall! Ashes and soot flew in all directions.

“Wait until we are outside, I will deal nicely with you!” Lian Fan Lei said fiercely, “Punk, this young master will teach you what regret is! You will know what end a person who offends me will come to!”

“Yeah yeah… I am so scared!” Ji Mo hugged his chest like a young lady who just met a wolf. He even gave a flirtatious wink, “You make me feel so scared. I am so scared… I am too scared…”

Lian Fan Lei was boiling with anger!

At this very moment, Chu Yang just walked downstairs. He said casually, “You guys are all adults. Why bother with trash? Let’s go!”

After he was done speaking, he walked straight out the door without even taking a glance at Lian Fan Lei!

“Let’s go!” Lian Fan Lei waved his arm and the other dandy young masters immediately ran after with their bodyguards like a swarm of bees. But after they were out of the House of Exceptional Beauties, they looked around and could not help but be dumbfounded. The five young men who just left had unexpectedly disappeared… without a trace!

*A line from the verses about the famous twelve from Chu Yang's previous life. Chapter 66.

Chapter 231: King of Hell Chu makes another move

Watching King of Hell Chu walk out, Jun Lu Lu softly sighed and said, “This Lian Fan Lei is truly unlucky. Provoking King of Hell Chu at this crucial moment. Isn’t this just suicidal? King of Hell Chu had already almost killed enough people. During the coronation of the new emperor, he remained quiet out of respect for the new emperor. Now that it has passed, the crucial moment has come for him to find someone to show his power. He could not find anyone, and you just stuck your head right under King of Hell Chu’s blade.”

“Yes, if King of Hell Chu wants to go to the center of the continent to cause confusion to Diwu Qing Rou, he will surely create a great storm in Iron Cloud Citadel. This will make Diwu Qing Rou believe that he is still in Iron Cloud. That way, his mission in Great Zhao will be even safer! With just one Lian family, it would not be enough. There will definitely be more.” A low voice spoke.

“Ah, that’s right.” Jun Lu Lu turned back to a room and said, “Young master Wei, in your opinion, how is King of Hell Chu?”

“He could be a top character.” Young master Wei, who did not make an appearance, said in a low voice, “But this person is too dangerous!”

“Too dangerous?” Jun Lu Lu frowned.

“There is a dangerous aura on his body.” Young master Wei said casually, “But his strength is currently still low, not enough to be a threat to us.”

“About going to the middle of the continent, Great Zhao?” Jun Lu Lu asked.

“Get three identities ready for him.” Young master Wei said

lightly, “Three young musicians, two males and one female. One of them will have the surname Chu. You should just hide the name of the other two and only use them when necessary; otherwise, don’t bother.”

“Okay!”

“But our House of Exceptional Beauties cannot be used by him for nothing! When he comes back, make him pay something!” Young master Wei said in a low voice, “I heard that he has a few heavenly weapons; Ah Lu, you may want to take one to play with.”

“Heavenly weapons…” Jun Lu Lu showed a look of surprise. Then she suddenly smiled cutely, “Brother Wei… you really think that if we help him with just a little favor, he would give us a heavenly weapon that is as precious as life?”

“Cough cough… I have to cultivate.” Young master Wei became completely quiet.

A look of anger appeared on Jun Lu Lu’s face, and she muttered, “It’s the same thing every time. He runs away when our conversation reaches…”

Official Lian Cheng Gui was a minister of revenue. During this time period so busy his head was spinning. After exhausting official business, he gave his back a twist and hastily got on his carriage to go home.

On the way, he remained frowning with a heart full of worries.

The department was currently short a large chunk of money. While he had been doing great these past years, he had to keep steadfast with the new emperor on the throne. On the off chance that he got caught, his whole family would be done.

Luckily for me, the emperor still trusts me right now. Umm, during this time, I should change the books a little and give the subordinates some benefits. I can trap them and create a few achievements for myself…

Arriving home, his butt was barely settled when his son, Lian Fan Lei, rushed in. His first words almost caused his father to choke, “Father, I need to borrow a few shadow guards!”

“What do you want?” Lian Cheng Gui almost fell down. Shadow guards, how could they be used as he pleased? They were the protective force of the national treasury!

“There is an ignorant punk I have to deal with!” Lian Fan Lei ground his teeth.

“Someone provoked you?” Lian Cheng Gui was furious, but he still managed to suppress his anger and asked for details.

In any case, he had to at least know who offended this guy.

“Who is that person?”

“He was at the House of Exceptional Beauties! His surname is Chu!” Lian Fan Lei was so angry he could barely sit still. He quickly told his father everything.

Lian Cheng Gui almost fainted from anger! He knew that his son was an idiot, but he never expected that his son would be that idiotic! It was bad enough that he was fighting for a girl at a brothel, but he unbelievably asked for the mobilization of shadow guards!

The old man was currently feeling uneasy every day. He was so scared that he could barely breathe. He was fearing that some flaw would appear and someone else could use him to gain favor with the new emperor. He did not even dare to speak one unnecessary word, but here was his son making trouble outside. Before he could even reprimand his son for making trouble, his son was asking him to mobilize the shadow guards to help him fight for a lover...

Bam! He slapped his son in the face! Lian Cheng Gui could not control himself and roared, “Insolent! Who gave you permission to go to the House of Exceptional Beauties? You cannot keep at peace for a while? Huh?”

“Father!” Lian Fan Lei held his red face in astonishment. He never imagined that his father would hit him, let alone so hard like that. This kind of thing had never happened before; his father had never reacted so severely!

The sound of thundering horse hooves approached. A voice rang out, “Bu Tian Pavilion’s business! All bystanders move aside!”

The sound of horse hooves, is it coming in our direction?

Lian Cheng Gui’s face turned white. No longer bothering with disciplining his son, he rushed toward the main door; he immediately staggered!

He could see, on the main road in front of his door, a few dozen big horses, dark as coal. Riding on top of them were a few dozen men in black with faces as cold as ice as they advanced toward him. And the leader was none other than Cheng Zi Ang, hall leader of Bu Tian Pavilion!

Lian Cheng Gui’s mind went blank.

When they arrived at the manor’s door, Cheng Zi Ang raised his arm, and all of the fighters of Bu Tian Pavilion immediately dispersed. They tightly surrounded the manor!

Cheng Zi Ang softly jumped down from the horse and walked forward. With a nod, he said, “Official Lian, what a coincidence. We meet again.”

Lian Cheng Gui wanted to cry. What kind of coincidence is this? In this entire citadel, the person everyone hates to run into most is you. Seeing you is definitely not a good thing!

“Cheng… Official Cheng.” Lian Cheng Gui’s voice was a little trembled. He greeted Cheng Zi Ang and asked, “This is…”

“We were ordered by the minister to take your entire family, young and old, for a drink.” Cheng Zi Ang said gently, “Just a drink, I hope Official Lian will cooperate.”

“A drink…” Lian Cheng Gui’s saw the world collapse in front of his eyes. When Cheng Zi Ang arrested more than a dozen officials before, he also said the same thing.

“What crime did I commit?” Lian Cheng Gui held onto a last ray of hope, “I want to see the emperor! I want to see the emperor! I am an important official in the royal court; you people in Bu Tian Pavilion do not have the power to arrest me!”

“The minister said that his target is not you; there is just something that made him curious…” Cheng Zi Ang sighed.

“What? Curious?” Lian Cheng Gui trembled.

“What made King of Hell Chu curious? I… While I am the minister of revenue, I don’t think I am worthy of that…”

“Ah, it’s nothing.” Cheng Zi Ang said casually, “He heard that the young master tossed out one hundred fifty thousand silver taels just to hear a beauty’s melody… Official Lian, this really made the minister curious.”

“Not just the minister, even I am curious. Official Lian really has deep pockets. Tsk, tsk, one hundred fifty thousand silver taels to hear one melody… According to my knowledge, your monthly salary is only eighty silver taels! In a year, you don’t even make a thousand taels.” Cheng Zi Ang said, “Official Lian, to hear a melody, the young master did not hesitate to spend your hard-earned money of two hundred years…”

“This is slander!” Lian Cheng Gui’s body was cold with sweat. His vision become blurred as he tried to deny the charge, “How can there be such a thing?!”

“Official Lian, did the young master did not tell you?…” Cheng Zi Ang winked mysteriously, “At the House of Exceptional Beauties, the young master fought for a girl with another person.” He lowered his voice and said enigmatically, “… His surname is Chu.”

“His surname is Chu…” Lian Cheng Gui murmured. He suddenly

remembered his son talking about mobilizing the shadow guards to get a person with the surname Chu...

The little bit of hope that Lian Cheng Gui held on to sank into the abyss as he trembled and said, “Could it be... that person was the minister?”

Cheng Zi Ang smiled. He gave an approving look to the “smart person.”

“Oh oh... oh oh...” Lian Cheng Gui did not know whether to laugh or to cry. His mouth just made some odd noises. Right after that, Lian Cheng Gui closed his eyes, and his whole body fell backward. He had fainted without being able to say anything...

Before fainting, the only thought he had in his head was: This is really hilarious! People can’t hide fast enough, and my son dares to fight for a woman with him. He even showed off in front of King of Hell Chu’s face and tossed out one hundred thousand taels to hear a melody?

This is too funny!

Lian Fan Lei came behind his father and just stood there stupefied. He could not believe what he was hearing... So... that person was King of Hell Chu!

No wonder the people that came with him became angry when I insulted King of Hell Chu...

Right away, young master Lian wailed and screamed, “I... I really did not know who he was...”

“The minister has ordered to take the entire Lian family! Seal the ministry of revenue! Check everything carefully!” Cheng Zi Ang gave an order that shook the entire citadel! Sealing the ministry of revenue and checking everything carefully? How many people were going to be unlucky?

The entire Iron Cloud Citadel was in shock! Before, it was rooting out spies. This time, it was investigating corruptions, and large

fortunes with unknown origins...

It should be known that, in no matter what dynasty, the number of corrupted officials was much greater than that of spies! As for large fortunes of unknown origins, which official did not have a little sh*t in his ass?

The jail cells of the judicial department were once again utilized by Bu Tian Pavilion! During the time before the new emperor ascended the throne, there was a great amnesty. Many prisoners were freed; now, there was a lot of room...

Early in the morning of the second day, Tie Bu Tian convened in court and saw something was amiss.

Many officials below were missing. The royal court was supposed to have more than a hundred people, but, from the looks of it, there were less than half.

“What is this? Is everyone on vacation?” Tie Bu Tian was a little annoyed.

“Your Majesty, save us!” Even if someone had given an order, they could not be any neater. More than half of the remaining officials kneeled simultaneously. One official who could not kneel stood there with a tearful face.

The remaining officials that were still standing in the court, with the exception of the elderly ones, were surprisingly less than thirty all together... But these remaining people, whether big officials or small officials, were all standing proudly with their chests puffed up at this time!

After sifting out all the sand, one would find gold! Even though the amount of gold was a little small...

“What is this? Where are all the others?” Tie Bu Tian was now also surprised.

The officials looked at each other and dared not speak. After a long time, one of the kneeling officials near the front said with a

trembling voice, “All the others were arrested by King of Hell Chu. Even we are also… also… Your Majesty! Oh oh…” This official suddenly started to cry, “Bu Tian Pavilion people are waiting outside the royal court to arrest us…”

Tie Bu Tian’s jaw dropped; he became petrified in the blink of an eye!

Chapter 232: A great gift

“What happened?” Tie Bu Tian’s countenance became grave.

“Well…” All of the officials who were kneeling did not dare to say a word; they just kept banging their heads on the floor and said, “We have sinned! We deserve to die ten thousand times…”

“Who is going to tell me what happened?” Tie Bu Tian slowly stood up from his throne and looked with an icy gaze.

“It is really no big deal.” The elderly prime minister of Iron Cloud, Huang Fu Ming, stroked his beard. He was among the people still standing. He said casually, “Your Majesty, it is because Minister Chu sealed the treasury and arrested Lian Cheng Gui. Plus, all of the books from the treasury are being investigated by Bu Tian Pavilion…”

“In regards to this matter, Minister Chu had ordered that everything must be investigated to the roots! Anyone who is found out will be arrested! Anyone who is caught will be killed!” His voice gradually grew colder. He was clearly carrying an air of schadenfreude. This made all the people kneeling on the floor tremble even more.

“But how does a treasury matter relate to them?” Tie Bu Tian looked at the few dozens of people kneeling in front of him in shock. There were also almost a hundred people that he did not know the whereabouts of. His head was spinning.

There were the ministry of revenue, the ministry of justice, the ministry of rites, the ministry of personnel, the ministry of war…

“In these past few years, everyone seemed to not have done well so… cough cough…” Huang Fu Ming coughed dryly and said slowly, “So many officials started to think about the nation’s treasury… and the nation’s treasury is managed by the ministry of revenue. In the end, everyone’s lives were suddenly better. Plus,

Official Lian only needed to use the tools at his disposal... cough, cough... to write off everything neatly..."

Huang Fu Ming might have said all of this because he had no other choice, but his intentions were cruel without the least bit of mercy!

"And currently, I don't know what happened, I am just worried that Minister Chu has heard about this..." Huang Fu Ming cautiously said, "Minister... Ah, I heard that Minister Chu was so angry his face turned purple... Last night, Bu Tian Pavilion continually searched thirty-five homes..."

With a pale face, Tie Bu Tian said, "The treasury issue... could all of these people be involved?" Tie Bu Tian's finger trembled as he pointed to the officials kneeling with their heads to the ground.

The officials did not dare to say anything. They all trembled as they kneeled with their foreheads touching the ground.

Looking at the scene in front of his eyes, Tie Bu Tian's body staggered. His head suddenly hurt, and he closed his eyes.

He did not blame Chu Yang; he definitely would not!

But he felt sad! Extremely sad!

What kind of place was the royal court? It was a place that scholars of the world dreamed of and wished for. There were many local officials who tried their entire lives and could not stand there, not even for a second!

It could be said that, this revered hall was the place where talents became the true pillars of Iron Cloud Nation.

This was the foundation of all of Iron Cloud Nation! If things were rotten here, Iron Cloud Nation would also be rotten! And these past few years were the most difficult times in Iron Cloud! Everyone should have put in all of their effort to help the nation pass through these challenges, but they unexpectedly only thought of emptying the nation's treasury.

All the effort that was put in to develop them was all to create destructive pests!

“You people are good! Very good...!” Tie Bu Tian ground his teeth and nodded. His ashen face suddenly let out a bitter smile, “Hahaha, not bad! You are truly the pillars that hold up our Iron Cloud! Pillars!”

He knew that the treasury issue was very serious, but he had thought that he would fix it after he ascended the throne.

No matter how serious it was, it was only a few officials. At most, there would be some two dozen officials involved; that would have been too astonishing already!

But he never thought that there would be that many people!

Taking away these people, the royal court would only have some thirty or forty people left! That was tantamount to an empty royal court!

But... if I don’t get rid of these people, can I keep them? Keeping these bad bugs???

“You can all remain kneeling!” Tie Bu Tian angrily kicked the golden table in front of the dragon throne and roared, “Send order for Minister Chu to come to the royal court immediately!”

In less than an hour, the sound of horse hooves was heard as it unexpectedly headed straight for the royal court!

In other times, someone would have probably jumped out and pointed out such lack of decorum. But right now, no one dared to say a word.

“Your Majesty, Minister Chu is requesting an audience with you.”

“Send him in!”

In the silence, the rhythmic and soft sound of footsteps slowly rang out. Right after, everyone could only feel that everything had

darkened. In the middle of the door to the golden hall, a person in black appeared.

He was dressed in black from head to toe; the only exception was his face, which was covered with a fierce golden mask!

The moment this person appeared at the door, the air seemed to have been sucked out of the room! Especially those officials with dark consciences, they could not help but feel terrified! It was as if the person who just arrived brought the atmosphere from hell with him!

“Bring a seat for Minister Chu!” Tie Bu Tian spoke before Chu Yang had a chance to say anything. Tie Bu Tian did not want the officials to know that Bu Tian Pavilion was currently not in his hand but in Chu Yang’s hand or that Chu Yang was not a person of Iron Cloud Nation.

For an emperor, this was a loss of face.

“Thank you, Your Majesty.” Of course Chu Yang understood Tie Bu Tian’s hidden intention and thanked him before sitting down cautiously, “I wonder what has cause Your Majesty to summon me here today.”

“Minister Chu, you have been very busy these past two days.” Tie Bu Tian smiled and said, “About the national treasury issue, I wonder what Minister Chu plans to do.” He went straight into the subject.

“In accordance with Your Majesty’s previous assurance, Bu Tian Pavilion has the power to execute and notify afterward.” Chu Yang said coolly, “Therefore, after a great crime was discovered yesterday, we verified a few pests. Early this morning, they have already been sent to the eastern part of the citadel for execution of their entire families! There was more than three hundred people total!”

As these words were spoken, the entire group of officials kneeling

on the ground trembled violently.

“Then where are the remaining people?” Tie Bu Tian blew out a long breath.

“About this… Your Majesty’s judgment is needed.”

Chu Yang said carelessly, “But, in Bu Tian Pavilion’s view, it is best to just kill all of them! After all, the brothers have paid a dear price for all the investigating we have had to do; they practically tired themselves to death.”

Kill all…

Someone immediately fainted; there were also others who let out muffled cries with their heads to the ground.

Elderly Prime Minister Huang Fu Ming could not help but widen his eyes. Kill all? These are thousands of lives… The old man was starting to feel that something was not right. Before Chu Yang came here, Tie Bu Tian was furious to no end. But after Chu Yang came, the atmosphere became very strange.

It was as if the ruler and subject were playing question and answer and acting out some coordinated script.

One was a good cop, and the other was a bad cop.

“Kill all? Is that advisable?…” Tie Bu Tian frowned, “You should know that if you kill all the families of those who committed crimes, there would be at least thousands of people…”

“Your Majesty worries too much!” Chu Yang said casually, “The past few years, Iron Cloud was in constant war! Eight million men has died in battle! This is only thousands of people; our Iron Cloud can afford it!”

“This… Minister, can we be a little lenient?” Tie Bu Tian smiled and said.

“Well… if Your Majesty is asking, we can deal with them in accordance with the severity of their crimes…” Chu Yang said, “As

for the result of the investigation, I will send them to Your Majesty; Your Majesty will have total authority on the matter!”

Tie Bu Tian sighed and said, “Let it be so then.”

Chu Yang’s words was clearly a stab at Tie Bu Tian. How could he have not heard this? Total authority? What is total authority? Hmm!

But Chu Yang’s stab was also a reminder. As for what that reminder was… He did not know at all.

At this moment, the two-man dialogue scene was over…

“Minister Chu, can we have a chat?” Tie Bu Tian smiled and said.

“The royal court is dismissed for today.” Tie Bu Tian smiled again.

“This is my gift to Your Majesty…” Chu Yang said quietly, “All of the killings and shaking of the foundations today will lead to long-term stability and peace later on! I was careless in not giving Your Majesty a gift for your coronation… So I have to use this to make up for my sin.”

Minister Chu’s speech almost made Tie Bu Tian’s eyeballs pop out. It was annoying and funny at the same time. In the end, he could only sigh.

The two people talked in the palace for a long time; no one knew when exactly minister Chu left, but at least their hearts were relieved. At least… they would not die immediately. They still had a little time to breathe…

A few days later, Tie Bu Tian decreed that those who took under fifty thousand silver taels would have to hand over the ill-gotten money and redeem themselves at their current posts. Those who took fifty thousand taels or more would have to hand over the ill-gotten money and become commoners after losing their position. Those who took more than one hundred thousand silver taels would be beheaded as examples, and their families would be sent

into exile...

Those who took more than one million taels would have all of their properties seized and their entire family beheaded...

While this decision seemed lenient, the wall of Iron Cloud Citadel was still stained with blood. Thousands of heads fell down that way!

The laws were not made to punish the masses. This principle remained true to this day. If everyone was beheaded, the royal court of Iron Cloud would probably collapse. Tie Bu Tian could only deal with them slowly. But one thing was certain, if these people would not show good behavior, their old sins would be taken into account once more...

In bringing this issue out, Chu Yang was giving Bu Tian Pavilion more power. He gave himself an evil image to help Tie Bu Tian win the people's hearts. This would directly help Tie Bu Tian pass the short trying period of a new emperor on the throne and firmly hold the reign at the position of ultimate power in the royal court!

Even though this royal court was now less than half in number...

After this period passed, at least for a very long time, the appearance of the officials in Iron Cloud Citadel would become much brighter.

This was Chu Yang's gift to Tie Bu Tian! To congratulate him on his coronation...

As for the true cause, Minister Chu did not speak of it. If he was to say that it was all because he was fighting for a girl at the House of Exceptional Beauties... the new emperor would probably die from anger!

Not long after, the fierce name of King of Hell Chu directly terrified all of Lower Three Heavens! King of Hell Chu's brutality made people tremble as they heard about his deeds!

In the hearts of the officials, King of Hell Chu's already fearsome

name increased its terror by twofold! But in the hearts of the people, the fame of King of Hell Chu rose like the wind. It went right up to the ninth heaven.

Everyone in Iron Cloud was feeling restless. No matter what they were doing, while the number of officials was low, their effectiveness greatly increased!

*****

After trekking for almost a month, Cheng Yun He finally returned to Great Zhao in the middle of the continent in exhaustion! Only one more day and the Meng Hun Solution would have lost its effectiveness...

If Diwu Qing Rou learned of these things, what would his reaction be...

Chapter 233: This failure was well-deserved

Crossing the Iron Cloud Nation's territory, they trekked in the snow for twenty days non-stop. After strenuous efforts, they reached the Great Zhao border. Then they immediately sent local Golden Horse Riders to bring news to Diwu Qing Rou...

Only the word tragedy could be used!

The entire Golden Horse Riders Department was in shock!

In the prime minister's manor, Diwu Qing Rou and Han Bu Chu looked at Cheng Yun He, who had clearly lost a lot of weight; they could not help but be momentarily terrified.

A few days before, Jing Meng Hun immediately went to receive Yin Wu Fa after receiving the news. But after a buffer of a few days, they were now hearing the account directly from Cheng Yun He's mouth, and Diwu Qing Rou was still shocked.

This meeting was bigger than the usual ones. There were two additional people: Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian, he two remaining King level leaders of the Golden Horse Riders Department!

The five sat in a semi-circle facing Diwu Qing Rou. Everyone's face was downcast.

"Everything... happened like that." Cheng Yun He had finally finished with difficulty. Currently, Cheng Yun He's two cheeks had sunken deeply inward. His cheek bones rose high, and his eyes seemed empty.

How arduous the journey was, he could not even tell them everything!

Han Bu Chu and Gao Sheng just looked, completely speechless. Cheng Yun He's going out this time was to take charge of the situation. But in the end, he was essentially useless. It could be grudgingly said that he was able to bring the rest of the force home

during a very dangerous period!

But this force... was truly pitiful!

However, this could not be blamed on Cheng Yun He! Everything was caused by Kong Shang Xin. With one mistake after another, he finally created a failure that was unrecoverable. But currently, Kong Shang Xin was already dead...

Therefore, the person to be held responsible was no more. How could Diwu Qing Rou not be annoyed by this?

“Two King level leaders, three ninth-grade Revered level Riders, more than thirty Revered level and above masters died in Iron Cloud!” Diwu Qing Rou scowled and said slowly, “And they all died in the hands of people not worthy of being their opponents! They died in the hands of people who should not be their opponents! Hahaha...”

Diwu Qing Rou laughed, “Such strange things like this, they should become legendary mysteries.” His countenance was calm, but the oppression in his tone made everyone’s nape hair stand on end.

“Prime Minister, please cool down.” Han Bu Chu spoke up, “This, this really can’t be blamed on the King level leaders, and it can’t be blamed on Brother Cheng. It is King of Hell Chu who is too cunning.”

“King of Hell Chu is too cunning...” Diwu Qing Rou closed his eyes and said, “Three thousand years ago, there was a scholar, a strategist for Sky Nation named Dong Fang Qing Tian! At the time, Dong Fang Qing Tian’s wisdom was unmatched; his strategies were without flaws! He was hailed as the wisest person in all of Nine Heavens! He helped the young ruler of Sky Nation fight and laid claim to vast territory.”

Han Bu Chu and company did not understand why the prime minister was telling an old story at this time. But they knew that

there must be some meaning behind it so they just quietly listened.

“Thus, Sky Nation’s power grew quickly! All of the surrounding nations were feeling unsecure. At this time, the nation stood at a stagnant state. The prime minister, Chen Ping, suppressed all internal strife giving way to a prosperous Sky Nation…”

“At its prime, the territories of Sky Nation was equal to that of both Great Zhao and Iron Cloud! But from then on, Sky Nation also started to fall. They suffered one defeat after another. The smaller surrounding nations seized this opportunity and unexpectedly toppled this enormous beast!”

“Do you know why this happened?” Diwu Qing Rou asked at length.

“Perhaps at that time, Dong Fang Qing Tian had died?” Han Bu Chu and the others asked in puzzlement.

“He did not die! Moreover, he maintained control.” Diwu Qing Rou said.

“Then… how did it happen?” Han Bu Chu and company were confused. A nation at peak power with a thorough strategist, how could it be defeated by a group of weak nations?

“When they were fighting to conquer the world, Dong Fang Qing Tian went to battle and directed each battle himself. It could be said that he won all battles within a thousand mile radius of his weiwo. Do you know what a weiwo is?” Diwu Qing Rou asked.

“A weiwo is an army tent! A command center!”

“Yes, army tent… This was key!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “After the nation prospered, this leading tactician was, of course, no longer able to go to the battlefront. Instead, he remained at the royal court to assist the emperor! And his strategies, no matter how effective, no matter wise and no matter how exhaustive, once relayed to the battlefront… were not on time. Secondly, if the enemies changed their strategies just a little, those at the

battlefront would not know how to respond."

"He was able to give out precise orders, but those under him could not act as he intended! After all, not anyone could be Dong Fang Qing Tian!" Diwu Qing Rou said slowly, "In the end, Dong Fang Qing Tian had to leave the royal court and go to the battlefront to command the troop himself. But the situation had changed by that time. On one side was a defeated military force, and on the other was a military force ready to take back the world; they were completely different from each other!"

"Fighting to take back the world, even if they were weaker, they had heart. After they won, they would gain territory and wealth! But the Sky Nation's military force, especially the commanders, were no longer like before. They already had wealth; they only wanted to keep their lives!"

"With Dong Fang Qing Tian's unrivalled strategies, they were able to restore the situation in one front. But there was fighting in all four fronts at that time! In principle, he could not control everything. He could only control one front so... as time went by, Sky Nation was defeated more and more miserably. In a way, Dong Fang Qing Tian was defeated by his own nation! Therefore, Sky Nation was no more! Dong Fang Qing Tian looked up at the heavens and sighed three times. Standing in the middle of chaos, he pulled out his sword and ended his own life!"

"What did he sigh about?" Han Bu Chu hastily asked.

"At that time, Dong Fang Qing Tian said, 'Even though I easily conquered the world, but cannot prevent the degeneration that comes with prosperity! Devising strategy and winning in a thousand mile radius. This is true! But in history, has anyone led from inside the palace and win battles more than a thousand miles away? I failed because of power! I failed because of prosperity!'"

When Diwu Qing Rou was finished, everyone remained silent. They did not speak a word as they thought about what he said.

“My ability is far less than that of Dong Fang Qing Tian!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “But I can avoid the mistake that Dong Fang Qing Tian made! Thus, I always remained in the prime minister’s manor so you could demonstrate your strengths and train yourselves. I am not afraid that you will fail; as long as it is not too great, with me here, you still have a chance to recover!”

“Because even if you fail, it would be your failure and not a failure in my leadership. After you fail in battle, you can change that failure to a win with my leadership. Even when I do not say anything, you could still be made to understand your own shortcomings! You can gradually grow this way.” Diwu Qing Rou smiled bitterly, “Right now, most of you are capable of being in charge of your own territory. You are the greatest cards up my sleeves in my quest for the world! Do you understand?”

Han Bu Chu said emotionally, “The prime minister’s thoughts put us all to shame!”

“Kong Shang Xin had added himself to his failure this time!” Diwu Qing Rou gently shook his head, “This is the biggest failure! It is also our first big failure since the creation of the group.”

“The reason is not because King of Hell Chu is too cunning!” Diwu Qing Rou said gravely, “These past few years, we have had it too easy; we did not have to fight!”

Jing Meng Hun sighed sadly without saying anything.

Yin Wu Tian retorted, “In any case, it is still too that King of Hell Chu is very cunning!”

“Not so! King level leader Yin, let me ask you. If Golden Horse Riders Department was just created, and Kong Shang Xin went to carry out such a mission, would he have acted so carelessly like that? Would he dare?” Diwu Qing Rou asked slowly.

“He wouldn’t!” Yin Wu Tian choked and finally dropped his head.

“Exactly! He would not dare!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “But right now, he dared! Not only did he dare, he even took all of the subordinates to take such a risk with him!”

“It is because he had become arrogant! He felt that Golden Horse Riders Department has become powerful! That they would not fail at anything! So he dared! So he died!” Diwu Qing Rou said word by word.

“Kong Shang Xin’s judgement was a long way from that of Dong Fang Qing Tian, and he also had much less power!” Diwu Qing Rou said majestically, “So Kong Shang Xin was deserving of his death! Facing an opponent like King of Hell Chu, he was already a dead person the moment he made such a rash decision!”

“This failure was well-deserved! You people of Golden Horse Riders Department should not have had such a failure!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “Facing with an enemy like King of Hell Chu, if Golden Horse Riders Department remains arrogant thinking that you are superhuman like Kong Shang Xin and Yin Wu Fa, I would not find it surprising that Golden Horse Riders Department gets toppled by the hands of King of Hell Chu one day!”

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian were soaked in sweat! The two of them had originally intended to dispatch martial experts to take revenge. But without doing anything to stop them, Diwu Qing Rou had caused all of their thoughts about vengeance to dissipate with his words. They finally realized the deep sense of crisis!

Diwu Qing Rou’s words were harsh! In all these years, this was the first time Diwu Qing Rou spoke like this! Especially to King level leaders like them.

For the moment, even a ninth-grade King level leader like Jing Meng Hun felt a chill ran down his spine!

“Your failure is like that of Dong Fang Qing Tian from history. And I am Dong Fang Qing Tian. While I could arrange your tasks for you, if you don’t do your job well, the end result would still be

failure!”

Diwu Qing Rou said each word icily, “I hope that Golden Horse Riders Department will not turn me into the second Dong Fang Qing Tian! If that is to be the case, Golden Horse Riders Department’s existence is no longer necessary!”

Chapter 234: Was it King of Hell Chu?

Drops of sweat oozed out from Jing Meng Hun's forehead and fell to the ground.

Diwu Qing Rou never reviewed the gains and losses of this mission, nor did he talk about what needed to be considered in future missions.

But his words had clearly demonstrated the fury inside Diwu Qing Rou's heart!

Golden Horse Riders Department, what was the purpose of its creation?

It was for Diwu Qing Rou's dream of world domination!

So if the Golden Horse Riders Department became an obstacle in Diwu Qing Rou's path, Diwu Qing Rou would definitely dissolve it without any hesitation. He would do it as easily as the day he established the Golden Horse Riders Department!

Jing Meng Hun did not doubt this.

The Golden Horse Riders Department was established for Diwu Qing Rou's own interest. But if they could not bring him any benefits, then why would they need to exist? What was the purpose? To waste money?

While King level masters were important, were they comparable to a powerful army? Could they directly help him conquer the world? No! If not, and they could not bring him any benefits, then what was the point of keeping them?

This was Diwu Qing Rou's analysis. But using this analysis, for the first time, he strictly outlined his requirements for the Golden Horse Riders Department!

At the same time he put forward this point: It was possible for the Golden Horse Riders Department not to exist anymore!

“Dong Fang Qing Tian was wrong in that he trusted too much in his own abilities and his own wisdom. But I, Diwu Qing Rou, will not make the same mistake!” Diwu Qing Rou glanced at Jing Meng Hun and said slowly, “Therefore, a mistake like this one, I will only allow once and never a second time!”

Jing Meng Hun felt his body soaked with cold sweat as he said, “Rest assured, Prime Minister. There will definitely not be a second time!”

“I believe you!” Diwu Qing Rou somberly nodded his head and said, “Failure is not frightening! People dying is not frightening! Frightening is when failure makes you bewildered, and hatred leaves you blind! We will take revenge for Golden Horse Riders Department, but it is not time for revenge yet. No one is allowed to act rashly!”

Jing Meng Hun gritted his teeth and said, “Yes!”

At this time, Diwu Qing Rou finally nodded his head and asked, “How are Yin Wu Fa’s injuries?”

He had been suppressing this topic and did not let anyone mention it yet. But after he had completely controlled their emotions, he spoke of it. This was because Diwu Qing Rou knew that they essentially still maintained the habits of Jiang Hu people!

They could only achieve their full potential once these Jiang Hu habits are erased. Paying with the life of a King level leader was too expensive, but Diwu Qing Rou had recognized that this was the perfect opportunity!

Golden Horse Riders Department would do without a King level leader, but it could never be without control!

There was no doubt that this was something Diwu Qing Rou was very good at!

“Brother Yin’s injuries...” There was a trace of grief on Jing Meng Hun’s face, “No matter how serious the injuries are, the

person only need to take my Meng Hun Solution, and they would survive for a month! But third brother's legs..."

He suddenly looked up, "Official Cheng, I have a question for you. On the way, besides being robbed by the youths from the clans, did you run into anyone else?"

Cheng Yun He was startled, "King level leader Jing, what do you mean by that?"

"If he took my Meng Hun Solution, even if both of his legs are broken, I could still restore them to their original state. But third brother's legs... right now, he is completely paralyzed from the waist down!"

Jing Meng Hun's two eyes were red like blood as he stared intently at Cheng Yun He, "Such an injury clearly happened after taking Meng Hun Solution!"

Cheng Yun He looked up; he closed his eyes and, after long while, let out a sigh. Then he gritted his teeth and said, "With this matter, I don't understand what energy or cultivation is; I am only in charge and capable of bringing the person home. And I did that to the best of my abilities!"

He pushed his neck out and pointed to that white neck with his finger while saying icily, "I can guaranteed that the body looked like a corpse, and no one bothered it on the way back! If King level leader Jing does not believe me or has any suspicions, my head is right here!"

Cheng Yun He held his head high and looked arrogantly, "Anyone from Golden Horse Riders Department can come and take it!"

Cheng Yun He was choking with extreme anger.

You people of Golden Horse Riders department are the ones in charge of the footwork, I was only there to supervise and assist! And it was ordered by the Prime Minister! Since you did not follow

orders and did not cooperate, the mission that was almost complete became a failure. I went on a tough and dangerous journey to bring your brother back! Not only did you not thank me, you suspect that I secretly attacked him?

“Official Cheng’s reaction is too extreme!” Yin Wu Tian said coldly as he looked at Cheng Yun He with the gaze of a poisonous snake. Of course he still did not believe Cheng Yun He’s words.

“Extreme or not, righteousness exists in one’s heart!” Cheng Yun He finally lost control. He suddenly stood up and said loudly, “If I wanted Yin Wu Fa dead, I could have killed him ten thousand times on the way back here. Now that he is a disabled person, how does it benefit me?”

Cheng Yun He was indescribably angry!

“That’s enough!” Diwu Qing Rou gently raised his hand and slowly turned to look at Yin Wu Tian, “Fourth King level leader Yin, perhaps you believe that it would have been better for you brother to have died out there?”

Yin Wu Tian was startled. His body trembled as he spoke, “Please forgive me, Prime Minister. I just… have some doubts!”

“Then you should doubt our enemies. Don’t doubt the person who went through many hardships to bring your brother back!” Diwu Qing Rou said severely, “Yin Wu Tian, you should be more careful when you speak! If anything goes wrong because of your hatred… you should know what the consequences will be!”

Kong Shang Xin died, and Yin Wu Fa was disabled; the person who was in the most pain was Yin Wu Tian!

Diwu Qing Rou did not want to be so severe, but, right now, the only thing he could do was to toss the two words “human compassion” aside! If Yin Wu Tian’s hatred was allowed to thrive, then he did not know what form it would take. Therefore, even if Diwu Qing Rou did not want to, he could only suppress it!

Yin Wu Tian took a deep breath and said gravely, “The Prime Minister is right!”

“Gao Sheng, do you know which clan King of Hell Chu took advantage of?” Diwu Qing Rou asked. He had asked Gao Sheng to look into this issue seven or eight days ago. Diwu Qing Rou now asked with another intention as well.

“Ten days ago, there was news in Middle Three Heavens that the people of Hei Mo clan who went out came back to Middle Three Heavens!” Gao Sheng said cautiously, “There has also been a running joke that is spreading around. The Hei Mo clan sent out three King level leaders, but, when they returned, all three were gravely injured...”

“Hei Mo?” Yin Wu Fa’s two eyes widened.

“Yes, Hei Mo!” Gao Sheng said, “It was said that the Hei Mo clan was attacked by the Mo clan in Iron Cloud Citadel. But, after an investigation, it was shown that the Mo clan did not have any martial masters in Iron Cloud Citadel at that time...”

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian held their breath with their eyes opened wide!

“Later on, King level leader Soul Catcher was forced to tell the truth.” Gao Sheng said slowly, “They had a fight with Golden Horse Riders Department... This caused an uproar in Middle Three Heavens!”

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian ground their teeth loudly!

Hei Mo clan!

So it’s the Hei Mo clan!

“The entire thing was orchestrated by King of Hell Chu. But, no matter what, the intention was to frame us!” Gao Sheng said, “The two King level leaders of the Hei Mo clan jointly stated... At the time, King of Hell Chu had told them clearly that their opponents were people of Golden Horse Riders Department. But the Hei Mo

clan people owed King of Hell Chu a favor so they extended a helping hand!"

"Note that the key point here is: King of Hell Chu had stated things clearly in advance!" Gao Sheng emphasized, "Therefore, the Hei Mo clan could not blame King of Hell Chu!"

Everyone understood this principle very well. It was as if a person was told that another's enemy was some imperial nation, but after hearing about it, that person must carry explosive on his back and bomb their shrine. It did not have anything to do with that person, right? But that person still wanted to...

"In that case, the Hei Mo clan has taken responsibility for the whole thing themselves?" There were two volcanoes on the verge of erupting in Yin Wu Tian's eyes.

"Upper Three Heavens is not allowed to get involved with disputes between Middle Three Heavens clans. Middle Three Heavens is not allowed to participate in contentions between kingdoms in Lower Three Heavens! This is an unchanging rule of the Nine Heavens!" Gao Sheng raised his brows and said casually, "Those King level leaders of the Hei Mo clan broke the rules, and they have been placed under questioning! No matter how this matter was dealt with, it has been done! So anyone who wants to bring this up again would be extremely unwise!"

"The Nine Heavens has its own justice. Perhaps King of Hell Chu took advantage of some loophole. But things have already passed, and the Hei Mo clan has acknowledged that King of Hell Chu was not to blame. But if we... Haha, if King of Hell Chu could even take advantage of this justice, Golden Horse Riders Department does not have to think to know what happens in the end!"

Gao Sheng's eyes flashed sharply, "Therefore, I believe that we must control ourselves in this matter no matter what!"

Jing Meng Hun sighed and sat down. With a crack, Yin Wu Tian's hands had crushed the table's edge in front of him. Their

eyes were bloodshot red, but the two men now looked slightly slumped...

Facing with the laws of the Nine Heavens, even an Emperor level master would not dare to fight them, let alone King level.

“Yun He, those youths from the great clans...” Diwu Qing Rou waved his hands and smothered the air of hatred. He stated their current goal.

Diwu Qing Rou had a firm grasp of people’s mind and their character. After the two previous mistakes, he had become more cautious!

“Those young men... When they were arguing with each other, I heard that one of their names was Luo Ke Di. Another person was Ji Mo, and one with the surname Gu. As for the other two, I do not know their names.” Cheng Yun He said thoughtfully, “I also do not know if they are from a clan in Middle Three Heavens or Upper Three Heavens.”

“Luo Ke Di is the second young master of the Luo clan from Middle Three Heavens! Ji Mo is the second young master of the Ji clan from Middle Three Heavens.” The moment Gao Sheng heard these names, a trace of tension appeared on his face, “As for the surname Gu... Could it be a person of the Gu clan?”

Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance turned pale. He tapped his fingers gently on the table and did not say anything for a long time. Raising his eyebrows pensively, he allowed everyone to digest what Gao Sheng just said.

After a while, Diwu Qing Rou finally said slowly, “Among those people, could it be... that one of them was King of Hell Chu?”

Chapter 235: A series of deadly ploys

“King of Hell Chu?” Gao Sheng’s eyes widened, “Impossible!”

“First, would Yun He have such luck that, during the most dangerous time, he ran into descendants of great clans acting as robbers? Plus, they are descendants of clans from Middle Three Heavens.” Diwu Qing Rou smiled faintly.

“This was tantamount to them notifying us: We will be going to the center of the continent! You people should prepare well!” A cold light flashed in Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes.

“Perhaps they inadvertently said this, and Senior Cheng has carefully noted it.” Gao Sheng pondered as the brows on his refined face slowly pinched together.

“That could be the case. But the second point is they said they were robbing, and did they take away anything? Baffled? They waited in such snowy weather just to have some fun in the middle of nowhere?” Diwu Qing Rou smiled, “Even the excuse of finding King level leader Yin was ludicrous!”

“Are the descendants of Middle Three Heavens that bored?”

“Third, I do not believe in such a coincidence!” Diwu Qing Rou said nonchalantly, “And the next encounter that was spoken of, it is possible that King of Hell Chu will come to Great Zhao to stir up some chaos! And if they come to Great Zhao, it is very likely that they will contact Yun He!”

Gao Sheng carefully thought for a while, then he slowly nodded his head, “The Prime Minister is right, there is definitely a likely chance!”

“If this is the case and we do not foresee this, with Yun He’s assistance, it would be the same as Golden Horse Riders Department welcoming them... There is no doubt they would be kept the safest in Great Zhao...” Han Bu Chu thought about this

and could not help but gasp.

“But now that the Prime Minister has figured this out, we should open our net wide and wait for a big fish!” Gao Sheng sneered, “If King of Hell Chu is really coming here then we can catch him at the right time without wasting too much energy.”

“Not necessarily!” Diwu Qing Rou said thoughtfully, “King of Hell Chu would not easily act so childish like that! There must be some hidden meaning!”

He paused muttered as he paced back and forth, “One person is from the Luo clan, one person is from the Ji clan, and one person is from the Gu clan... Three great clans of Middle Three Heavens... Hmm, King of Hell Chu is showing his strength. At that time, he will definitely bring them with him! We can infer that their friendship is not a shallow one...”

“Since King of Hell Chu currently does not have the strength, in order to deal with us, he could only borrow strength... And speaking of borrowing strength, hmm, if their friendship is deep, they would help him. But people of Middle Three Heavens cannot get involved with matters of Lower Three Heavens. They could not openly help him... But if we provoke them first, this would be a different story...”

“If King of Hell Chu uses their help to sow discord... Then it would be as if our Golden Horse Riders Department just caused trouble with the Hei Mo clan and then turned around to go head to head with three great clans... Could this be what King of Hell Chu is aiming for?”

Diwu Qing Rou gently rubbed his forehead and murmured, “Could this be the big trap that King of Hell Chu has set up?”

He thought over and over again; a sharp look gradually showed in his eyes, and he said, “If we go against three great clans at the same time... our Golden Horse Riders Department would definitely be in danger...”

Han Bu Chu, Cheng Yun He, Gao Sheng, Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian quietly listened to Diwu Qing Rou's point-by-point analysis. When he explained about Golden Horse Riders Department's dangerous situation, everyone felt a chill down their spines.

If King of Hell Chu's strategy was indeed so, then he would be attacking them with one move after another and leading them into extreme danger! And if they thought that they were close to catching King of Hell Chu and made their move... it would be almost foreseeable that the three great clans would be angry and flatten Golden Horse Riders Department...

"If we already know about this, then it is not a scary thing." Han Bu Chu said thoughtfully, "We can contact these three clans now and let them know of the situation. While we cannot borrow their forces, they will not necessarily be willing to be exploited by King of Hell Chu."

"Exactly." Diwu Qing Rou said, "Should we let Gao Sheng deal with this? What do you think?"

"Rest assured, Prime Minister. I will deal with this without fail." Gao Sheng said confidently. Knowing the enemy's intentions and still being unable to fight back, that would be foolish.

"Mm, Gao Sheng, you should get ready." Diwu Qing Rou said casually, "If King of Hell Chu wants to, then let him come first! Before that, let's keep in touch with these clans and notify them of this matter only after King of Hell Chu comes here..."

Gao Sheng became excited, "Yes!"

"Ah, that was the first issue." Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said with a hint of loneliness, "The Emperor of Iron Cloud, Tie Shi Cheng, fought with me for many years; it could be said that he was a leader of the generation! I wanted to keep him around because he was still useful! I never expected him to die during such weather... This has made the plan I prepared for many years become useless!

This is really strange.” Diwu Qing Rou said lightly, “Tie Shi Cheng was still alive and well, why did he suddenly die? And Du Shi Qing also suddenly disappeared at just the right time. I do not believe that this has nothing to do with King of Hell Chu.”

“Give orders to all of the spies still in Iron Cloud Citadel to immediately spread the rumor that King of Hell Chu caused the death of Tie Shi Cheng. This... Bu Chu, you should write it into a story and circulate it everywhere! It would be best if Tie Bu Tian does not believe it. Even if he does not believe, there will be people who will.”

“Yes, Prime Minister.”

“Mm, there is more. Tie Shi Cheng has died, Tie Bu Tian took his place. Everyone knows that a country cannot be without a ruler, but... we can still create rumors! Start another one saying that Tie Bu Tian killed his father for the throne! While his father’s body was still warm, he hastily climbed on to the throne; call him coldblooded, heartless, disloyal, unfilial, and deserving of punishment from the rest of the world! This matter, Bu Chu, will also be overseen by you.”

“Yes.”

“Third, at the time Tie Shi Cheng died, our army was also attacking! During that time, Tie Long Cheng was at the battlefront and never went back to pay his respects. Haha, we also know why he could not come back. But it is still a fact that Tie Long Cheng never went back for the funeral!”

Diwu Qing Rou said, “Therefore, there must be rumors. First is Tie Long Cheng is amassing his own army with plans to rebel because he does not accept the new emperor! Second is Tie Long Cheng believes that his older brother died under questionable circumstances and did not dare to come back. But when Tie Long Cheng comes back, he will surely demand an answer from Tie Bu Tian, and an internal conflict in Iron Cloud is about occur...”

“This matter, Bu Chu, is also yours.”

“Yes…”

“There is more, while Du Shi Qing disappeared, we can still spread words that Tie Bu Tian usurped the throne by ending the emperor’s life early. And for that to happen, he killed Du Shi Qing! This rumor must be done tactfully. And it has to conveniently get into the ears of those people who knew Du Shi Qing… In this matter, Du Shi Qing’s son could assist.”

“Yes.” Han Bu Chu was become more and more in awe. While these strategies of Diwu Qing Rou were just rumors, they were all extremely sinister. With the proper control, they would be very useful!

In the world, the most frightening thing was the mouth of the common man. As long as the people believed something to be true, falsehood could become truth by word of mouth.

“Because of the throne, Tie Bu Tian allowed King of Hell Chu to massacre great and senior officials loyal to Iron Cloud… Even the living saint of Iron Cloud, Tang Xin Sheng, was turned into a spy… This matter must be made into a big deal! …Understood?”

“Understood.”

“Make time to do this right away!” Diwu Qing Rou smiled and muttered, “While King of Hell Chu was able to destroy my plans, how could I allow him to live happily?”

Gao Sheng said, “Prime Minister, if this is the case, at the border… Could you allow the soldiers to relax a little? After all, the world is currently being covered in ice and snow. Many soldiers are already suffering from frostbite; some even died from the cold…”

Diwu Qing Rou frowned a little and thought for a moment. Then he said, “Get the best material that money can buy and transport coats to the border. But force the soldiers to continue! If we are

suffering, Iron Cloud must be suffering even more than us! Moreover, when those rumors start to spread, we must not allow Tie Long Cheng to go back!”

“Yes.”

“Golden Horse Riders Department must be straighten out during this time. King level leader Yin is injured and must rest well!” Diwu Qing Rou said warmly, “Since the world is covered in ice, Golden Horse Riders Department can temporarily halt all dispatches. Make arrangements for the funeral of King level leader Kong. At that time I will personally attend to send him off!”

“Yes.” Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian replied in unison. Reminded of Kong Shang Xin, the two almost teared up. They choked as they said, “Thank you, Prime Minister.”

“As for the sects... we must make King of Hell Chu a little more uncomfortable! Let the other big sects attack Beyond the Heavens Sect. If they could not be completely wiped out, there must at least be deaths! They must put an effort into killing as many as possible.” Diwu Qing Rou said casually, “I heard that King of Hell Chu’s master is Meng Chao Ran, correct? If his master dies, would King of Hell Chu feel sad?”

“Even if King of Hell Chu is not human, he would probably drop a few tears.” Gao Sheng laughed. A chilling intention flashed from the depths of his eyes.

Indeed, Diwu Qing Rou’s strategies were sinister to a masterful level! If it was anyone else, that person would be struggling at this point.

Currently, King of Hell Chu and Tie Bu Tian would have to deal with these ploys; they probably would not feel too good about it...

“Prime Minister...” Cheng Yun He reached his hand to his chest and took out a jade box. He said in shame, “... You had planned to do great things with these two pieces of Jade Spirit Ginseng. But

after arriving, I discovered that Number One had died, and I did not have a chance to befriend the King level leader of the Hei Mo clan so they did not serve their purpose. I have failed your expectations, and I now return them to you! Please take them back!”

Chapter 236: Breakthrough

“Ah, it’s good enough that you brought them back!” Diwu Qing Rou extended his arms and said with a smile, “With the pieces in hand, we can save the lives of two martial experts in critical times. Yun He, you don’t need to feel troubled.”

Then he looked at the jade box and said, “This Jade Spirit Ginseng is…” Suddenly, he let out an “oh” and his eyes widened. He looked at Cheng Yun He and slightly frowned, “Yun He, this… no one touched it right?”

Cheng Yun He panicked; his face became pale as he said, “Prime Minister, is there a problem?”

“Jade Spirit Ginseng is a spiritual item of heaven and earth; even if it’s in a jade box, you should be able to feel an abundance of aura. But why is it that I can’t feel anything right now?” Diwu Qing Rou said suspiciously.

The moment he said so, Jing Meng Hun and company immediately sensed something was not right.

“No one else touched it! That box remained at my chest the whole time!” Cheng Yun He said definitively.

“Mm.” Diwu Qing Rou weighed the box a bit. He momentarily looked down pensively and then looked up with a smile, “It’s nothing; it is good that we have this back. Yun He, you have had an arduous journey, go back and rest early.”

Then, without even bothering to look, he tucked the jade box into his chest and smiled, “This kind of thing, it is best if I keep it safe.”

He immediately laughed, “Everyone should go home. Bu Chu, you better get busy these upcoming days. Gao Sheng, during this period, you must use all of your efforts to remain low-key; you must not let the watchers of Nine Heavens see you. Umm, the two

King level leaders should also rest early. Whatever medicine you might need for King level leader Yin's injuries, just get them from my place."

Everyone bowed and backed out.

When he was alone in his study, Diwu Qing Rou slowly stood up. With a pensive frown, he slowly paced back and forth muttering, "This... is impossible..."

Taking out the jade box from his chest, he slowly opened it up. Of course there was no Jade Spirit Ginseng. It was empty.

Diwu Qing Rou looked at the empty box and thought for a long time; his eyes momentarily flashed.

*****

Iron Cloud Citadel!

While the world was frozen on ice, Bu Tian Pavilion was once again was bustling with activity. But this time, no one in Bu Tian Pavilion had the slightest of complaints; they were happy and proud!

King of Hell Chu was still King of Hell Chu!

He did not fall!

If King of Hell Chu did not fall, Bu Tian Pavilion would remain Bu Tian Pavilion! There were people who spread rumors that King of Hell Chu had fallen from grace. Hehe, they are now being gathered by us!

Not only is King of Hell Chu still in power, he is in great power!

He directly grabbed more than half of the royal court. Such a bold move... who would dare? But King of Hell Chu directly made his move without any hesitation!

Compared to the busy Bu Tian Pavilion, Heavenly Armament Pavilion was even noisier.

After coming back, there were differences in opinion regarding how to deal with the Lian Fan Lei matter. Ji Mo thought that such a punk should just get a beating! He should be beaten until his mother does not recognize him anymore. And Luo Ke Di thought that he should be directly... neutered...

Gu Du Xing only scoffed at the thoughts of these two.

Things had long passed, but these people continued to argue nonstop at Heavenly Armament Pavilion. They grew more chaotic as time passed. Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di were not too different in opinion, but Luo Ke Di suddenly betrayed him and moved to Chu Yang's camp. He turned and attacked his former ally.

He said that Ji Mo was shortsighted, childish, and reckless without any virtue or fortitude. In other words, he was as dumb as a dog...

Ji Mo roared with anger and the two fought each other once again. The place became noisy, and before Chu Yang had a chance to intervene, the two had beaten each other to a pulp...

With a pained laugh, Chu Yang muttered, "Hot-blooded youths... In any case, they have to be able to vent some of their emotions..." Then he turned and walked out.

Gu Du Xing also followed him out leaving Rui Bu Tong to stand next to the two. He constantly hit them with sneak attacks; these only made the two fight each other more fiercely...

"How should we proceed with the next step?" Gu Du Xing asked.

"I know what direction we should go in; as to how we should proceed, I am still thinking about it..." Chu Yang pondered, "We definitely have to go to Great Zhao. But it is not time yet..."

"Huh? Are you using that card you saved from that snowy day?" Gu Du Xing's eyes brightened, "When is it time?"

Chu Yang shook his head and sighed.

The time Chu Yang was referring to was not the time Gu Du Xing had in mind. What Chu Yang was hoping for was the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment. Until now, there was no movement. He was currently at the peak of seventh grade Martial Master; he was almost going to be in ranks of Martial Great Master...

“Du Xing, let’s have a match.” Chu Yang said.

Gu Du Xing’s eyes lit up brightly as he said, “Okay!”

During this time period he had been putting his life on the line as he trained with the Revered Berserker Sword Technique. Right now, he was a ninth grade Sword Great Master; just a little bit more and he would be in the realm of Revered Sword Master!

Gu Du Xing was waiting for the day he would break through. Now, he completely understood what Chu Yang said before: This sword technique is enough to help you breakthrough to Revered Sword Artist in a year! But you can only cultivate to that point and you must stop. Otherwise, you could become immersed in it and lose your sanity. Plus, after you breakthrough to Revered Sword Artist, we still have other ways for you to quickly increase your cultivation.

Another method to quickly increase cultivation!

Gu Du Xing was currently more eager than anyone! In the daily training sessions, he was the one who tried hardest. There were times when he put in such effort that even Chu Yang looked with wide eyes.

It was because of Gu Miao Ling! Sister Xiao Miao was currently suffering and waiting for him to save her!

Gu Du Xing worked tirelessly!

“Come!”

“Come!”

Each person was holding an ordinary sword in his hand.

Prior to a match, the two used to have a fist fight first. But this time, Chu Yang used a sword first. While he was surprised, Gu Du Xing did not object.

With painful hisses, Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong walked out with black and blue faces. They were just in time to see Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang about to have a match. The whole group immediately ran over with interest. Within moments, three people who just fought each other sat on the same bench, shoulder to shoulder with eager faces...

“Here I come.” Chu Yang raised his sword and made his move first. With two legs weaving, he suddenly rushed forward like a cyclone. In the blink of an eye, Chu Yang’s figure became a faint mirage.

Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement!

“Damn! Big brother progressed so quickly!” Ji Mo cried in astonishment. Chu Yang of today, compared to the day before when Ji Mo had a match with him, was more than a level above.

Gu Du Xing’s countenance remained emotionless, and he held his sword horizontally. His two legs did not move as the two swords clanked against one another!

“Be careful!” There was a trace of mockery in Chu Yang’s eyes.

Gu Du Xing’s martial strength was much higher than his. The person to say such words should have been Gu Du Xing, but Chu Yang had said it first.

“Got it.” Gu Du Xing just said this when he suddenly felt something was wrong!

His sword felt as if it had hit water. Even his body felt a strong buoyancy along with the blocking power of water. He unexpectedly could not use his power. It seemed if he tried to push hard, his wrist would be broken.

Caught by surprise, Gu Du Xing immediately backed up.

His mind was completely puzzled. While he was restraining his strength to Chu Yang's level, he should not be feeling like this.

The moment he backed up, the feeling became even more apparent. It was as if a raging tide suddenly appeared and brought with it a powerful and viscous force that could not be stop.

And Chu Yang's sword was heading straight for him.

Gu Du Xing's face reddened. He yelled out loud and raised his strength by twenty percent to block the attack. Chu Yang's sword was pushed up, and he pulled it back. The sword aura immediately turned to a calm pond between the two people.

"Gentle Force of Water?" Gu Du Xing glanced at Chu Yang's sword.

"That's right. This is Gentle Force of Water. It's just that I am not successful with it yet." Chu Yang said casually.

Gu Du Xing smiled wryly. Earlier, he had to use the strength of the third grade Sword Great Master, and he was still unable to attack due to oppression from a seventh grade Martial Master like Chu Yang. And yet he was still not successful?

Gu Du Xing gently closed his eyes. Right away, he could feel a calmness as if a there was pond blocking in front of him, and Chu Yang was on the other side.

"It is really not successful! Your Gentle Force of Water is still too rigid!" Gu Du Xing let out a long roar and slashed continuously with his sword.

"This is the Gu clan's Dividing Waves Cut! It is a sword technique trained in water. Once successful, a slash could cut waves in front of it into two without getting one drop of water on a person's clothes!" Luo Ke Di jumped up, "Using Dividing Waves Cut to deal with Gentle Force of Water is truly the right choice."

"Maybe not!" Ji Mo grunted, "Just watch and stop talking gibberish! You're already foolish; stop acting like a clown!"

Luo Ke Di was livid; he wanted to punch when he suddenly exclaimed loudly, “How could that be?”

He could only see Chu Yang constantly backing up as his sword continued to stab. Each stab brought with it the strength of a monstrous wave attacking in Gu Du Xing’s direction. After seventeen continuous stabs, Chu Yang suddenly stopped backing up and started rushing forward.

The sword seemed to have become a soft branch of willow at this time. And like that, it continued to move nonstop as it greeted Gu Du Xing.

Gu Du Xing had switched to his technique to cut waves and divide oceans, but facing this extreme Gentle Force of Water, his technique became useless as he was slowly surrounded by it...

Gu Du Xing was shocked!

Chu Yang’s Gentle Force of Water had unexpectedly broke through under his Dividing Waves Cut! It was now truly a water force!

During this period, Chu Yang was tortured thousands of times over. And today, he finally achieved the desired outcome.

A satisfied smile appeared on Chu Yang’s face. He was about to attack when his mind was moved. A voice from the sword spirit suddenly rang out with a meaningful tone, “You finally understand the power of water! The forces of nature are about to take shape. Nine Tribulations Space is yours to use from now on!”

“Nine Tribulations Space?” Chu Yang was startled!

“Yes.” The sword spirit sighed and said, “Opening Nine Tribulations Space in half a year... you are the first!”

Chu Yang could only feel shock. In his dantian, an inexplicable wonderful feeling suddenly rose up. Closing his eyes, he immediately saw a mysterious space opening up and enveloping his body.

At this time, the Nine Tribulations Sword point in his dantian became fiercely excited. A sense of urgency also appeared beneath his feet!

Nine Tribulations Sword's second fragment! It was finally time for it to come home!

Chapter 237: Nine Tribulations space

Gu Du Xing's sword could hardly move when he suddenly felt Chu Yang's force loosening. It immediately flew forward and stopped just in front of Chu Yang's nose. The force made Chu Yang's hair fly fiercely.

Gu Du Xing was a little annoyed. Who would dare to enter a meditative state right in the middle of a match? If his control was not good, something unfortunate would have happened.

In any case, the truth remained that Chu Yang had suddenly entered into meditative state. Gu Du Xing had to hastily change his role from attacker to supporter. On top of a tree some distance away, a person in blue was so angry that blue veins popped up all over his face!

"Damn brat! Suddenly starts meditating during a sword match! This is playing with his little life!" The person in blue wanted to jump over and kick that idiotic fool in the butt.

I'm really angry!

While he was at a far higher level than the rest of them, given the situation earlier, if Gu Du Xing was not able to pull back in time, he would definitely not be able to rescue Chu Yang either!

Thinking of this, the person in blue was in cold sweat. Before your identity is clarified, you cannot die...

Chu Yang could only feel his head spinning. His ability to think suddenly disappeared as a curious feeling of dizziness came on. He closed his eyes and discovered that he was standing in a strange space.

In this short moment, the consumption of his spiritual power had left him exhausted! Since his rebirth, he had never felt so weak like this!

Chu Yang forcibly took back control and shook his head. He tried

to regain a clear mind and open his eyes to return to reality. He said weakly, “I need to rest a little. Du Xing, help me get inside.”

Gu Du Xing was shocked.

From the time they were fighting to the time Chu Yang fell into a trance, only a little bit of time had passed. But during this short time, even Gu Du Xing could sense that Chu Yang had weakened.

It was as if all of his spiritual energy had been drained.

Gu Du Xing could not help but try to speculate what Chu Yang had gained insight on. How could it have taken so much spiritual energy in such a short time?

Hearing Chu Yang, Gu Du Xing did not dare to delay and hastily put Chu Yang on his back. He quickly ran into Chu Yang’s room and placed him on the bed. Then he poured a cup of water to give to Chu Yang. Thinking over a bit, he took out two pill for healing injuries from the clan and crushed them into the water.

Chu Yang took two gulps and finished the cup of water. Feeling his mind stir once more, he said in hoarse voice, “I have to meditate a bit; don’t let anyone in.” Having finished the sentence, Chu Yang immediately started his meditation.

Gu Du Xing had wanted to give him some advice, but seeing the situation, he could only quietly walk out.

“How is big brother?” Ji Mo and company immediately rushed toward him with concern.

“Big brother... It’s possible that he has had a major enlightenment!” A somber look flashed in Gu Du Xing’s eyes. Then he said imposingly, “No one is allowed to bother him!”

Then he frowned and muttered, “What kind of enlightenment is so potent like this? Could it be... the way of martial arts?”

Ji Mo and the others looked at each other, aghast!

The way of martial arts? Could it be the second highest state

right before the way of the heavens? Could it be that Chu Yang was able to enter into such a state because he was fighting with Gu Du Xing?

Everyone's eyes brightened like headlights.

Ji Mo leapt up excitedly, "Second senior! I want to have a match with you! Fifth, sixth, you two help watch over big brother!" Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong rolled their eyes.

"What? Second senior!" Gu Du Xing was truly annoyed now, "You have to call me second brother!"

"You are second senior!" Ji Mo said triumphantly said taking cheap thrills with his vulgar play on words. (TLN: The word is second old man; old man is quite commonly used when bros are referring to each other. But this particular combo is slang for penis.)

Gu Du Xing was furious; he said imposingly, "If you keep calling me names I will beat you to the point you are as soft as second senior!"

Ji Mo could not have asked for more. He laughed loudly and teased, "Awooh, dog aunt! Second senior, come on… if you dare…"

Gu Du Xing let out an angry roar and rushed toward him.

The two people grabbed each other and fought. Because of that, second young master Ji Mo's painful screams of wanting an enlightenment rang out…

Chu Yang adjusted his mind for a while before feeling a little of his spiritual energy recover. Thinking about what he felt before, he was still a little terrified. That kind of feeling was like being suspended in the middle of the vast universe without the slightest bit of control. It was truly terrifying!

After composing himself, his mind calmed, and he was once again immersed in that mysterious state. Sure enough, the moment his mind was opened, that kind of feeling of

weightlessness rushed in. But this time, Chu Yang was prepared. The moment that feeling came, he immediately closed his eyes and relaxed his mind...

The next moment, he felt his feet touching the ground. When he opened his eyes, in front of his was a vast space!

Or it could be called a great spacious hall!

All the things that he asked the sword spirit to absorb from before, were laying in piles in the hall.

This great hall was about hundreds of feet tall and about five thousand feet in circumference. In all directions, including above, was a hazy pink fog that prevented him from seeing any further.

In front of him, there was something that looked like a large stone monument that emitted a soft purple light. Surprisingly, it seemed to have words engraved on it.

The moment he stepped closer, he could not help but be petrified. He muttered, “Purple Jade...”

This large monument was similar to Purple Jade! A priceless item in the Nine Heavens! Plus, looking at its light, it was almost the same quality as his own Pure Purple Jade!

A chunk of Purple Jade the size of a fist could help a Revered Martial Artist advance by one grade! And this block in front of him looked as if it weighted more than twenty thousand pounds!

And the special characteristic of Purple Jade was that it turned into Pure Purple Jade Essence after all of the energy inside it got absorbed! And Pure Purple Jade was a symbol of the elite!

Chu Yang knew that such a block of Purple Jade could not be found in Lower Three Heavens or Middle Three Heavens! Even in Upper Three Heavens it would be a treasure that all forces would fight for!

If he brought the block of Purple Jade in front of him out, it

would not be strange if it caused a world war in Upper Three Heavens!

Shaking his head, he bit his tongue. A piercing pain was felt. Chu Yang realized that he was not dreaming. With his eyes opened wide, he got closer and discovered beautiful inscriptions that looked like they were about to burst right out of the face of the block!

The moment Chu Yang saw them, his eyes were immediately drawn to these words!

“Nine Tribulations, Nine Heavens, it is cold at the top! Reincarnation turns fate, the palm holds the world! One look strikes wind and thunder, one anger chills the sea; one move breaks the sky, one sword dances in the vast heavens!”

“Bold!” Chu Yang murmured. After passing the initial discomfort, he gradually adapted to this place. His mind was somewhat enlightened. This was the Nine Tribulations space in his mind. And he was standing here, yet it was also not him, but his consciousness...

At that moment, there was a slight disturbance in the fog. A faint figure appeared and slowly grew clearer. It became an outline of a thin and tall figure as it stepped out from the thick fog wall next to him.

“After more than ten thousand years, I am finally here again.” The figure looked at the surroundings and said with a sigh. The voice seemed to be full of regrets.

“Are you the sword spirit?” The moment the figure spoke, Chu Yang immediately recognized its special voice.

“Am I the sword spirit?” That faint figure unexpectedly asked back. It raised its arm and stroked the block of Purple Jade. Then it said with a sense of loss, “Sword spirit. Such a noble title, I am not worthy!”

“You are not the soul of the sword?”

“When two become one, then there is a sword soul!” This unreal figure’s gaze suddenly flashed with a thirst, “By myself, I am only a sword spirit. A sword needs a soul to have spirituality! A sword with spirituality has a soul…”

“Ah…” Chu Yang nodded without really understanding everything. He faintly remembered having this conversation before. But in this space, he could not help but ask once more.

“How do you use this space?” Chu Yang asked.

“In your consciousness, however you want to use it, you can use it like that.” The figure said casually, “Nine Tribulations space can accommodate everything. You can use it as you please. But… Before you obtain the seventh Nine Tribulations Sword fragment, Nine Tribulations space cannot hold living creatures!”

“I see!” Chu Yang nodded slightly.

“You can now get the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment.” The figure stood there and sighed, “There is someone watching you outside. His martial power is not ordinary. He is the punk who gave you the Purple Jade from before… He doesn’t have bad intentions so I will not help you. I have not been here in ten thousand years. I want to stay here for a bit.”

Chu Yang’s heart was touched, and he said, “Okay.”

The moment he thought of it, he left this strange space.

He suddenly had a painful feeling and tasted blood. Reaching his hand up, he found fresh blood. He thought and realized. He had bitten his tongue in that space and was able to feel pain. It turned out that he bit his tongue in real life as well.

Those words of the sword spirit set off a storm in Chu Yang’s heart.

It was the person who gave you the Purple Jade. He did not have

any bad intentions toward Chu Yang!

No bad intentions essentially meant that that person was related to Chu Yang's identity!

Such a thought appeared in Chu Yang's mind, and he suddenly felt fear.

He was tossed away for more than ten years; if counting the previous life as well, it was decades for him! The secret of his original identity remained a knot in Chu Yang's heart. But now that a glimmer of light was suddenly shed upon it, Chu Yang's hardened heart unexpectedly hesitated.

At the moment, he did not know exactly how he felt.

It was a kind of faint... almost nostalgic feeling...

He was eager to know his own identity! So eager that he could die! But he was also afraid to find out about his own identity! Afraid to death!

Before knowing the truth, there was still hope in his heart. But if the truth turned out to be the cruelest of situations... there was no longer any way to change it...

Chu Yang remained fearful for a while. Then he dropped his head and sighed. He pressed a mechanism, and a secret door appeared. Chu Yang walked past it, and the secret door slowly closed.

The most important thing right now was to obtain the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment...

Chapter 238: The second fragment of Nine Tribulations Sword, sword edge

The moment Chu Yang's figure disappeared, the empty space in the room suddenly seemed to become twisted. Then that mysterious person in blue appeared in the room.

"Secret room..." His eyes flashed with pride as he rubbed his chin and said, "It seems this punk's things are placed in a secret room... Haha, next time, I will wait for them to leave and go in to have a look... If I can find the Purple Jade Essence, I will have it made. The old man will only need to give me a reward, and I will have more than enough to eat and to hold... But the important thing right now is to find a place to drink and celebrate..."

"This is really sinister... This punk actually hides things so secretively like this. But he still could not fool this old man..." He laughed with satisfaction for a while, and his figure suddenly disappeared.

Of course the person in blue thought that he had found a major clue and had hastily gone to celebrate.

If I barge in now... it would be difficult to do anything. On the off chance that there is some mechanisms within and I get discovered, would I not be suffering from disappointment again? This punk's vigilance is not ordinary.

It would be best to wait until he is not around...

Chu Yang had advanced into the secret passageway. He looked around as he walked quickly. His two hands also quietly stretched out thin strings across the passage way behind him. Along the way, he had placed at least a few hundreds of them!

Given the thickness of the threads, they could not be discovered in such darkness. But if they were touched, Chu Yang would immediately find out!

This is an anti-spy specialty of Nine Tribulations Sword. Currently, since the sword spirit was resting, Chu Yang had to rely on this kind of thing as a measure against that person in blue. Even though he did not have malicious intent... the fact that he was the master of Nine Tribulations Sword should remain known to as few people as possible!

This was, after all, a source of disasters and trouble!

In any case, Chu Yang was doing it for nothing; the person in blue did not follow him.

Advancing into the last level under Heavenly Armament Pavilion, he was a few hundred feet underground. Chu Yang was starting to feel cool. This had nothing to do with the weather; it was the temperature underground.

When he constructed this place, he used a lot of effort; the lake surrounded it on all sides, he had to ensure that water would not seep in...

The second fragment of Nine Tribulations Sword was here!

Chu Yang pulled himself together and activated Nine Tribulations Transcending the Nine Heavens Technique with all of his might. Inside the dantian, Nine Tribulations Sword's point rang out with joy. It moved from his dantian and came out at the tip of his finger.

On his finger a faint light flashed shining coldly for a distance of more than ten feet!

Then, with a wave of his hand, the cold light of Nine Tribulations Sword practically slashed downward! After a few slashes, the ordinary looking ground was cut into a few large blocks.

A feeling of happiness could be felt from underneath the ground.

It was as if a child who had long been gone from home finally saw its mother.

Chu Yang's heart was suddenly filled with joy. He pulled back the sword point and gathered martial strength to his arms. He dug into the ground and lifted the large stone and mud chunks to the side.

One block after another...

After ten continuous blocks, the stone chamber was practically filled up. On the ground, a large hole also appeared.

After all the dirt and stones were pushed away, a peculiar looking spring appeared under the hole. A milky white liquid was gushing out.

But the odd thing about this spring was that even though it was gushing out, it definitely did not flood outward. Any liquid that came out would immediately swirl in place. Even the soil that was a palm's length away from that spring did not get wet.

Chu Yang's eyes lit up. The situation was just like it was in the previous life. This spring had a strange and powerful health effect. Before, he had drunken his fill, and felt invigorated. Plus, later on, he rarely felt mental fatigue. And also since that time, whenever his body got injured, it healed in a short amount of time without having any scars.

Chu Yang had guessed that it was related to that spring.

He only regretted that after he finished drinking, while he turned to get the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment, the spring had disappeared without a trace.

Chu Yang felt extremely regretful about this!

Now that he saw the spring, he was worked up. This was something good; it would be a pity if he could not keep it...

Without any other choice, he had to call out the sword spirit, "Hey, is there any way to save this spring?"

The sword spirit sneered condescendingly, "It's nothing but some Vitality Spring Water. It's not anything great. It is just for

nourishing the sword edge. Compared to the Crystal Spirit Spring of the seventh fragment, this is far inferior... You are even interested in this?"

"This... while it is not all that good... Right now... it is okay to use..." When Chu Yang said it was not all that good, he said it with great reluctance. In front of him right now was the best stuff already!

The sword spirit gave Chu Yang a 'country bumpkin' glare and said, "You just have to move this into Nine Tribulations space; do you need me to teach you this?"

"Huh? How do you move it?" Chu Yang sweated profusely with excitement.

"Place the sword tip on top of the spring water and consciously will it to the space then it will be absorbed! Hey, thinking about how I used to accompany Nine Tribulations Sword traversing all over the world, so powerful, and now..." The sword spirit acted as if being with this weakling with lacking abilities was an insult. It could not help but feel like a talented person who was being wasted...

Minister Chu controlled his anger and said "Mm." He pulled out the sword point once more. With his mind directed at the space in his consciousness, he shouted, "Gather!"

"Pig! Do you have to yell out?" The sword spirit said contemptuously, "I never saw anyone as dumb as you! You are..."

"There is no more business for you here. Go back and continue your nostalgic contemplation!" Looking at the spring in front of him successfully disappear, he could clearly sense that a spring appeared in the middle of Nine Tribulations space of his consciousness. As it continued to gush around, Chu Yang was elated. His anger was no longer suppressed so he conveniently ignored his stepping stone.

“You.” The sword spirit angrily glared for a while and finally disappeared. This provocation by Minister Chu was not a light one.

“Little one, you dare to fight with me? While you are of many years, you are still soft!” Minister Chu was feeling great. He could not help but feel elated. A spiritual spring was in hand, and the second sword fragment was right inside it. Haha, this is getting two birds with one stone.

Directing his focus into the space, he came next to the spring water. He paused for a moment and carefully brought the Nine Tribulations Sword point into the spring water.

A faint ting sound was heard.

Chu Yang’s heart suddenly had the feeling like a couple fiercely loving couple was united after many lifetimes... Cough, cough, it was as if the Nine Tribulations Sword point was hugging the second fragment happily...

Chu Yang’s heart shivered, and his whole body was covered with goosebumps. He could not help but scratch himself.

Then a cold feeling emitted from his arm. It seemed to follow his meridians and advance into his dantian.

In an instant, Chu Yang’s consciousness returned to reality.

Directing his mind into his dantian, he could see a shiny sword edge attached to the sword point. The very next moment, the sword point emitted a dull pink light, and the sword edge emitted a creamy white light. The two lights became mixed together.

Chu Yang felt an explosion in his head. At this moment, his soul felt as if it had exploded and scattered across the vast night sky.

Consequently, a mysterious feeling rose. Even though he was deep underground, he clearly felt as if he was flying upward! In front of his eyes, a sharp sword edge seemed to gather all the lights of the world and shot it straight up into the high heavens!

Right after, the sword edge suddenly shined brightly and eclipsed the moon and the stars in the sky!

The Nine Heavens, whether it was Lower Three Heavens, Middle Three Heavens or Upper Three Heavens was simultaneously enveloped in a milky white light!

All of a sudden, Chu Yang remember when Meng Chao Ran was judging a sword, he said, “The sword edge is the front of the sword connecting to the sword point. The edge cuts, this is the sword’s front. This part has the most power, kills the strongest! It is used to chop, swing, slash, sweep…”

Chu Yang understood somewhat. It seemed that this sword edge was a killing weapon. At this moment, the sword edge and the sword point in his dantian had a perfect fusion. There was no differentiating between the two. A bright light emitted from the sword edge in Chu Yang’s dantian and shined into his consciousness.

A section of the sword technique appeared.

“The only sword edge that has been brilliant since time immemorial;

roaring at cloud and wind from east to west;

the sun and the moon are ready to assist me;

breaking hills and cutting up mountains, I roam…”

The sword edge flashed and Chu Yang could clearly see on one side of the sword edge, a small imprint of the sun, and on the opposite side, an imprint of the moon.

In his consciousness, the sword spirit yelled coldly, “Watch!”

A figure suddenly flew up, and a sword suddenly appeared in its hand like a mirage. In Chu Yang’s consciousness, it slowly demonstrated the sword’s ability.

This ability was different from that of the sword point; this was

the sword edge's ability. Before the move was even made, a threatening killing aura filled the air. It was a kind of arrogant aura that did not care about anything including heaven and earth.

Whatever that was in front of the sword edge would be cut down!

"The second fragment is the sword edge. The sword edge's power is ultimate, but it also makes people most suspicious. So before you can spread your wings, use it carefully!" The sword spirit coldly reminded him.

Chu Yang was no longer paying attention to what the sword spirit was saying. He was completely immersed in the mysterious sword ability...

And, at this time, his cultivation was unconsciously rising like mad!

If Chu Yang was paying attention, he would have discovered that the sword edge was continually emitting a gentle force that was slowly transforming his meridians and increasing his cultivation...

Seventh grade Martial Master! Breakthrough... beginning of eighth grade, mid-level of eighth grade, peak of eighth grade... unstoppable breakthroughs continued!

Ninth grade, mid-level of ninth grade... peak of ninth grade...

The sword edge still shined as before and still persisted forward. It was like a cold swordsman taking care of the enemies in front of him without any hesitation. From one barrier of cultivation to another, under the sword edge's power, they became like dumb chickens and ornamental dogs and collapsed in the blink of an eye...

Sword Great Master! (TLN: According to chapter 69, he went with the route of Revered Martial Artist in his previous life. I have always thought that Chu Yang chose the martial route, but there is no mistaking the word sword here. We'll just have to wait and see.)

First grade Sword Great Master, peak!

Chapter 239: That damn Nine Tribulations Sword master

The power of the sword edge continued to surge out! It was reckless and lacked any respect for life. It seemed as if it would directly push Chu Yang to the pinnacle if no one stopped it.

“That’s enough!” The sword spirit finally restrained it. Whether it was the sword spirit or Chu Yang who was worried about unstable states, facing the powerful, bullying sword edge, they could only let it get some steam out and not stop it too forcefully…

The domineering sword edge was always the lawless one among the nine fragments of Nine Tribulations Sword!

The sword edge remained indifferent and continued to push hard! Finally, when the sword spirit almost went berserk, the sword spirit stopped. Chu Yang’s state stopped at the peak of second grade Sword Great Master!

Facing such a situation, the sword spirit could only sigh.

Besides taking care of the aftermath, he essentially had no way of stopping it! The sword edge was always the attacking tool and a daring general. Resisting its force would have had an adverse effect!

Chu Yang finally awoke from the mysterious sword state. He let out a long exhale. The four verses of the sword edge was for uniting sword body with sword technique!

He was certain of this.

Use momentum to lead sword energy. Use sword energy to actuate sword move. Use sword move to fuel momentum again. They work together like that until the moment the sword edge drinks blood!

A sword move is violent and tyrannical! It is… arrogant in the

heavens and on earth!

This is the meaning of this sword!

Chu Yang frowned as he was lost in thought. In the sword technique that the sword spirit demonstrated, there was not only madness, bloodiness, killing, but also endless desolation... It was the eternity of loneliness gathered by invincibility.

This kind of state, Chu Yang felt that he could not achieve it in a short amount of time.

Breathing slowly, he opened his eyes and pushed the dirt and rocks back to their place. But as he lifted the blocks up, Chu Yang let out an “oh.” He was so surprised he almost dropped it on his feet.

This... when did my strength become so great? Lifting this thousand pound block feels as if it is nothing at all.

He inadvertently looked at his dantian and became shocked!

If his dantian from before was a tiny puddle, it was now doubtlessly a big pond! Waves of water moved boundlessly!

He tried to move his energy back through the eighth grade Martial Master barrier; it was now an open road without any hindrance. Chu Yang’s eyes involuntarily widened. He continued to direct his energy past the ninth grade Martial Master and made a round without any obstacles...

Shaken, he advanced to first grade Martial Great Master...

At last...

“F*!” He was finally blocked when he tried to pass third grade Martial Great Master. Chu Yang finally jumped.

When he jumped, he forgot that he was holding a big boulder. He unexpectedly jumped more than ten feet high while holding it; then he gently landed...

Looking as if he was in a dream, he placed the blocks back into

their original locations. With the last block, he twisted his body and unintentionally formed a flirtatious pose as he hit it with his butt. That heavy block flew into the air and dropped into the last empty spot... seamlessly!

“Oh god... In the blink of an eye, wow... I am a Martial Great Master already? Plus, I am a second grade Martial Great Master?” Chu Yang scratched his head. He bit his arm hard. A sharp pain gave Minister Chu a rude awakening, “It’s real!”

I broke through!

Even more, I jumped!

Chu Yang walked out as if he was on air. As he walked, he looked around and could not help but be startled.

He saw Gu Du Xing looking at the sky with a serious countenance. Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong also had extremely serious appearances. It was as if there was something that made them very pensive...

As for Ji Mo...

Ji Mo was lying on the ground. His clothes were tattered and his face was battered as laid on the ground like a pig. He also tried to open his swollen eyes and looked up at the sky with shock...

Chu Yang was stunned!

What is this? He followed they gazes and could not help but looked at the sky. But he could only see blue sky and white clouds with whistling cold wind...

There was nothing unusual.

“What’s going on with you guys?” Chu Yang curiously asked. To have the four looking with such faces, it was definitely a major event! Chu Yang was certain of this. But he currently did not see that major event anywhere; this was truly annoying...

“A major event happened!” Gu Du Xing’s gaze remained fixed at

the sky as if he was stubbornly searching for something in the eternal heavens.

“Event?” He watched as Luo Ke Di and company nodded repeatedly. Ji Mo, who was lying on the ground, was also nodding like a pecking chicken. Chu Yang remained confused.

“Nine Tribulations Sword master… has found the second Nine Tribulation Sword fragment!” Gu Du Xing said somberly, “In other words, the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment has returned.”

“Nine Tribulations Sword master… Nine Tribulations Sword? Ah!” Chu Yang was startled. He almost bit his tongue as he stood there dumbfounded. Right away, he felt blood rushing to his brain.

“Yes!” The four nodded simultaneously. All four gazes turned to Chu Yang at once. With the exception of Ji Mo, whose eyes were puffy from being beaten by Gu Du Xing and were not able to open, the other three’s eyes widened as big as those of oxen…

“How did you… know?” Chu Yang stuttered.

“Stop acting stupid!” Gu Du Xing rolled his eyes, “Each time the Nine Tribulations Sword master finds a fragment of the Nine Tribulations Sword, the sky of all of the Nine Heavens would change in appearance. This is a sign…”

“Sign?” Chu Yang’s eyes rolled; he almost collapsed. He almost blurted out: Brothers, you must keep my secret. This is not a joking matter…

Lucky that I did not say anything yet…!

“You don’t know about this?” Gu Du Xing looked at him condescendingly, “It’s a pity that you are a person of the Nine Heavens continents! You don’t even know about Nine Tribulations Sword master?”

“Is he famous?” When Minister Chu asked this question, a smile appeared behind his eyes. That position of waiting to be praised

was too satisfying.

“More than just famous!” Naturally, the four people called out in unison. Each one gave Chu Yang a disdainful look, “That Nine Tribulations Sword master! That Nine Tribulations Sword master... is the idol of all of the Nine Heavens continents! My god, I can’t believe you don’t know about it.”

“Idol?” Chu Yang was internally prideful, but he asked in surprise, “Is he that powerful? Is he also your idol?”

“Of course!” The four called out in unison.

The not so surprising answers of the four made Minister Chu feel as if he had drunken strong liquor. In a dizzying haze, he asked, “This person is very powerful?”

“Not just powerful!” Ji Mo said with a twisted face, “He is the king of assholes and should be chopped a thousand times over. I was kicked out of Middle Three Heavens to come here for training because of that jerk! If I see him, I will give him a beating no matter what! I am just afraid I won’t be able to beat him...”

“Ack...” The edge of Chu Yang’s eyes twitched.

“Yes! This Nine Tribulations Sword master is a punk who just wants to incite chaos! He only needs to show himself, and the world will no longer be at peace!” Luo Ke Di said angrily, “This SOB is a feces poking stick!”

Chu Yang’s face turned black.

“But Nine Tribulations Sword is an item that everyone who use swords like us dream of.” Gu Du Xing remained focused. But before Chu Yang’s mood could improve, he added, “Unfortunately, I don’t know which punk has gotten it by dumb luck. What a waste. If it had fallen into my hands...”

Rui Bu Tong nodded repeatedly, “Right, right. It is just dumb luck... so irritating. If he’s lucky, that’s fine. But he wants to let hell break loose on the world. His grandmother, who has it easy in

this world? Everyone is already struggling, and this punk is going to sit on everyone's head because of a sword... Motherf*..."

Chu Yang's shoulders dropped; he said unconsciously, "I really want to kill and chop some people."

"We do, too!" The four said with one voice, "In particular, we are most interested in the Nine Tribulations Sword master."

Minister Chu's eyes widened as if he had suddenly discovered a new continent. He said, "Whoa! Ji Mo! Hey... my pitiful third brother! What's wrong with you? You look like you have been raped by a bear..."

Ack, changing the subject technique.

"Ah... I was not raped by a bear, but it was something not too different..." Ji Mo cried loudly and looked up, "Big brother, this is all your fault..." He then suddenly widened his eyes and opened his mouth like a cat that was about to spring. He called out with a hoarse voice, "Woah... woah... woah... hey, hey, hey, this... I am seeing a demon..."

He shouted with his hoarse voice. His two swollen eyes even opened as if it was some miracle.

"What is it?" Chu Yang asked in surprised.

At this point, the other three also discovered something strange with Chu Yang.

"Ack... ack..." Gu Du Xing took three steps back in disbelief!

"Woah..." Luo Ke Di's butt plopped right down to the ground; he was stunned!

"Woah..." Rui Bu Tong's whole body staggered; he was at a loss of words!

"What is it?" Chu Yang frowned.

"You broke through again..." Ji Mo spoke up. He pinched himself and yelled out in pain. Ji Mo jumped right up. He was lying down,

but he was now erect. He hyperventilated then he ground his teeth, “There is no heavenly justice! There is no heavenly justice…”

Chu Yang finally understood; he stood triumphantly with his nose in the air and said humbly, “Ah, I accidently broke through a few grades. It’s nothing. I only went from seventh grade Martial Master to second grade Martial Great Master. It’s not worth mentioning… not worth mentioning.”

He smiled from ear to ear, “Compared to you heavenly talents of great clans from Middle Three Heavens, such a speed… is embarrassing…”

“There is no heavenly justice…” Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di called out bitterly, “Such quick breakthroughs, there is really no heavenly justice. After breaking through, you deliberately poked fun at us. There is no heavenly justice…”

Chu Yang laughed loudly.

After learning that Ji Mo brought it upon himself to fight with Gu Du Xing, because Chu Yang became enlightened in the way of martial arts after fighting with Gu Du Xing, Chu Yang became even more joyful.

Chapter 240: Nine tribulations fate?

“Is it that?” While Ji Mo was asking himself this, his countenance was saying, “Definitely!” If that was not the case, then what else could have cause his martial cultivation to increase so much?

With the exception of the way of martial arts, there was no other possible explanation.

Therefore, Ji Mo felt that it was especially unfair... How was it that Chu Yang immediately understood the way of martial arts after one fight and he turned into a pig’s face instead? The difference between the two was too great.

Besides being confused and annoyed, Ji Mo was also a little unwilling to accept and was even eager to try more. Perhaps if he fought a little more, he would be able to reach enlightenment.

On the side, Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong were of the same calculating thought as their eyes fixated on Gu Du Xing: Just because Ji Mo was not able to does not mean that we can’t do it. Given Ji Mo’s pig brain, how could he be enlightened? His intelligence is far inferior to ours.

So the two independent minds simultaneously wanted to give it a try...

Gu Du Xing coldly looked at the three people clearly understanding their intentions. Hmm, if you guys dare to fight with this second brother, I will definitely beat you twice as worse as Ji Mo...

Sure enough, he did not have to wait long. Luo Ke Di cockily jumped out. He yelled in an arrogant and domineering tone, “Awooh... Second senior, I want to fight with you!”

The moment Gu Du Xing heard the words second senior, his eyeballs almost turned red.

If you guys are looking for abuse, and I don't give it to you, then it would be a waste of your effort in calling out the two words second senior...

About four hours later, Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong were made honest.

Currently, the two of them were lying together with Ji Mo. They glanced at each other and were not able to distinguish who was who. All three were alike... swollen... like three triplets!

*****

A tavern in Iron Cloud Citadel!

The person in blue was tilting a wine jug and was slowly drinking. The moment the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment appeared, he suddenly stood straight up and disappeared. The next moment, he appeared on top of the tallest structure in Iron Cloud Citadel.

Standing amidst the milky white sky, he looked at the strange phenomenon and muttered to himself, "Nine Tribulations Sword master! Nine Tribulations Sword Master is finally starting to mature... for the Nine Heavens continents... will this be a blessing or a curse?"

He stood in a trance for a while, then said softly, "It seems the other old guys will also have to be bothered. From now on, Upper Three Heavens will have great turbulence... How long will it take for the Nine Tribulations Master to mature? If he is slow, then Upper Three Heavens will be at war for a long time."

Shaking his head, he laughed and said, "Nine Tribulations Sword master appears in Lower Three Heavens, but those most affected are in Upper Three Heavens. What a bother."

*****

The moment Nine Tribulations Sword flashed, Diwu Qing Rou was strolling in the garden with Gao Sheng next to him. They were

talking about something or another when heaven and earth fell into an intense white glow. Diwu Qing Rou's countenance momentarily shifted, "Is it the Nine Tribulations Sword master?"

Gao Sheng showed a look of shock, "Yes, according to the clan's records, such a phenomenon indicates that Nine Tribulations Sword master has found the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment. The sword edge!"

"Mm..." Diwu Qing Rou took two leisurely steps and paused, "The second fragment, sword edge... if I am not mistaken, it is the killing force!"

Gao Sheng's face looked somewhat surprised, "The Prime Minister is correct." He could not imagine that when it came to Nine Tribulations Sword, Diwu Qing Rou had such understanding.

"Nine Tribulations Sword appears, heaven and earth gets overturned." Diwu Qing Rou thought for a moment. Then he continued to walk and said, "This Nine Tribulations Sword master, could he be part of some state? Or...?"

Gao Sheng thought a little and said, "This is really not written down. But, according to ancient records, Nine Tribulations Sword has always been a legend of Jiang Hu. Throughout the Nine Heavens, it exists almost as a myth. Plus, legends of Nine Tribulations Sword mostly exists in Upper Three Heavens. Even in Middle Three Heavens, it is scattered. He could not be part of any state."

Gao Sheng left something unsaid: States? What are these states? How can they retain Nine Tribulations Sword?

"Hmm." Diwu Qing Rou smiled and nodded. He thought for a moment before letting out a sigh. It was as if that was a sigh of relief. His face unexpectedly relaxed, "I also thought that way. If Nine Tribulations Sword does not belong any state, then I will not go against Nine Tribulations Sword. This way, I can rest easy..."

Gao Sheng wondered to himself: The Prime Minister can rest easy? From your tone, it is clear that a burden has been lifted from your shoulders… Why?

However, Gao Sheng also did not want to ask about this matter. If Diwu Qing Rou did not want to say, asking would have been useless.

At the same time, in the great clans of Middle Three Heavens and the major forces of Upper Three Heavens, many people were directing their gazes into the distance with a worried look on their faces.

*****

Upper Three Heavens, the Chu clan.

An old man in a black robe stood with his arms folded at the top of Ask the Heavens Tower of the Chu clan. He did not speak for a long time and looked like a statue. It was not until another old man in black appeared next to him that he said softly, “Nine Tribulations Sword… is it still not determined?”

“Still not! If it has been determined, then all of Nine Heavens would be in a rampage.”

“Hmm, the second fragment has appeared.” The old man wearing the black robe said quietly, “The appearance of the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment symbolize the start of the Nine Tribulations Sword master’s maturity. What are your thoughts on this matter?”

The second man in black had a pair of short brows. It was as if someone had chopped off part of his brows. Hearing this, he said, “We’ll have to depend on fate. You don’t need to worry, sir.”

At a glance, he did not seem much younger than the other old man, but he called him sir.

“Fate… Ha…” The man in black sneered and said, “Nine Tribulations Sword’s appearance is to change the fate of the Nine

Heavens continents! Our Chu clan is currently prosperous, but the future is worth worrying about! This time, many thousands-of-years-old monsters would surely appear. Give orders to the clan to be cautious."

The old man with the short eyebrows looked embarrassed and said, "Yes, I will give the order."

"Nine Tribulations Sword... Nine Tribulations Sword... The word tribulation is hard to deal with." The old man in black's countenance seemed to be filled with endless worries.

"Is the Nine Tribulations Sword fate's tribulations?" The old man with the broken eyebrowwas disturbed.

"Not only is it fate's tribulations!" The old man in black sighed, "Each time Nine Tribulations Sword appears, nine major clan or forces as powerful as the heavens would appear. In Upper Three Heavens, they would dominate for thousands of years without falling! And those nine major clans corresponds to the nine tribulations of the Nine Tribulations Sword master!"

"This... can it be?" The old man with the broken eyebrows exclaimed, "All of the Nine Heavens continents, how long have they been in existence?"

"Haha, the records of the Nine Heavens continents has it that it has been a total of seventeen thousand years since the Nine Heavens continents has living things on it! This is such a joke! It truly makes people dumbfounded; I don't know whether to laugh or to cry!" The old man in black said gravely, "Our Chu clan is not part of the nine major forces; we only rose up for over a thousand years. But, that year, our founding ancestor traveled with Li Yun Tian for a short amount of time. And it was because of that short time period that created our founding ancestor's legend and created Chu clan's fifteen hundred years status!"

"Those three short months became the proudest thing in our founding ancestor's life!"

“Li Yun Tian? Is Li Yun Tian the lord of the Li clan from more than a thousand years ago? One of the nine powerful forces in Upper Three Heavens?” The old man with the broken eyebrows was startled.

“Yes.” The old man in black said casually, “In those three months, our founding ancestor wrote down Li Yun Tian’s words. Among them…”

When he got to this point, he suddenly became silent as if lost in thought.

“What?”

“Nine Tribulations Sword comes out once every ten thousand years… One outing to shock the world. Since then till now, it has come out eight times. And Li Yun Tian was born eight thousand years after the last time! I wonder if I will have the blessing of meeting the ninth Nine Tribulations Sword master.” He old man in black said gently.

“It appears every ten thousand years? It has appeared eight times?” The old man with the broken eyebrows exclaimed loudly and said with his eyes widened, “Are you saying that the Nine Heavens’ Jiang Hu has existed for at least eighty thousand years?”

“Yes! You are also not stupid.” The old man in black grunted.

“But the history of the continents…”

The old man with the broken eyebrows did not finish before the old in black interrupted him, “History of the continents? What is history? At most, history is just a few lines of writing that could be changed at any time. Anyone who could write is capable of changing history!”

He sneered, “No matter how you write it, the people are already dead. They definitely can’t climb out of their coffins to stop you.”

The old man with the broken eyebrows gasped, “So… sir, the record of our founding ancestor… could…?”

“You may not!”

The old man in black flatly refused, “There are too many secrets in there; it would be better if you people don’t look at it!”

He grunted and said, “Say... The Chu clan, right now, has no outstanding talents. The whole bunch is just ordinary. Especially the youngsters, they are even more stupid! Letting you people know these secrets would lead to a calamity instead!”

The old man with short eyebrows remained stunned for a while before lamenting, “There are some with abilities. Even some of the youngsters already reached Revered level... Compared to their peers from the other major clans, they are not bad.”

“Gibberish! I am talking about super talents. I am talking about the potential to advance!” The old man in black said angrily, “Right now, Nine Tribulations Sword master has appeared. If our Chu clan has one person selected for one of those nine fragments... That would be a great fortune! What good is it to be invincible among mice? Even if we become champions... we would just still be mice!”

“One of the nine fragments of Nine Tribulations Sword?” The old man with the broken eyebrows was startled. He did not know what else to say.

“Nine Tribulations Sword... was divided into nine fragments: sword point, sword edge, sword spine, sword collar, sword mouthpiece, sword hilt, sword grip, sword tassel, and sword spirit!” The old man in black said worriedly, “Why is it that all of the clans in Middle Three Heavens sent people out for training the moment Nine Tribulations Sword appears? This is, of course, a kind of tradition. But how was this tradition created? No one in Middle Three Heavens knows about this.”

“But this secret is recorded clearly in Upper Three Heavens. Each Nine Tribulations Sword master always has nine powerful people assisting him! They correspond to the nine fragments of Nine

Tribulations Sword! Nine fragments united, one sword dances in the vast heavens! That is how a ten-thousand-year fate of the Nine Heavens' continents starts..."

Chapter 241: I have to go to Great Zhao!

“Then... why don’t our Upper Three Heavens send people down for training?” The old man with broken eyebrows asked hurriedly.

“Because Nine Tribulations Sword master will begin to traverse the world from Upper Three Heavens!” The old man in black clasped his hands behind his back, “If Upper Three Heavens go down for training, there will be a disruption in the flow of fate... It will create permanent chaos in the Nine Heavens!”

“Thus, Upper Three Heavens cannot join in. Even if we are to train, we can only train in Middle Three Heavens and not go down to Lower Three Heavens! If any clan breaches this rule, it will be attacked by all other forces until it is completely destroyed! This is the unspoken and ironclad law of the Nine Heavens!”

“There is only one clan in Upper Three Heavens that can go down to Lower Three Heavens without being restricted by this law. But only once, and only one person can go...” A strange look flashed in the old man’s eyes as he said somberly.

“Then the requirements for those nine people?” The old man with broken eyebrows continued to ask

“It’s all luck!” The old man in black sighed, “No one really knows!”

After a long time, the sky returned to normal. The old man in black said slowly, “Is Fei Ling’s son found yet?”

“Still not yet...” The old man with broken eyebrows sighed, “It has been seventeen years already; I think it is becoming hopeless.”

“Bastard!” The old man in black yelled out, “Because of this one grandson being out there, the relationship between the Yang clan and the Chu clan has been strained. After more than a decade of friction, old allies are practically enemies! How could we easily let it go? At this crucial time of Nine Tribulations Sword master

appearing, if we cannot get the Yang clan to become our ally again, the Chu clan would be useless alone. The consequences are unimaginable! Continue to find him without any negligence!”

“Yes.”

“Unfortunately, the Nine Tribulations Sword master already found the second Nine Tribulations Sword fragment and is starting to mature. Even if we find that child, it’s probably...” He grew angrier as he thought about it, “Chu Xiong Cheng! You managed to lose your own grandson. Why didn’t you get lost as well?”

The old man with broken eyebrows looked sad, “I...”

“I what? Get lost!” The old man in black growled and immediately became a clump of dark smoke. He disappeared without a trace. He told someone to get lost, but before that other person could do anything, he had already disappeared.

“Ah, it’s the same thing every time we talk about this...” The old man rubbed his broken eyebrows, “As if I wanted to toss my grandson away? This is too unreasonable.”

Sighing, his body flashed, and he also disappeared...

*****

In the northern-most region of Upper Three Heavens, in the vast wasteland of snow and ice. Besides the snow and ice, there was only darkness.

But in this moment, Nine Tribulations Sword’s aura rose up. It suddenly added a milky white light to this world as if a door was quietly opening...

In the howling blizzard, an excited voice screamed out, “Come! Meet the conditions; go out!”

*****

Chu Yang was currently with Gu Du Xing and company. He secretively called them into his room.

“Come in; I have something good.”

“What’s so good?”

Chu Yang smiled and pulled out a jade bottle. Holding four cups, he said slowly, “I am inviting you guys to a drink of water.”

“Drink water…” The four were speechless; what are we drinking water for?

Chu Yang took off the cap of the jade bottle and filled the four cups, “Please.”

An exotic aroma suddenly filled the room. Smelling this aroma, all four felt their minds becoming excited. The four cups sat on the table with liquid as clear as jade. Within the water, a faint trace of green was glistening.

Gu Du Xing’s countenance showed a puzzled expression. Looked at these four strange cups of water, he seemed to have figured out something and suddenly exclaimed loudly, “Vitality Spring Water?!”

“What?” Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo simultaneously said in alarm. No one had expected to encounter this priceless treasure here!

Vitality Spring Water was capable of strengthening a person’s foundation. It could increase the vitality of all plants or animals in this world. When it came to injuries, its healing effect was even more mystical. Plus, as long as it was an external injury, the effect was even better! With internal injuries, it was also beneficial.

Moreover, in nurturing medicinal herbs, this thing is especially miraculous! One drop of Vitality Spring Water could cause a dying medicinal herb to live again and regain its vitality; it also increased the potency of the medicinal herb by a year.

According to legends, this kind of spring water was only accessible for the medicinal clans of Upper Three Heavens. And its annual production was only a few drops. It was considered a family heirloom and was heavily guarded.

Currently, four filled cups unexpectedly appeared here.

“Yes, this is Vitality Spring Water.” Chu Yang smiled and said, “I drank it already. Hmm, this spring water is really good. Once you drink it, any injuries you sustain later will not leave any scars…”

“Scars…” The four looked at their Big Brother as if he was a monster.

Vitality Spring Water is so precious, and you want us to drink it so we won’t have any scars?

“If you keep delaying, its medicinal potency will dissipate…” Chu Yang smiled as he reminded them.

“Ah…” The actions of the four were as quick as a flash. They all chugged it right down with the exception of Gu Du Xing who suddenly stopped just as he was about to drink it. Taking out a small jade bottle, he carefully poured the spring water into it.

“What are you doing?” Chu Yang asked with a strange expression.

“Drinking it like this is such a waste.” Gu Du Xing smiled and said thoughtfully, “I am saving it for Sister Xiao Miao… Sister Xiao Miao is a girl, she usually cares about her appearance. The part about not leaving any scars would be enough to make her happy already…”

“Fool… I still have more! If I am giving it to you, you can go ahead and drink it!” Chu Yang was annoyed, amused and touched at the same time.

“You really still have more?” Gu Du Xing looked at Chu Yang suspiciously. Seeing him nodding in affirmation, Gu Du Xing was assured and drained all of the spring water in one gulp.

At this time, Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di had a rare moment of silence. They did not laugh or make jokes. Their gazes at Gu Du Xing was unexpectedly filled with respect.

Men who always thought about their lovers was rare in a world where mistresses were as numerous as clouds! Such sincerity, who would dare to make fun of it!

“I don’t have too much of this spring water. It was by luck that I have it. Besides what I have saved for Xiao Wu and Dong Wu Shang, I have a few cups left. Remember not to tell anyone outside about it.” Chu Yang carefully reminded them.

While he still had a whole spring, these things were more valuable if they were rare.

One could see more sincerity in a small amount. If it was a big amount, would it not be cheapened? Of course Chu Yang did not mind letting his brothers use this, but outsiders... it was better to keep them away...

Even though Chu Yang was being a little sneaky; his intention was for the good of the entire group.

“Hmm.” The four seriously replied. If this kind of spring water was revealed to the outside, there would definitely be great turmoil. With their strength, there was definitely no security...

After finishing this, the four brothers were a little excited; Ji Mo suggested that they go out and have some romantic encounters. The other three replied with contempt. Chu Yang went to Bu Tian Pavilion alone. Shoulder to shoulder, the four went out to some unknown destination.

Right after he gave Wu Qian Qian a cup of Vitality Spring Water, a person from the palace came with His Highness’s summon.

Chu Yang sighed, “Each time I have something good, I get an invitation from His Majesty. How is his nose so good?” Wu Qian Qian laughed. She took out a new black robe and said, “Chu Yang, why don’t you try this on and see if it fits you?”

“You made this?” Chu Yang’s eyes narrowed.

“Mm.” Wu Qian Qian’s face reddened, “I just did a rough

estimate."

Chu Yang nodded as he sighed internally. Unable to turn down a person's goodwill, he said, "Let me try it on." Then he immediately put the robe on. It was a perfect fit, not too big and not too small.

Wu Qian Qian chucked as she judged his appearance, "Acceptable. Go ahead and wear it."

"Why do I feel like something is off?" Chu Yang looked suspiciously at the black robe he was wearing.

"It's always like that with new clothes." Wu Qian Qian's face became flushed as she hurried him along, "His Majesty is looking for you. Go."

Watching Chu Yang leave, Wu Qian Qian quietly lifted his old robe and gently sniffed. Her gaze seemed lost as she sighed softly.

*****

"Diwu Qing Rou sent a letter? He requested for Tang Xin Sheng's family back?" Chu Yang looked at Tie Bu Tian in surprise.

"Yes." Tie Bu Tian was wearing the imperial robe with a slight look of fatigue on his face.

"Your Majesty's intentions?" Chu Yang placed Diwu Qing Rou's letter back down.

"Returning them is fine; not returning them is fine." Tie Bu Tian said, "The key is your thoughts!"

"I think that we should... return them!" Chu Yang said slowly, "I want to make a trip to Great Zhao. If Diwu Qing Rou wants to invite me and sends me such a good opportunity... how could I just let it pass by? Plus, keeping Tang Xin Sheng's widow and orphan here is useless."

"You want to go to Great Zhao?" Tie Bu Tian stood up, "No!"

"There is nothing that can't be done. Diwu Qing Rou could mess with us; why can't we bother him back?" Chu Yang calmly said,

“Making chaos for Great Zhao internally, this is our perfect opportunity.”

“Too dangerous!” Tie Bu Tian slowly sat back down and said, “Even here, we are already facing danger from all directions, let alone going to Diwu Qing Rou’s headquarters. That is a place filled with peril. And your identity is so sensitive…”

“Because of that, I must go.” Chu Yang said casually, “Being blindly defensive like this, there has to come a time when we take the offensive.”

Tie Bu Tian knew that Chu Yang had already decided; he could not help but feel sad and lost, “With you going to Great Zhao, what will happen to Bu Tian Pavilion?”

“Bu Tian Pavilion will remain the same. I am going to Great Zhao, but King of Hell Chu is not.” Chu Yang said softly, “Wu Qian Qian is now capable of working on her own.”

Tie Bu Tian stood up and paced back and forth slowly, “But you must promise… you must come back alive!”

Chu Yang laughed, “Rest assured, Your Majesty. In this world, the person who is capable of taking my life has not appeared yet!”

Hearing his joke, Tie Bu Tian did not laugh. He only looked at Chu Yang deeply and said, “When you are there… you must make your safety the first priority! If something can’t be done, you must retreat quickly. If there are no opportunities, we could always create them. But if you are gone… where am I going to find the second minister for Bu Tian Pavilion?”

Sensing Tie Bu Tian’s sincere concerns, Chu Yang said softly, “I will.”

I am quite helpless myself. I am not that brave, but the third Nine Tribulations Sword fragment is… in the center of the continent!

Chapter 242: Dong Wu Shang returns

Tie Bu Tian obviously had great concerns for this trip to Great Zhao of Chu Yang's. Even when Chu Yang gave him Vitality Spring Water, he carelessly drank all of it in one gulp. He wanted to say something several times, but did not. He paced back and forth in the great hall with a frown.

"Can we leave within seven days?" Chu Yang asked when Tang Xin Sheng's family could leave the citadel.

Tie Bu Tian said, "Diwu Qing Rou did not send anyone to bring them back; why should we send people to bring them home? There is also the fact that the world is covered in snow and ice... Let's discuss about this when spring comes..."

Chu Yang frowned as he felt Tie Bu Tian was acting a little emotional. It seemed like he was not hesitant about returning Tang Xin Sheng's family; instead, he did not want Chu Yang to leave!

"Uh, not a problem. I won't be going with them anyway." Chu Yang said.

"Then when are you leaving?"

"When the time is right, I will leave." Chu Yang smiled.

Given Chu Yang's answer, Tie Bu Tian sighed.

Seeing there was nothing else, Chu Yang said farewell. When he got the door, Tie Bu Tian suddenly called out, "Minister Chu! Chu Yang!"

Chu Yang turned around and looked at Tie Bu Tian in puzzlement, "Your Majesty, what is it?"

Tie Bu Tian moved his lips as if he wanted to say something. But he remained silent in the end. Turning elsewhere, he said casually, "If Minister Chu wants to go to Great Zhao, then... before leaving,

come and tell me first."

Chu Yang replied, "I know." Turning to leaving he thought to himself. Does that need to be said? Wouldn't I have to tell you when I leave?

Three more days passed, and Dong Wu Shang finally returned with great excitement. It was not known how he got this load, but he had unexpectedly pulled back half a wagon of black steel!

Just because Chu Yang had said to him, "It is better to have extra; otherwise, it might not be completed..."

As a result, looking this half-full wagon, the five brothers were speechless. Given the weight of black steel, this half a wagon was probably more than ten thousand pounds!

Eight horses were pulling the wagon leaving two very deep imprints of the wagon wheels in the ground... Iron Cloud Citadel's roads were very good; these very heavy things could not create such deep imprints. But there was a great snow fall a few days ago, making the roads become covered with a soft layer of snow...

"Cough, cough, because I had to prepare the black steel, I am a little late." Dong Wu Shang wiped the sweat off his face and shrugged.

"My idol!" Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong shamelessly called out with wide eyes, "So much black steel, where did you get it from? The gates to Lower Three Heavens... How did you get it through?"

"I... placed them on my head..." There was an unexpected trace of red of Dong Wu Shang's dark face as he stammered, "I placed each block on top of my head... walked in... walked out, and then walked in again..."

Ji Mo's butt dropped right to the ground. He remained speechless for a long while, and then he suddenly burst into crazy laughter, "I really admire you... Dong Wu Shang, I, Ji Mo, is in complete

admiration for the very first time... Haha, on your head? You walked in and out? In and out? Oh my... You are killing me with laughter..."

Luo Ke Di smacked his butt and made a popping sound. He laughed uncontrollably, "You are worthy of being fourth brother! This cow... is way above my head!"

This was Luo Ke Di's signature move. Whenever he was excited, he would smack his butt loudly and even call "baa, baa" rhythmically.

Gu Du Xing also could not hold in his laughter. A laugh escaped from him, and he coughed endlessly.

"Big brother... Is this... enough?" Dong Wu Shang rubbed his hands together as he looked at Chu Yang eagerly, "If it's not enough, I will go back and get more..."

"Enough! More than enough!" Chu Yang let out a dry cough, "I am just surprised... All of this... you brought them here by yourself?"

"Cough, cough. They sent me to the gates of Iron Cloud Citadel and left." Dong Wu Shang coughed dryly, "I know big brother does not want our clans to know about this place. While I cannot hide from people of the clan, but... as long as I act like I don't want them to know, they will keep one eye closed..."

"Oh, not bad!" Chu Yang gave a rare praise.

"On my trip back this time, I had a match with my father!" Dong Wu Shang said happily, "I surprised him. Haha... I managed a sneak attack and almost succeeded..."

"Your father didn't break your legs?" Gu Du Xing curled his lips. Dong Wu Shang's father was famous for being strict!

"No! No! How could he do that?" Dong Wu Shang shook his head repeatedly, "My father did not have enough encouragement for me... Big brother, when will you begin?"

“What are you so anxious?” Chu Yang rolled his eyes, “Are you worried I might be running away? Plus, what do you want it to look like? How heavy? More than ten thousand pounds of steel… If I use the whole thing, will you be able to lift it?”

“The heavier the better!” Dong Wu Shang gritted his teeth, “Big brother, if you could, make me a five hundred pound saber! I think that would be good!”

“Five hundred pounds!” The five people exclaimed simultaneously. An ordinary sword was about six or seven pounds. A special one was twenty or thirty pounds at best. As for the sword that Chu Yang gave Ji Mo, it was a little heavier at fifty pounds.

Of course, these were swords, not sabers. But black sabers from Dong Wu Shang’s clan was normally eighty or ninety pounds. In fact, even Dong Wu Shang’s father, leader of the Dong clan, only used a two hundred pound saber!

And this guy was blabbing out five hundred pounds. Could it be that he wanted to squish people with his saber?

“Training with the saber is also a form of cultivation!” Dong Wu Shang raised his brows. A bone-chilling aura suddenly surged up, “When this five hundred pound saber becomes as light as a feather in my hand that is when my saber arts cultivation is successful! Since ancient times, the saber has always been without a champion; no one has ever reached the peak! The highest accomplishment has only been Saber Emperor! Some people say that this is the fate of the saber! But I, Dong Wu Shang, want to challenge the saber’s fate! Fight the world and see who would be on top!”

“Okay!” Chu Yang said loudly, “If that is the case, then I will fulfill your wish!”

“Thank you, big brother!” Dong Wu Shang put one leg forward. With his left arm in front of his chest, and his right behind his back, he face Chu Yang and bowed respectfully, “I will depend on

big brother!”

This was the respectful way the saber artists treated others!

Chu Yang’s body suddenly moved. He stood straight like a sword leaving its sheath. With a loud sound, he held his fist, “No need for the formality.”

Ji Mo and Gu Du Xing were surprised.

Until now, they did not know what Chu Yang’s forte was. Now they learned that his focus was sword!

Chu Yang also did not want to tell them. He knew the personalities of these brothers. Once they determined his focus, their stubborn drive for excellence would end up causing them to force him to train with the sword all the time...

However, today, Dong Wu Shang used the ultimate salute of saber arts; how could he not return the same courtesy? Plus, he had to use the way of the sword to do so.

If it was an ordinary person, Chu Yang would not have paid any attention. But Dong Wu Shang was his brother!

Respecting your brothers was respecting yourself!

“Thank you, big brother.” Dong Wu Shang pulled out a piece of goat skin from his chest and said, “This is the design I want!”

Everyone gathered to look. Seeing the saber drawn on it, they all nodded quietly.

Dong Wu Shang’s saber did not look too different from ordinary sabers. But it was about sharpness and power. Plus, it was focused on smoothness so all unnecessary decorations were left out!

The entire thing was a saber!

In fact, even the guard was just a slight outward curve.

One only needed to look at the drawing to imagine that if such a saber was forged, how domineering it would be!

“Good!” Chu Yang carefully folded up the goat skin and put it away, “Bring all of the black steel into my room.”

Dong Wu Shang said happily, “Big brother, you are a really good person!” Surprisingly, he did not ask for help from others and carried the black steel in block by block.

His reason was: I want to use my own effort do everything I can! That way, the saber will truly be mine!

This reason was a very stubborn and arrogant reason, but everyone understood how Dong Wu Shang felt.

This saber would be his friend for the rest of his life!

In the evening, Chu Yang used Nine Tribulations Sword to absorb all of this black steel. After absorption by Nine Tribulations Sword, all the black steel became one large chunk.

Estimating the amount of material, Chu Yang nodded silently. It was lucky that Dong Wu Shang brought so much; otherwise, there might not have been enough!

Currently, everything here weighted less than a thousand pounds. Chu Yang raised his hand and put all of this black steel into Nine Tribulations space.

Right after that, the sword spirit controlled the sword point as it spun around this chunk of black steel. A saber, based on Dong Wu Shang’s requirements, quickly formed!

A mighty yet smooth and elegant saber! Wherever it was, it would surely have a majestic aura.

Looking at the newly created saber, Chu Yang nodded with satisfaction. Compared to Dong Wu Shang’s requirements, this saber was about an inch longer, half an inch narrower, and weighted approximately five hundred seventy pounds!

At a glance, it was no different from an ordinary saber; no one would ever expect that the weight of this saber would be so

terrifying!

Chu Yang admired it for a while before finally putting the saber into Nine Tribulations space.

It could not be out any longer. In any case, he would have to wait a few days. As for the name of the saber... This was Dong Wu Shang's business. But one thing was certain; with this saber, Dong Wu Shang's cultivation would be even more frightening than it was in the previous life!

The next morning, Dong Wu Shang hastily ran over and banged on Chu Yang's door, "Big brother..."

The moment he stepped in, he shriek, "Huh? Where is the black steel?"

"I already took it away... How can I forge anything in here? You won't even let me sleep?" Chu Yang said sleepily.

"You're really powerful!" Dong Wu Shang looked in amazement as he scratched his head. Last night, he drank Vitality Spring Water and went to sleep immediately. He had been very tired these past few days. But even if he was more tired than this... With ten thousand pounds of black steel missing, how could he not hear any noises...?

This could only be seen as... magical!

"Dong Wu Shang... I want to ask you something." Chu Yang's countenance suddenly became serious, "On this trip back, did you hear about anything happening at the Mo clan?"

Chapter 243: Chu Yang's killing intent

"The Mo clan?" Dong Wu Shang blinked a few times and said, "The Mo clan and our Dong clan are north and south. The distance from each other is too great. I don't know what the situation is. But I do know that after Mo Tian Ji returned to the clan, he was immediately sent to Cang Lan battlefront."

"Huh?" Chu Yang frowned.

"I am not too clear about this, but when Mo Tian Ji left, he left with a great force. I heard that he even brought a cavalry with him and robbed like a madman as he went along. Plus, he intentionally went the long way and visited everywhere. He first went to the Ji clan for a while. For some reason, he argued with the Ji clan. Then he headed south and fought with the Luo clan. Afterward, he destroyed a shop of the Luo clan. Worst of all, he burned down a saber workshop of our Black Saber clan!"

"All of Middle Three Heavens know that the second young master of the Mo clan has gone crazy..." Dong Wu Shang grunted and said, "If it was not for the fact that I was in a rush to return here, I would have definitely chased that bastard and given him a beating!"

Chu Yang's brows pinched tighter and tighter. An icy emotion flashed from his eyes, and he punched the table next to his bed. With a bam, the table shattered to pieces. Chu Yang gritted his teeth and said, "Damn the Mo clan!"

Chu Yang understood Mo Tian Ji more than anyone else in this world!

If these things were done by a playboy young master from a clan in Middle Three Heavens, there would have been nothing strange about it. In fact, if a cold and calm person like Gu Du Xing went crazy and did these things, it would not have been a shock. However, only Mo Tian Ji would definitely never do such things!

Given Mo Tian Ji's character, doing these things was equivalent to a normal person going crazy! But something impossible was done by someone who could have possibly done it.

Then there must be some deep meaning within.

Chu Yang thought about the meanings behind these things that Mo Tian Ji did! Perhaps, after Mo Tian Ji returned, he is not able to leave or cannot go down to Lower Three Heavens. Therefore, he could only use these methods to send a secret message to me.

While they only met briefly one night, Mo Tian Ji knew that, in this world, the people that would lay their lives on the line for Mo Qing Wu were himself and Chu Yang.

Thus, there were some things he wanted Chu Yang to know.

And the clans that Mo Tian Ji harassed were the clans of the five people staying with Chu Yang!

Mo Tian Ji did such earth-shattering things and even placed himself in danger just to send Chu Yang a single message: Mo Qing Wu's situation is currently bad!

The Ji clan was their relations, and Mo Tian Ji still caused trouble with them. This meant that relatives were not to be trusted; there was fighting in the clan.

With the Luo clan, they were longtime enemies. His fighting with the Luo clan said that the situation was very serious, very egregious, and deadly.

His making trouble with the Gu clan, a longtime ally, said there was betrayal between brothers!

The burning of the Black Saber clan's workshop told Chu Yang that the saber had been taken away!

At the same time, all of this also told Chu Yang that his opponent was very powerful! Even Mo Tian Ji had to go to Cang Lan battlefront. This warned Chu Yang to be cautious and plan

carefully before making a move!

Chu Yang ground his teeth and asked slowly, “The eldest young master of the Mo clan, is his name… Mo… Tian… Yun?”

“Yes!” Dong Wu Shang thought for moment.

“Mo Tian Yun. According to tradition, if the Nine Tribulations Sword master appears, then the disciples of Middle Three Heavens are sent down for training… This Mo Tian Yun, has he gone down to Lower Three Heavens?” Chu Yang asked lightly.

“Yes!” Dong Wu Shang could feel the hair on the back of his neck standing on ends.

When Chu Yang spoke, he looked normal. However, for some reason, Dong Wu Shang could feel a killing intent so thick that it was almost solid.

Could it be that Chu Yang wants to kill Mo Tian Yun?

The two men have never had any confrontation… Plus, not too long ago, Chu Yang saved Mo Tian Yun’s sister, Mo Qing Wu. The Mo clan should be thanking him. If Chu Yang ever goes to Middle Three Heavens, it would be very likely that the Mo clan becomes one of his trusted allies.

How could Chu Yang want to kill a descendant of his future ally?

Plus… this kind of killing intent is the type of mortal enemies!

“Call everyone in. There are some things I want to discuss about.” Chu Yang said with a scowl.

Dong Wu Shang was startled and turned to go find the rest of the people.

Within moments, Gu Du Xing and company were gathered in Chu Yang’s room.

“Today is the first time us six brothers officially sit down like this. It is also the first time we have had a discussion together.” Chu Yang did not bother with formalities and went straight to the

point, “I want to talk about your next step.”

The five people simultaneous sat straight up. While this big brother was young, and his cultivation level was the weakest among the six, everyone knew that, given Chu Yang’s advancement speed, he would probably surpass them all in less than a year.

“It will soon be Ji Mo’s birthday, and Ji Mo would have to go home. In fact, I feel that all of you should go home. This place will be okay with Gu Du Xing and me.” Chu Yang said slowly.

“Why?” Everyone seemed reluctant. It was not easy to find brothers they could trust and rely on with their lives. How could they part from each other so easily?

“Think about this. Compared to Mo Tian Ji, how are you guys?” Chu Yang shot a glance across everyone’s faces.

“He is better!” Gu Du Xing was frank. If others were better, he would just say so.

Dong Wu Shang slowly nodded.

“How about compared to Mo Tian Yun?”

“He is also better.”

“Well, how about compared to the Ao clan’s eldest young master, Ao Xie Yun?” Chu Yang slowly asked.

“He is also... better...”

There was a touch of shame on Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang’s faces.

“The intelligence of anyone here is no less than them. But, whether it is tactics or calculation or dealing with others... even cultivation level, you are all less than them. In truth, these people are a few years older than you, but the key reason is...” Chu Yang said solemnly, “You have too little experience!”

“In other words, you have not dealt with enough challenges! You

have rarely dealt with setbacks!" Chu Yang's gaze gradually brightened as he spoke, "Therefore, you all must make up for this shortcoming. That is the only way you can truly grow!"

At this point, Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang, Ji Mo and company all nodded.

These words of Chu Yang touched an important issue.

"I want to stay in one place with all of you, but that is not possible. So I will send you all away!" Chu Yang said, "If we all stay in one place, there will be friends around whenever anything happens. Whether it is Mo Tian Ji or Mo Tian Yun, their strength and wisdom cannot compare to all six of us together! Our strength is great, but our individual strengths will never grow."

"When I speak of individual strength, it is tactics and experience." Chu Yang added, "Therefore, staying together for too long is a big disadvantage for all of you!"

"We must separate! Each of you must weather through storms and grow by his own effort." Chu Yang concluded.

"This is not an issue. After returning, I will ask my big brother to give me a few responsibilities in the clan." Dong Wu Shang nodded and said, "My big brother already asked me many times, but I didn't want to. So he beat me up many times... He is also not afraid that I would steal his clan leader position..."

Luo Ke Di rolled his eyes and lamented, "Looking at your saber-crazy personality, would you still want to steal the clan leader position..."

Dong Wu Shang glared back.

"There is no problem on my part." Ji Mo sighed, "My eldest brother is the laziest. Besides beating me up, he doesn't do anything... Both of us ignore clan matters. If I return and say one word, my father would probably be overjoyed."

"On my part, there is an issue..." Luo Ke Di frowned, "My eldest

brother has great desire for power. He would probably not give me any power when I come home…”

“So you must fight for it!” Everyone else spoke with one voice, “Deal with your eldest brother!”

Luo Ke Di shivered…

“When I get back, I will go robbing with my master.” Rui Bu Tong said frankly.

The other five almost fainted…

“Not just rob; you must use Hypnotic Fragrance to steal and render people unconscious… Especially when it comes to the big clans.” Chu Yang instructed carefully, “It would be best to make them hunt you down; that way, you will advance very quickly!”

“At the same time, I will also die very quickly!” Rui Bu Tong rolled his eyes, but he was internally thinking: Could it be done?

“Ah, wait for a few days. When Dong Wu Shang’s saber is done, we will make our trek to Great Zhao!” Chu Yang said, “At that time, we will do one task in Great Zhao. When that is done, we will also part ways at Great Zhao!”

“So soon?” The five people said in unison.

“Not soon at all. After this is done, Ji Mo would be home just in time.” Chu Yang said, “There is one more thing I want to discuss with everyone today. It is about how we can put all of Great Zhao into chaos.”

The five looked at each other.

“If you want to make Jiang Hu of Great Zhao go into chaos, I have a way.” Ji Mo thought a little and said, “It will make them all fight with each other like mad dogs…”

“Mad dogs fighting?” Chu Yang seemed to have an inkling.

“Big brother’s sabers and swords. You could put out two and give them some background… and let them into Jiang Hu.” Ji Mo said,

“Such heavenly weapons are always most loved by Jiang Hu people. But how to cause the biggest sensations, we must discuss this carefully.”

“That is an idea…” Chu Yang rubbed his chin and thought.

“As for the royal court, that is difficult.” Ji Mo frowned.

“No worries, we’ll cross that bridge when we get to it.” Chu Yang said definitively, “Let’s go first and figure it out later.”

“Iron Cloud is in the north; the weather is cold. So all of the Middle Three Heavens clans out for training are in Great Zhao because the weather there is mildest. So on this trip, we will meet many disciples of Middle Three Heavens out for training.” Chu Yang said gravely, “One of those people is the eldest young master of the Mo clan, Mo Tian Yun.”

Dong Wu Shang shivered internally; Chu Yang finally said it!

“Big brother wants to deal with Mo Tian Yun?” Gu Du Xing frowned.

“Not deal with him; I want to kill him!” Chu Yang said slowly, “I want to know, if I keep Mo Tian Yun in Lower Three Heavens forever, what will be the consequences?”

At this moment, the five felt Chu Yang’s killing intent surging like a rising tide…

Chapter 244: Sharpening blades and aiming at the center of the continent

"If you want to defeat Mo Tian Yun, this is not too difficult." Gu Du Xing thought over it for a little while and said, "But if you want to kill Mo Tian Yun, I am afraid... with the strength of the six of us, it's impossible!"

"Yes." Dong Wu Shang nodded solemnly.

"Oh? Mo Tian Yun is that powerful?" Chu Yang's eyes flashed.

"Really powerful!" Gu Du Xing nodded, "In the past year, all external matters of the Mo clan were placed under Mo Tian Yun's control. Plus, the power of the Mo clan, in every aspect, has risen and expanded in the past year!"

"This is all thanks to the efforts of Mo Tian Yun." Gu Du Xing sighed, "Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji, those two brothers are considered a resourceful pair in Middle Three Heavens. Mo Tian Ji has the intelligence, and Mo Tian Yun has the tactics. A person so devious, even if you take all the precautions, you will still fall into his trap..."

"Yes, given Mo Tian Yun's tactics, if he truly held the power of the Mo clan, he would be a great threat to all of the surrounding clans! Therefore, many people want Mo Tian Yun dead. But Mo Tian Yun is still alive and well!" Dong Wu Shang said.

"The struggle for power between the two Mo brothers has been well-known by all the people in Middle Three Heavens. Everyone knows that Mo Tian Ji's strength puts us all to shame." Ji Mo frowned, "But Mo Tian Yun could easily suppress Mo Tian Ji... these past few years. Even though Mo Tian Ji has improved his situation now, he continued to be suppressed pitifully. While Mo Tian Yun is a few years older than Mo Tian Ji, what he was able to do proved that his intellect is no less than Mo Tian Ji's!"

“Moreover, this Mo Tian Yun is a petty, suspicious, and vengeful person. Everything he does uses unscrupulous tactics. Such a person, unless you are a hundred percent certain that you will win, it would be better not to bother him in the first place!” Luo Ke Di sighed, “Otherwise, there would be endless trouble.”

Among the four people discussing, Gu Du Xing’s Gu clan was an ally of the Mo clan, Ji Mo was Mo Tian Yun’s cousin, and Luo Ke Di’s clan was an enemy of the Mo clan. These three were well-versed about Mo Tian Yun.

After hearing Chu Yang’s intention, they uniformly opposed.

“Could it be that… Mo Tian Yun is an untouchable tiger’s butt?” The cold in Chu Yang’s gaze grew stronger and stronger.

“Such a person is too dangerous as an enemy!” Gu Du Xing said, “Plus, this person is very cautious; he values his life to an extreme point! That’s why I said you could defeat him, but not kill him… And killing him in Lower Three Heavens is impossible!”

“Big brother needs to think this over!” The five said in one voice.

Chu Yang slowly nodded and said, “I will reconsider.”

“However, if big brother insists, then I will help!” Gu Du Xing said casually.

“I will definitely help!” Luo Ke Di laughed.

Dong Wu Shang smiled, “Killing Mo Tian Yun, I also want to.”

Rui Bu Tong let out two dry coughs, “You’re all going to help… If I don’t, you will all probably beat me to death…”

Ji Mo smiled and said, “Of all the cousins, I don’t like Mo Tian Yun most. No matter; I still cannot take part in this so I will just avoid it.”

With Ji Mo’s choice, the five showed an understanding look. If Ji Mo had excitedly asked to help… that would make him no longer human. No matter how devious Mo Tian Yun was, he was still Ji

Mo's blood relation!

"If I need help from you guys, I will not hesitate to ask." Chu Yang said in a low voice. Seeing the choices of his brothers, Chu Yang was happy and touched.

But dealing with Mo Tian Yun, it was best to think about it more carefully.

After all, someone who could suppress Mo Tian Ji for that long could not be so common. It should be noted that in the previous life, Mo Tian Ji still did not hold all of the clan's power at the time Mo Qing Wu died!

It was not until several years later that Mo Tian Yun completely retreated from his battle for power against Mo Tian Ji.

With this Mo Tian Yun, no matter how much hatred... Chu Yang should definitely not underestimate his enemy! Just as Gu Du Xing and company said, Chu Yang had no intentions of doing so.

Kill... He still would!

Seven days later, Chu Yang finally announced that they could be on their way!

In front of Dong Wu Shang's longing gaze, Chu Yang took out a saber!

The moment the saber left its sheath, the entire room, even Ji Mo, Gu Du Xing and the others, could not help but hold their breath.

What kind of saber was this?

If there was such a thing as royalty among sabers, there was no doubt that this saber was it!

No words could describe the mighty aura of this saber!

Dong Wu Shang's two hands trembled, and his eyes were starting to moisten. He gently stroked the saber as if it was the lover of his dream.

“My saber!” Dong Wu Shang’s voice was slightly choked. He suddenly spoke as if he was taking an oath, “From today on, this saber will be called No Injuries! Under this saber, there will be no injuries, only deaths!” (TLN: Wu Shang means no injuries.)

No Injuries!

Dong Wu Shang used his name for his saber!

With one hand, he raised this five hundred seventy pound saber up high. His eyes emitted a fanatical glow. At this moment, his entire face seemed to shine!

“Thank you, big brother! I, Dong Wu Shang, will never fail this saber! I will not leave my No Injuries!” Dong Wu Shang stabbed his saber downward and kneeled in front of Chu Yang before he could be stopped. He bang his head on the ground three times and stood up. Suddenly, he looked up into the sky and yelled out, “Sabers make kings; how can I, Dong Wu Shang, not?”

Along with his yell, a bone-chilling saber aura suddenly surged out!

Gu Du Xing’s eyes narrowed. The moment Dong Wu Shang received this saber, a mysterious force inside his body seemed to awaken. At this time, Dong Wu Shang was overflowing with pride!

He and this saber stood together; in front of everyone, there were clearly two sabers!

Two unrivaled sabers!

“At this moment, Wu Shang has opened the path of a sabersman!” (TLN: This word is not legit, but what else can I do? Sabersman, swordsman… The original words mean saber guest and sword guest.) Chu Yang’s gaze rested on Dong Wu Shang. After a long time, he smiled happily.

A sincere admiration was shown on Gu Du Xing’s face. The path of a sabersman was like that of a swordsman!

The difference was just one word, but the concepts are completely different. The one word that was filled with hidden meanings to make people think.

No matter where, a guest was nobler than an ordinary person.

Therefore, being sabersmen and swordsmen, in the eyes of saber wielders and sword wielders, was a kind of honor!

While Gu Du Xing was obsessed with the way of the sword, he was still not a swordsman! Dong Wu Shang, while weaker than him, was now a sabersman. This was essentially a step into the way of the saber.

“You don’t have to be envious. The path of a swordsman will open up to you soon enough.” Chu Yang smiled, “Revered Berserker Sword Technique is keeping the path of a swordsman from opening up to you. You only need to break through Revered Sword Artist and stop practicing Revered Berserker Sword Technique. A short time after that, you will become a swordsman!”

“I will break through in the shortest possible time period!” Gu Du Xing’s eyes flashed with a cold light. He gritted his teeth and said, “No matter what the price is!”

Chu Yang nodded his head and said, “This trip to Great Zhao is not just to do work but also to train!” Then he tossed out five blades, “On this journey, you should not use your own weapons. These are your backups.”

The five were surprised.

“As for this saber and this sword.” Chu Yang pulled out a saber and a sword and said, “They are heavenly weapons. But these two heavenly weapons are prepared for Jiang Hu of Great Zhao! I want this saber and this sword to create a reign of terror all over Great Zhao. After all of this terror is created, I want all vengeance and attention to be aimed at Continent Center Citadel!”

The five people shuddered.

They all had enough experience to know how powerful this move could be. If word got out, the people of Jiang Hu would probably fill up Great Zhao's Continent Center Citadel in a blink of an eye...

"Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong, you two will go first. You will be the vanguard in bringing this saber to Great Zhao. On your way, fight wherever you can and kill whenever you can. In short, you have to create the greatest uproar possible... After arriving at Continent Center Citadel, toss this saber at the most chaotic moment."

Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong looked at each other and nodded. Their eyes were filled with fanaticism. These two were the most audacious. Chu Yang had made the best use of people by choosing these two as the vanguard.

"Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di, you two will be the second wave. Use this sword for the same task as Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong." Chu Yang said casually.

Dong Wu Shang nodded solemnly, and Luo Ke Di's face immediately became twisted.

Luo Ke Di loved to talk and laugh loudly. Travelling for thousands of miles with a block of wood like Dong Wu Shang, he would probably be bored to death...

Chu Yang had chosen complementary characters.

Luo Ke Di was lively and liked to cause trouble. He was also arrogant. Rui Bu Tong would not have been able to control him. If Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo went together... Chu Yang was certain that these two lawless guys would probably not even reach Continent Center Citadel...

With the exception of Gu Du Xing, Dong Wu Shang was the only one that could securely control Luo Ke Di...

"I will travel with Gu Du Xing." Chu Yang did not bother to look at Luo Ke Di's grumpy eyes, "We are the third group; we will travel empty-handed."

“Once you arrive, you do not need to wait for us. You just need to cause chaos. Once you have achieved the required effect, you can go back to your clans.” Chu Yang added solemnly.

“Then, what will be done with Mo Tian Yun?” Dong Wu Shang suddenly looked up.

“Mo Tian Yun, I don’t want to touch him yet.” Chu Yang said casually, “When it is time, I will let everyone know.” His eyes flashed with a strange emotion.

Dong Wu Shang slowly nodded.

“After returning to your clan, please go to the Mo clan and see Xiao Wu.” Chu Yang took a deep breath and said, “Her life in the clan is probably not that good. If you could take her out, please use all of your efforts to do so. Ji Mo, you will be in charge of this.”

Ji Mo patted his chest, “Don’t worry, big brother. I will definitely go!”

Chu Yang nodded and felt a little reassured, “On another note… the next time we see each other, if my cultivation level surpasses anyone here… Haha, big brother won’t be polite!”

Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di shouted in terror, “Big brother…”

This is unbearable. Your cultivation level rises like it is in flight. How can be we be sure that you won’t surpass us?

“It’s decided! While we are apart, your most important task is to enhance all aspects of your abilities. Plus, don’t forget you are people of Heavenly Armament Pavilion!” Chu Yang had a profound gaze as he said slowly, “I long for the day I will traverse Upper Three Heavens with all of you!”

“As for Lower Three Heavens business, Gu Du Xing and I will take care of it for now.” Chu Yang said matter-of-factly, “We will start tomorrow morning! Do everything as planned!”

Chapter 245: This situation cannot be removed

These days, many gossips quietly showed up in Iron Cloud Citadel. Something about Tie Bu Tian's outrageous action in killing his father to take the throne. Something about King of Hell Chu being calculating and creating a conspiracy to kill the previous emperor. Something about Tie Long Cheng planning to rebel...

In short, the cold Iron Cloud Citadel suddenly became noisy and restless...

"I have to go." Chu Yang quietly sat in front of Wu Qian Qian, "To Great Zhao!"

"Go to Great Zhao?" Wu Qian Qian stood up in shock, "You... why do you want to go to Great Zhao? You don't know your current position?"

"I am going because of this fight for the world! I cannot afford not to go." Chu Yang said gently, "I am handing Bu Tian Pavilion over to you. From now on, you are King of Hell Chu!"

"From now on, I am King of Hell Chu?" Wu Qian Qian stood and stared at Chu Yang. Her two eyes suddenly became red, "You have planned to leave all along, didn't you?"

Chu Yang sighed and said, "You are overthinking things."

"If you ever leave, King of Hell Chu would still be here, right?" Wu Qian Qian seemed to almost shed tears. Her voice trembled slightly, "This is your answer to Tie Bu Tian and to the sect, right?"

Chu Yang did not say anything. He stared at her for a moment and said casually, "Yes!"

"So you have planned to leave me here all along, haven't you?" Wu Qian Qian opened her eyes wide trying to hold back the tears.

She made an effort to make her voice calm once again, “Since the beginning, you never planned to bring anyone with you, right?”

“Yes!” Chu Yang affirmed with a cruel answer.

“I understand.” Wu Qian Qian smiled sadly, “Rest assured; I will do a good job.” She suddenly looked at Chu Yang bravely and said, “You have chosen me for this King of Hell Chu position. I will definitely be a good King of Hell Chu.”

Chu Yang remained quiet for a long time; he was speechless.

“Chu Yang, you really like to wear black clothes, right?” Wu Qian Qian suddenly smiled mysteriously as she asked sadly.

“Yes.” Chu Yang swallowed. Then looking at Wu Qian Qian, he suddenly felt a great pressure over his spirit.

“Umm, I know.” Wu Qian Qian nodded slightly; she turned and did not look at Chu Yang anymore, “Is there anything else?”

“These days, there are too many rumors. I will not be dealing with them.” Chu Yang pondered a little and said, “You do it.”

“I know.” Wu Qian Qian said casually, “You worked hard to cultivate me; was it not for this day?” Her voice was really calm, but, in that calm voice, there seemed to be a hidden volcano about to explode at any moment.

Chu Yang could feel it clearly. In Wu Qian Qian’s chest, her weak heart was beating violently! While Wu Qian Qian was extremely calm externally, the fierce emotions in her heart could barely be controlled any longer.

Chu Yang sighed and said, “I just want to remind you. The enemy is scariest when he is being still. As long as he makes a move, we can deal with him no matter what his target is.”

“I don’t need you to remind me about this.” Wu Qian Qian said casually, “Following the footsteps of the real King of Hell Chu for so long, I also understand this.”

“That’s good, then.” Chu Yang nodded and said in a low voice, “This trip... if nothing unexpected happens, I will be back in a year.”

Wu Qian Qian remained quiet for a long time without talking and stood with her back toward him.

Chu Yang raised his hand wanting to pat her shoulder, but he kept it raised for a long time without lowering it. In the end, he pulled his hand back from midair and said, “I am going. I will go to the royal palace and leave immediately from there.”

Wu Qian Qian did not reply.

Chu Yang sighed. He slowly turned and walked out. Facing Wu Qian Qian’s sorrow, he did not dare to linger.

Wu Qian Qian’s shoulders trembled. The moment Chu Yang stepped out of the room, he could clearly hear dripping sounds from behind him. Wu Qian Qian was finally unable to hold back her tears.

They felt onto the glistening stone floor and splattered...

Chu Yang paused at the door and thought silently: I am sorry... I really cannot give you anything right now...

Then he left in the wind and snow. In a blink of an eye, he had disappeared from Bu Tian Pavilion’s main door.

Wu Qian Qian stood still for a long time in the room with her back to the door. After a while, she suddenly sat down. With two hands covering her face, she sobbed silently...

She did not make a sound, but her body was trembling violently. A long time later, she slowly stood up and looked at the gold mask Chu Yang had placed on the table. She gently picked it up and looked at it longingly. Taking a deep breath and looking as if she understood something, she held it tight in her chest...

Two streams of tears slowly flowed down and rolled over the

mask before falling to the ground. Why? Wu Qian Qian looked at the chair facing her and asked.

The chair remained silent as it continued its quiet existence. It could not give her any sort of answer. Like Chu Yang, it could not answer Wu Qian Qian's question...

Wu Qian Qian nostalgically stroked the mask and the chair. Then she raised the mask up and looked at it for a long time before slowly putting it on her own face. Her expression suddenly changed to mad, despair, and then sorrowful. But it was always filled with attachment.

In the end, the mask was on her face.

It covered her sorrow.

That afternoon, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing, two black-outfitted men with black hair, rode two strong horses and whizzed out of the southern gate like a whirlwind. Two trails of snow flew up as they disappeared into the horizon.

On top of the gate, a golden figure stood quietly for a long time. He watched as the snow flew over the ground. With his arms folded, his expression was very strange... very strange.

"If you don't come back, I... will immediately send troops over to Great Zhao and fight to the death." Tie Bu Tian said softly then turned and walked down from the tower.

It was also that very day that Tie Bu Tian officially agreed to Diwu Qing Rou's request and sent five hundred chosen soldiers to escort Tang Xin Sheng's family straight to Continent Center Citadel in Great Zhao!

The people of Bu Tian Pavilion practically went crazy these days. King of Hell Chu gave the order to investigate all of the rumors! If the root was not found, they were to bring their own head in to see King of Hell Chu!

This order left Cheng Zi Ang and Chen Yu Tong's faces

contorted. They had to mobilize all of the eyes and ears in Iron Cloud Citadel. Even the justice department and the military were used. Everything caused an earth-shattering uproar.

After dealing with official business, Tie Bu Tian went to Bu Tian Pavilion with the protection of the shadow guards. He went into Minister Chu's room.

Wu Qian Qian wore a golden mask on her face and a black robe on her body as she sat in the room. Seeing Tie Bu Tian arrive, she was planning to take the mask off when Tie Bu Tian smiled and said, "Just keep it on, I want to come here and rest a little."

Wu Qian Qian was startled. Two people, one in front of the desk and one behind it, were sitting face to face. The atmosphere unexpectedly became extremely heavy.

Tie Bu Tian sat for a long time before finally asking, "This robe is not new, is it? Is it the one he usually wears?"

Wu Qian Qian gently nodded and said softly, "Only when I am wearing this robe do I feel like King of Hell Chu is still here."

Tie Bu Tian's gaze rested on the golden mask for a while, then he let out a sigh.

Wu Qian Qian did not know whether Tie Bu Tian sighed for her or for Chu Yang. Or perhaps... there was another reason?

However, she was able to recognize that, within this sigh, there was some sense of melancholy and loss along with something that could not be described.

*****

Heavenly Armament Pavilion

A figure in blue shot in like a flash. It quickly searched every room once. Finally, it stopped at Chu Yang's room and carefully searched for a long time. At last, he pressed with his hand and the door to the secret chamber slowly opened.

The person in blue smiled with satisfaction. With a flash, he entered the secret passage.

“F*! This damn punk!” The moment he entered, there was loud sounds of cursing. This place was unexpectedly filled with many traps.

Within the secret passage way, there was something that looked like cobweb as well as clear threads hanging high and low everywhere.

If it were not for the fact that the person in blue had a high cultivation level and keen sight, he would have ran right into them.

These things were not deadly, but they were effective against intruders. The person in blue was annoyed. This insolent punk has gone to Great Zhao; why did he bother setting up all these things?

But thinking it over, he felt excited. Since he was so careful, there must be something inside!

He carefully turned into a soft puff of smoke and slowly went through the layers of web threads. At last... he was through. Looking ahead, there was no longer any of those threads; it was a very large space.

The person in blue relaxed and landed.

The moment his two feet touch the ground, there was an unexpected swish. He had landed in a pit, and a stinky smell immediately rose up.

He hastily pulled his legs out and could not help but yell angrily.

His legs were yellow and whitish. He had stepped on none other than what was the reincarnation of the five grains (TLN: poop).

Before leaving, Chu Yang had changed the path of the secret passage. It had led him to the place where Mo Qing Wu had stayed before. He even brought in a portable toilet and especially

arranged it there.

Hmm, even a King level master must have… this kind of thing.

The person in blue jumped out and activated his martial power. His boots broke open. He covered his nose and ran out with his bare feet.

Of course this kind of trap could not possibly harm him, but it was really too sick…

Grinding his teeth, he searched for a long time before finding Chu Yang's closed room. But the moment he entered, he yelled out loudly, "Oh, screw me!"

The stone chamber was empty without anything at all. At the end of the chamber was a stone tablet with the following words engraved on it: "You are here, but I have gone far away. I am ashamed that I cannot welcome you. Reincarnation is mysterious, and surely you are still searching. This is just a mere token of my sincerity; it is not enough to express my respect. If destiny allows, we will meet again another day."

The person in blue looked at his bare feet and then looked the words "reincarnation is mysterious." He was so furious, he wanted to vomit blood.

Chapter 246: Changes at Beyond the Heavens Sect

“Isn’t it just Great Zhao? Is that so far away? Don’t think I don’t have any way to catch you! Chu Yang, you are the king of bastards! Don’t ever let me verify your identity. At that time, even if the elder protects you, I will still have to beat you up eight times a day!”

The person in blue ground his teeth and grunted. He raised his arm, and the stone tablet in front of him immediately turned into dust. He stormed away in anger…

However, there was also a little bit of admiration in his mind. Surprisingly, this person is able to foresee my arrival… Such intelligence cannot be trivial. If he is really my nephew… Hmm, he is really an interesting punk…

Imperceptibly, he unexpectedly looked forward to seeing Chu Yang even more…

*****

Beyond the Heavens Sect…

“Today is also really cold. Junior martial brother, why don’t we have a drink?” Wu Yun Liang wore a black fox fur coat as he walked into Purple Bamboo Garden.

These days, if there was nothing to do, Wu Yun Liang would come here and sit for a while. Meng Chao Ran liked silence, but he was much harassed by this sect master. However, there was no avoiding it. Because Meng Chao Ran tried to kick him out many times, and he still would not leave.

“I am not interested.” Meng Chao Ran sat in the Purple Bamboo Forest. The white snow over the purple bamboo along with his black hair and white outfit looked unworldly and forlorn.

“Not a problem. I am interested.” Wu Yun Liang breathed as he rubbed his hands, “Come here. Let’s talk about your good disciple. Haha, even you could not imagine that your strange disciple could become such an elite character in such a short time period.”

Wu Yun Liang knew that while Meng Chao Ran seemed like he did not care, talking about Chu Yang was like scratching him at the right spot; he would immediately become spirited.

Currently, Wu Yun Liang had reformed Beyond the Heavens Sect a few times and made all of his martial brothers become distant. And his seventh martial brother, Kong Jing Feng, was sent out to do some work by him. Ninth martial brother, Bao Kuang Lei, was also not here. He was sent to Iron Cloud. Right now, the only person in Beyond the Heavens Sect that he could talk to was Meng Chao Ran so he did not mind anything...

“What are we talking about Chu Yang for?” Meng Chao Ran made a show of being annoyed, “These past few days, haven’t your mouth gone stiff from all the talking?”

The edge of Wu Yun Liang’s mouth curved up. Sure enough, the mere mention of his precious disciple had caused Meng Chao Ran to be more talkative.

“Chu Yang is definitely not simple... Why can’t I have a disciple like that?” Wu Yun Liang sighed.

Meng Chao Ran unconsciously showed a smile.

“Cough cough, come over and have a drink?” Wu Yun Liang seized his chance and asked.

“I give up.” Meng Chao Ran nodded and reluctantly walked to get some food and wine.

Clearly he wanted to hear praises for his disciple but pretended to be unhappy. Wu Yun Liang coolly called out, “Tell your little disciple to make a few dishes, will you? Why do you have to do the work yourself?”

“Tan Tan is in closed door training.” Meng Chao Ran sighed. Before, he was slightly happy. Talking about Tan Tan, he was helpless. Since Chu Yang left, besides admiring himself in the mirror, Tan Tan was only interested in cultivation.

He wholeheartedly trained like a madman.

Meng Chao Ran had talked to him a few times, but Tan Tan immediately trained the moment Meng Chao Ran turned away. If he had no other way, Tan Tan would smile stupidly and ask, “Master, these days, have I grown handsomer?”

Only the heavens would understand how Meng Chao Ran felt.

Looking at Tan Tan’s extremely “abstract” face and hearing these narcissistic words, Meng Chao Ran could only wave his arm in surrender, “Go and cultivate. Don’t ask me…” Each time he asked, his master felt as if he was being interrogated.

He did not want to cause a blow to Tan Tan by telling the truth, but telling a lie… the words could not come out of his mouth.

Since he got the Divine Chi Gathering Fish, Tan Tan essentially never stopped cultivating each day.

His advancement shocked Meng Chao Ran. These past few months, Tan Tan broke straight through fifth grade Martial Artist!

Moreover, getting energy from the Divine Chi Gathering Fish, Meng Chao Ran was surprised to find that Tan Tan’s aptitude had started to imperceptibly change in all aspects…

Meng Chao Ran had a feeling that perhaps what he was proudest of in this life were these two disciples.

Why Tan Tan was cultivating like mad, Meng Chao Ran naturally knew. Tan Tan wanted to quickly increase his strength so he could go and help Chu Yang.

Suffice it to say, given Tan Tan’s motivation, how could Meng Chao Ran not support it?

Not long after, Meng Chao Rao came out with a little bit of food and two jugs of wine, “Eldest martial brother, I have to say, could you bring something each time you come here? You carry your mouth over your shoulders every time you come here. Economy is very tough here.”

Wu Yun Liang rolled his eyes and said, “You only need to leave the mountain and find your precious disciple; you will definitely bring back a mountain of gold and silver. I can’t believe a rich person like you is lamenting in front of me.”

“Haha, such thick skin…” Meng Chao Ran smiled so wide his eyes squinted. Opening the wine and pouring, he said, “Eldest martial brother, you have been in Jiang Hu for so many years; have you ever seen anyone who is as strange as Tan Tan?”

“This… such personality, I really have never seen.” Wu Yun Liang brought up the wine cup and took a gulp, “If I have met such a person, I would definitely not forget. Even if I was dreaming, I would have to wake up, motherf*.”

Meng Chao Ran sighed; he frowned and looked at the snow covering all around. After a long time, he spoke, “During this period, something seems not quite right. I don’t know why I feel very bothered…”

“Bothered? Bothered is right!” Wu Yun Liang sneered, “Lately, second, third, fourth, and fifth have been sneaking around; sixth and eighth have been swinging left and right… Little martial brother, have you ever thought that our Beyond the Heavens Sect would come to this?”

Then, Wu Yun Liang laughed at himself.

“It’s because you forced them too much before.” Meng Chao Ran sighed quietly, “Second had some students he was proud of; you used the sect’s tournament to have them and strong disciples of third and fourth fight each other violently. A few even died on the spot… This caused their efforts of many years to go up in smoke.

How could they not feel a little resentment?”

“But you know why I have to do that.” Wu Yun Liang said gravely, “You know, I was going deal with the four of them as well... But I thought about our brotherhood of many years; I just did not have the heart to do it. I only eliminated a few disciples; that’s already lenient. I had hoped that they would soon repent...”

“Eldest martial brother, you don’t need to lie when you are talking to me.” Meng Chao Ran looked up at his brother, “I know you want what is good for the sect, and you know what they are doing. But you did not do it because you had other intentions. Plus, you were certain of the outcome. You did not care about brotherly affection. So let’s not talk about that anymore.”

Wu Yun Liang smiled in embarrassment. Then he said with annoyance, “Little martial brother, no matter what, I am still the sect master...”

“Ah...” Meng Chao Ran sighed, “Have you ever seen a sect leader with such thick skin?”

Wu Yun Liang let out a dry cough and said, “Little martial brother, there is something I have to discuss with you.”

“What is it?” Meng Chao Ran became alert.

“What do you think of my daughter, Wu Qian Qian?” Wu Yun Liang tensely looked at Meng Chao Ran.

“Yes. That child is good. She has good aptitude, good temperament, good looks; she is not bad at all.” Meng Chao Ran generously praised Wu Qian Qian.

“Haha...” Wu Yun Liang happily exclaimed, “You see, Qian Qian and Chu Yang... Don’t you think the two of them make a good pair?”

“This...” Meng Chao Ran stroked his beard and frowned, “Eldest martial brother, the youngsters’ business, you and I should not worry about it. Plus, both of them are not here; we need to have

their input on this kind of thing."

He paused a little and said, "While Chu Yang is my disciple, I cannot make arbitrary decisions for him."

Wu Yun Liang sighed and said, "Fine, I won't force you. I will just ask Chu Yang when I have the chance. I have to say, a master like you is something. Chu Yang does not have a father or a mother. His business should definitely be decided by you. And yet..."

"This is a decision for an entire lifetime. If Chu Yang does not agree, I will not make the decision for him." Meng Chao Ran grunted coldly, "On the off chance that I am wrong, there will be suffering for the rest of his life! I don't want my disciples to suffer for the rest of their lives!"

"Okay." Wu Yun Liang became silent briefly before saying, "Little martial brother, I have a favor to ask of you."

"You are really wordy today." Meng Chao Ran glared.

"On the off chance that something happens to Beyond the Heavens Sect..." Wu Yun Liang said solemnly, "Little martial brother, you do not need to worry about me. Just take Tan Tan and run. Understood?"

Meng Chao Ran smiled thoughtfully and said, "It seems Beyond the Heavens Sect is really in trouble this time, right?"

"Yes, the two major sects, Saintly Saber Pavilion and Black Blood League, as well as a number of mysterious martial experts are currently heading in the direction of our Beyond the Heavens Sect." Wu Yun Liang said in a low voice, "This time, Beyond the Heavens Sect cannot avoid a bitter fight!"

"A bitter fight?" Meng Chao Ran stood up. His figure stood tall like a sword as he said pensively, "You mean?"

"This is totally unexpected, and it happened so suddenly." Wu Yun Liang said slowly, "So I suspect... Diwu Qing Rou only wants

to vent his anger this time. He still does not want to destroy Beyond the Heavens Sect. The main target of these two major sects is probably you and Tan Tan!”

“It is all because of Chu Yang’s actions in Iron Cloud that made Diwu Qing Rou suffer major losses. Therefore... dealing with you would be a blow to Chu Yang.” Wu Yun Liang said seriously, “That is why I want... you and Tan Tan to go into hiding first.”

“Go into hiding first?” Meng Chao Ran was startled. He smiled a bitter smile and said, “Eldest martial brother, I am afraid that even if I want to hide now, it’s already too late.”

“Exactly, it is definitely too late.” A cold voice suddenly rang out. The sound resonated like metals hitting each other.

Wu Yun Liang froze momentarily. Then it immediately relaxed and he smiled, “Which friends have come to visit?”

That voice replied, “Black Blood League greets sect master Wu!”

Right after a voice was heard from behind him, “Saintly Saber Pavilion’s disciples greet sect master Wu.”

With a swoosh, two figures appeared around them simultaneously. There were a total of eight people in a circle. The people on their right was a person in black carrying a sword. They were definitely people of Black Blood League. The two people on their left were wearing red outfits and carrying sabers on their waist. These people belonged to Saintly Saber Pavilion.

The four people facing them and standing behind them were wearing white outfits with sharp gazes.

One of them laughed and said, “We have just arrived, and we already got discovered by Brother Meng. This is really surprising.” He said in praise, “Meng Chao Ran, you are worthy of being the master of King of Hell Chu! Amazing!”

Meng Chao Ran said casually, “I don’t know what you are talking about.”

Whether you know it or not, you are definitely dead today.” A white outfitted person from behind flashed fierce killing intent. With a clang, the sword had appeared in his hand, “Meng Chao Ran, your disciple has killed many of our people. Today is the day you will pay for it with your life!”

Meng Chao Ran frowned. Then he suddenly looked up with a gaze as sharp as a sword, “That’s it... You are people of Golden Horse Riders Department!”

Chapter 247: Tan Tan's power

Meng Chao Ran frowned. He suddenly looked up with gaze as sharp as a sword, "So it is... people of Golden Horse Riders Department."

"Senior Meng really has saintly sight." One of the persons in white smiled coldly, "Too bad smart people cannot live long."

"Haha, if you want me to pay with my life, you should show a little bit of sincerity." Meng Chao Ran smiled faintly and said, "Just talking will not do." Then he immediately clasped his hands behind his back and casually took half a step forward, "Wu Cheng Feng, Wu Cheng Yu, you two are the only ones we know here. Do you plan to introduce us?"

The two people that he called by name were the two thin people in black of Black Blood League. Their appearance was a little bit alike; they were a pair of brothers.

"Brother Meng, we do not want to be your enemy, and we especially do not want to kill you. But your disciple has caused too much trouble." Wu Cheng Feng stroke his beard and said with a pretention of helplessness.

"Brother Meng, you don't need to bide your time and wait for reinforcement anymore. Nine peaks and one garden of Beyond the Heavens Sect is all under attack right now!" Wu Cheng Yun sinisterly smiled, "But Brother Meng's place gets the special treatment."

The two brothers smiled and looked at Wu Yun Liang and Meng Chao Ran. They wanted to find a trace of anger or panic on their opponents' faces. That would have been a joy for them.

However, Wu Yun Liang's face remained in different like before; even his gaze did not change. Wu Yun Liang remained cool. In his eyes there seem to be a smile like a spring breeze. He did not seem

to mind at all.

“Could it be that you are not worried at all?” Wu Cheng Feng said in surprise.

“What is the use of being worried?” Wu Yun Liang smiled coolly, “Who doesn’t have to die? Dying early or late is still dying! You will die if you worry; you will die if you don’t worry. With your intelligence, do you understand what this sect master is saying?”

“You want to die!” The two Wu brothers yelled angrily.

“You are definitely worthy of being a key figure in Beyond the Heavens Sect. A little self-introduction; I am Sun Jian. This is my younger brother, Sun Feng, fifth grade Saber Great Master of Saintly Saber Pavilion.” That person in red pressed his hand on the handle of his saber and said loftily.

“You two Sun brothers are truly masters.” Wu Yun Liang stretched the word Sun with a slightly strange tone. (TLN: Just a guess here, but the word Sun sounds a little bit like the word Revered. So he is probably trying to rub the fact that they are not Revered level masters in their faces.)

The faces of Sun Jian and Sun Feng immediately turned into the same color of their outfits.

“As for these four Golden Horse Riders, no introduction is necessary.” Meng Chao Ran said casually, “You four are all Revered Martial Artist. You truly have given us credit.”

“Wrong.” A voice laughed softly, “Dealing with King of Hell Chu’s master, how can four Revered Martial Artists be enough? There should at least eight!” With this voice, another four people in white casually stepped forward: three males and one female.

Eight Revered Martial Artists; four Great level masters!

Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang’s eyes narrowed.

If it was just the eight initial people, these two were certain that

they could escape. But among the four people that appeared later, two had powerful auras and were actually peak level Revered Martial Artists!

Between the two, Wu Yun Liang had the highest cultivation level. But he was only an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist. Compared to his opponents, he was still one grade less. How were they going to fight this battle?

“Little martial brother, how many years has it been since we teamed up against enemies?” Then he let out a loud lofty laugh.

“Why do you ask? Perhaps eldest martial brother feels inspired today?” Meng Chao Ran smiled.

“How about us two brothers team up and fight today?” Wu Yun Liang stroked his beard and smiled, “Otherwise, it would be a waste of all this good wine!”

“Alright!” Meng Chao Ran chuckled, “Eldest brother is truly an alcohol monster, how about we drink a cup after each time we kill one?”

The two martial brothers laughed freely and cheerfully.

Facing against enemies as powerful as towering mountains, it seemed as if the two were not at all bothered.

“Charge! Kill Meng Chao Ran!” The ninth grade Revered Martial Artist raised his arm; a sharp and cold light flashed in his eyes.

At this point, the faint sounds of fighting and killing was heard from the nine peaks of Beyond the Heavens Sect. In the direction of the main peak, there was even black smoke rising up high...

Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang stood shoulder to shoulder with a calm countenance and not the least bit of emotion.

Wu Yun Liang glanced at Meng Chao Ran as if he was asking: Where is your disciple?

Meng Chao Ran frowned momentarily: Still not out of closed-

door training.

Wu Yun Liang's brows twitched: When we fight, take your disciple and run first!

Meng Chao Ran's countenance remained unchanged: Okay!

They have been martial brothers for a few decades; they did not speak to understand each other.

Wu Yun Liang's thoughts were clear: The enemies' target is you. Diwu Qing Rou still needs me to complete some sort of plan so I will be okay. As long as you are able to escape, I will be unharmed.

At this very moment, there was a boom. The strange sound emitted from a room, and a powerful aura was suddenly released.

Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang frowned. This was the aura of a breakthrough!

Tan Tan had broken though at this dangerous moment! Sixth grade Martial Artist!

Under normal circumstances, this would have been a happy event. But, currently, eight Revered Martial Artists and four Great level masters were like tigers ready to pounce. A measly Martial Artist breaking through was not worth mentioning. In fact, this was asking to be killed.

"Huh? There is one more person? He is breaking through right now?" A Revered Martial Artist in white smiled, "His fortitude is really good!"

A door creaked, and Tan Tan walked out. He ran over in a daze, "Master, master, I broke through again!"

He suddenly paused and stared. Stunned, he said, "Oh? You have guests?"

Wu Yun Liang's eyes twitched: This punk. You just stuck your face out at the wrong time! You broke through, but you just did it with your master's life! Motherf*, our lives are on the line, and you

are talking about guests... Stupidity must have its limit...

However, Meng Chao Ran was clear on his own disciple's strength and thought: Good disciple, you have appeared at the right time!

Sure enough, the four people turned to look. The moment they saw him, everyone's eyes widened!

Oh god, there is such a person in this world that is this ugly! They could see that this person was not very old; his face was still childish. He was wearing a short cloak embroidered with red flowers and green leaves, and a faded pair of purple shorts on his legs. With such cold weather, he actually showed off his two very hairy legs.

On his head, he was wearing a scholarly cap. As for his appearance, it could be aptly described as such: One big ear and one small ear; one ear went in front to greet the wind, and one ear went behind flapping around. One big eye and one small eye; one was shaped like a bell, and the other was a triangle. One thick eyebrow and one thin eyebrow; one was pointed to the heavens, and the other one pointed to the ground. His nose was like a sky pillar completely separating his two eyes. His face was like a platter with a cute little cherry mouth!

As for his voice, it lingered around for days. It sounded like a hungry ravenous wolf was having his way with a male duck. And this male duck was pitifully screaming out for its life as the hungry wolf was howling at its climax...

The twelve people shuddered! There was actually such a special thing in this world!

Seeing so many people looking at him with wide eyes, he still did not recognize the danger. He swung his arm and pulled out a mirror from his chest. He looked and looked. Then he said with satisfaction, "No wonder you all admire me like this; I am so very handsome..."

With a gulp, fourteen people swallowed. The only female Revered Martial Artist almost puked. She pointed at Tan Tan with a trembling hand as if she was pointing at a monster, “You… you… you…”

“Very handsome, right?” Tan Tan reached his up and teased his hair. He even winked and said, “Beauty, it is a pity that you are a little old. Otherwise, I really could… haha… you know.”

This female Revered Martial Artist almost collapse. She stomped and yelled, “Vile beast!”

However, at this time, Meng Chao Ran who was standing still suddenly moved. His white outfit flashed like lightning, and he was away from the crowd! Fleeting Cloud Movement was used!

Snow gathers in the cloud,

shocking to the heavens,

as if forward, as if backwards,

as if there, as if gone!

In the blink of an eye, the twelve people were stunned. They have given Meng Chao Ran a great opportunity! The moment Meng Chao Ran moved, Wu Yun Liang’s body also spun. Snow flew all over the air. He had sent all of the snow around him upward. In a flash, the area of three to four hundred feet was not visible.

The twelve martial masters yelled in anger and chased after Meng Chao Ran! They were feeling extremely regretful as to why they had to be so stunned.

They truly could not be blamed for this. Tan Tan’s appearance was too unexpected! The twelve swore to themselves: Even if we encounter demons at night, we would not be so stunned like that. But looking at this punk and not fainting… We are already quite good.

Everyone realized: Not just extremely beautiful people can be

weapons; ugly appearances can be so as well! Moreover, it is enough to topple nations and citadels!

Meng Chao Ran's figure suddenly flashed like a meteor and disappeared. Grabbing Tan Tan with one hand, he never paused even for a second. He turned to see the twelve people chasing after him into the Purple Bamboo Forest!

At the same time, an icy chill flashed and a sword appeared in his hand. It was still Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement!

This action had surpassed everyone's expectation!

Everyone had thought that Meng Chao Ran wanted to escape with his disciple so they put all of their efforts into giving chase. Who could have anticipate that he would turn back?

The sword light flashed like a rainbow in the mist. Two pitiful screams rang out in the air. Blood flowers brightly colored the mist. Two cloud booms were heard, and Meng Chao Ran let out a painful scream. He rushed into Purple Bamboo Forest with Tan Tan!

With rustling noises, the purple bamboos fell down in great number!

"Go!" Wu Yun Liang called out. In the snowy space, the sound of people palming against each other was heard. More than five people let out a grunt at the same time. Then the snow in Purple Bamboo Forest shot out like ice.

It was mixed with bamboo leaves like some dream!

The whistling sounds continued. It was the sound of purple bamboo being cut and shot out like spears.

"Impudent!" A ninth grade Revered Martial Artist roared angrily like thunder in the sky. A powerful force suddenly burst out. Snow filled the air as if there was a whirlwind; they were sucked away with a swoosh.

The surroundings was cleared!

When everyone looked, their eyes practically ripped apart.

Chapter 248: Life and death crisis

In the Purple Bamboo Forest, purple bamboo continued to sway as violently as before. Purple bamboo leaves still flew all over the air like a dreamy rain. But Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang had disappeared without a trace!

In the area where everyone was prepared to fight, the ground was bloody. Fresh blood formed puddles with two people silently lying faced down. Black Blood League's two brothers, Wu Cheng Feng and Wu Cheng Yun!

The two were stabbed once in the throat and lost their lives! Among the ten people left, two brothers Sun Jian and Sun Feng were pale. A trickle of blood could be seen at the edge of their mouths. As for two Revered Martial Artists of Golden Horse Riders Department, their faces were also pale, and their hair was disheveled. That female Revered Martial Artist's face was flushed. She spat out a clump of fresh blood.

The two sides clashed for only a moment!

Meng Chao Ran broke out in desperation, and everyone desperately tried to stop him. Wu Yun Liang blocked them in desperation. Everyone was desperate! They separated after only a moment of contact, but there was such surprising aftermath!

The ninth grade Revered Martial Artist of Golden Horse Riders Department glared at Sun Jian. His eyes were as wide as bell; they seemed to want to swallow him whole, "Didn't you say that... Meng Chao Ran only has a cultivation level of ninth grade Martial Great Master?"

"It's really ninth grade Martial Great Master; last year, I..." Sun Jian panicked. He wondered to himself: A ninth grade Martial Great Master being surrounded by eight Revered Martial Artists, and he could escape? What strength? Even though he has the advantage of location, it should not be so...

“Ninth grade Martial Great Master, my ass!” The ninth grade Revered Martial Artist from Golden Horse Riders Department fiercely smack Sun Jian’s face. Pointing to the mess on the ground, he roared, “Your ninth grade Martial Great Master is that powerful, huh? Motherf*! Being surrounded by eight Revered Martial Artists and four Martial Great Masters, a ninth grade Martial Great Master could kill two people and fight with the others. Then he could leave freely? What the f* is wrong with your eyes?”

Sun Jian went spinning from that one smack. Seeing stars, he stammered, “It’s not possible… it’s not possible…”

“The truth is in front of your face; it’s still not possible?” That Revered Martial Artist fiercely kicked and Sun Jian fell outward, “Garbage!”

“Chase them! Both of them are injured; they could not have gone far!” The ninth grade Revered Martial Artist of Golden Horse Riders Department raised his hand. With a swoosh, eight people rushed into Purple Bamboo Forest to give chase!

There was something this Revered Martial Artist did not say; when the snow was obstructing their vision, he did not know whether he had palmed against Wu Yun Liang or Meng Chao Ran. But his wrist almost broke afterward. Even now, his arm was still aching!

Therefore, he was very angry about such erroneous intelligence!

He did not know that everything those two Saber Great Masters from Saintly Saber Pavilion said was true. A year ago, even half a year ago, Meng Chao Ran was only a ninth grade Martial Great Master!

However, after Chu Yang gave him that method of cultivation, Meng Chao Ran suddenly discovered that he was advancing at a dizzying speed. It was as if he would not stop advancing. Surprisingly, in the short six months, his cultivation level rose by

six grades! This was something unthinkable before then.

Meng Chao Ran was now a fifth grade Revered Martial Master. Plus, his martial energy was actually much higher than Revered Martial Masters of the same level. Even Wu Yun Liang thought that he had risen to eight grade Revered Martial Master!

This mission of Golden Horse Riders Department was supervised by Jing Meng Hun. He especially sent two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists and six third grade Revered Martial Artist to complete this mission. In principle this was like squashing a mosquito with a mountain; they were supposed beat Meng Chao Ran to pieces with one move. But he definitely did not expect the situation to take such a surprising turn.

Even so, the strength of these eight Golden Horse Riders still far exceeded that of Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang.

The situation's outlook remained grave!

Purple bamboos grew like a sea, and white snow covered the ground like a desert. Two figures continued to rush within them.

"How are you doing?" Wu Yun Liang asked softly as he flew.

"I have a few hidden injuries." Meng Chao Ran's face was slightly flushed, but his gaze remained as steadfast as before.

"Same here!" Wu Yun Liang grunted, "I can't believe it's so hard to play with these people. The situation caught them by surprise and yet both of us are still injured. If they were fully prepared, we would probably... Little martial brother, it's best for you to find a safe place to hide. You absolutely cannot show yourself!"

The main point in these words of Wu Yun Liang was that they were final.

He knew Meng Chao Ran's character and understood Meng Chao Ran's feeling for Beyond the Heavens Sect. On the off chance that he become emotional and jump out, everything would be over.

“I know how to weigh the situation!” Meng Chao Ran grunted, “But what about you?”

“Beyond the Heavens Sect has reached this point; I can only prepare to go to Iron Cloud when spring comes.” Wu Yun Liang said, “This will cause those who are not resolute to leave. If they don’t leave, they would be future problems. I don’t want to keep them anyway.”

“If they leave, our Beyond the Heavens Sect will be left with the most trustworthy people who are loyal to the sect. Is this not…” Meng Chao Ran’s figure suddenly staggered, but he immediately recovered.

Earlier, he pulled out his sword and killed two Martial Great Masters. He also palmed against that Revered Martial Artist once. His internal organs were all in shock; this injury was truly not a minor one.

“No problem. I have my own way.” Wu Yun Liang frowned, “You’re still being heroic!” He grabbed Tan Tan from Meng Chao Ran’s arm and rushed away.

Behind them, the faint sound of people chasing them grew closer and closer.

“What is this?” Wu Yun Liang felt something round in Tan Tan’s chest.

“A fish bowl.” Meng Chao Ran answer in a low voice, “Tan Tan is taking care of a fish.”

“Fish…” Wu Yun Liang practically yelled! They were running for their lives, and he still brought a fish bowl with him? Did he want to die?

Then he reach out his hand as he planned to throw the bowl away.

“It’s a Heavenly Chi Gathering Fish!” Meng Chao Ran rolled his eyes, “You dare to throw it away?”

Wu Yun Liang hastily pulled back his hand like a person who just got shocked by electricity. Even though there face was being hit by bone-chilling wind, his eyes still widened, “Heavenly Chi Gathering Fish?! I can’t believe you have this treasure.”

“If not, how do you think this master and disciple could advance so fast in our cultivation?” Meng Chao Ran sneered.

“No wonder, no wonder!” Wu Yun Liang sighed endlessly, “So you have such treasure… Right, right, at such a time and he still…” He suddenly let out an “oh” and said, “Could it be that this little punk is trying to scare people? Why would he bring a Heavenly Chi Gathering Fish outside?”

“Do you think my disciples are foolish like yours?” Meng Chao Ran sighed helplessly.

The sect master felt as if he had just been kicked and started to sweat.

The sound of wind whistling fiercely from behind them was heard. It was incredible that the friction between clothes and the air could create such terrible sounds! People had apparently caught up to them.

“I will block them! Go quickly!” Wu Yun Liang yelled out. He suddenly activated his martial energy and tossed Tan Tan outward. Tan Tan flew straight forward like a cloud in strong wind.

Wu Yun Liang hastily said, “No matter what, you cannot be a hindrance to Chu Yang! You must know how important this is…” Before he even finished speaking, he had already stopped and stood on the ground. Turning his foot, snow flew all over the air. His figure shot toward the enemies like a hurricane.

Meng Chao Ran did not look back. His figure continued to fly ahead without stopping. As Tan Tan was just about to fall to the ground, Meng Chao Ran firmly grabbed him and continued to

speed the other side of the mountain.

At that moment, he did not have time to say anything to Wu Yun Liang. But what was important, they both already knew in their hearts!

Beyond the Heavens Sect's property may not be needed! The lives of the two of them may not be needed! But Chu Yang could not be allowed lose heart because of Meng Chao Ran!

The consequence of such a thing would be Chu Yang's total defeat in this battle against Diwu Qing Rou.

Diwu Qing Rou sending people to kill Meng Chao Ran was not only to vent his anger. If a person could be blinded by hatred, his judgement would no longer be precise.

Such a thing would be fatal for King of Hell Chu.

If Chu Yang failed, Beyond the Heavens Sect would lose their chance for a revival. And six hundred million people of Iron Cloud would essentially be lost under Great Zhao's steel heels.

Therefore, even though Meng Chao Ran was not afraid to die, he could only run and hide.

All of the nine peaks and one garden in Beyond the Heavens Sect had rising stacks of smoke. Meng Chao Ran could not go in the any places in that direction.

This time, Golden Horse Riders Department put their main force into surrounding and killing Meng Chao Ran; Black Blood League and Saintly Saber Pavilion put all of their forces into surrounding all of the other Beyond the Heavens Sect locations.

The thundering roar of Wu Yun Liang fighting grew distant. The sound of clothes flying through the wind seemed to faintly come from all directions...

The distance to the cliff seemed like an insurmountable length.

"Master, let me go. You should run and hide quickly." Tan Tan

did not dare to struggle. He could only beg incessantly, “Let me go! Let me go! Master, I am begging you.”

Meng Chao Ran palmed Tan Tan’s nape, and Tan Tan immediately became unconscious. A decisive look appeared on Meng Chao Ran’s face as he said to himself: If I even leave behind my own disciple, how can I still be Meng Chao Ran?

Thinking so, an arrogance immediately rose up from his chest; his speed unexpectedly increased.

But the enemies behind him had discovered him.

“He’s over there! Quickly chase him!”

“We must kill Meng Chao Ran! That will be a great accomplishment!”

“Chop Meng Chao Ran’s head off and give it to King of Hell Chu. Then he could see the result of those who go against Golden Horse Riders Department!”

“Haha… How King of Hell Chu would react at that time? I think it would definitely be very enjoyable.”

Meng Chao Ran grunted coldly. With those distracting comments, he simply ignored them and bolted like mad! He was already using all of his power, but he knew that they would probably catch him before he reached the cliff!

Among those who were chasing him, none of them were weaker than him! One against one would not have been worrisome. One against two would still be doable. But against so many, he did not have the slightest luck in escaping death!

Could it be that today… I will have to die here?

Meng Chao Ran let out a long roar and stopped bothering to keep himself concealed. Like an arrow that had just left the bow. Because he pushed the limit of his martial energy, blood slowly trickled out of the edge of his mouth. Drop by drop, they fell on

Tan Tan’s face…

Chapter 249: Gu Du Xing's speculation

The sky was overcast and the wind was howling. Snow suddenly started to fall; it grew heavier and heavier. Before too long, the expanse of heaven and earth had only a white color.

Meng Chao Ran looked indifferent, but, at this moment, he could not help but think of a figure, a face that was filled with love.

"Chu Chu..." Meng Chao Ran's did not pause, but his heart was suffering from paralyzing pain, "Can it be that I will not be able to see you again?" The past suddenly appeared in his heart.

"It's difficult for the rain and wind to erase the marks in your heart;

Parting can never destroy love;

We not take what is eternal lightly;

Only in parting does everything become desolate..."

Meng Chao Ran's mind continued to enter a mysterious state. Even though his body continued to move at top speed, and the blizzard hit straight at his face, he acted as if he did not notice anything...

"... Memories of eternal vows of love begging to linger on forever;

A dream of spring in this life, to see a gentle dance flying to the sky;

Three chances to live and sing about love;

A lifetime of suffering, and you share it with me;

No one expects a breaking heart;

In the Nine Heavens, our souls are the same..."

With that unconscious thought, Meng Chao Ran's face showed a sense of loss; it looked sad but resolute at the same time.

“The morning dew quickly disappeared;

In heaven or on earth, it would be difficult to reunite;

Cut down the dark gates of the Nine Heavens,

And hold you in my arms in life and death!

Chu Chu, I still have not cut down the dark gates of the nine heavens; I cannot die!”

He suddenly thought about the vow he made twenty years ago when he was forced to separate from his wife. Meng Chao Ran’s heart became vicious: Ye clan, you say I am not worthy of your mistress and separate us! I still have not taken my wife back; how can I die?

Would it not be too good for you people if I die?

What will Chu Chu do once I am gone?

Meng Chao Ran let out a roar, and his speed increased once more! The people chasing behind him were struck with disbelief.

The cultivation level of their opponent was not that different from them. But their opponent was already injured; his internal organs were in shock. Plus, he was carrying a person weighing more than a hundred pounds. So how was it that they could not catch up?

What kind of logic was this? Even if he was throwing his own life on the line, how could he have reached such levels?

Everyone’s mind was full of doubts, but they continued to give chase.

Their figures appeared and disappeared in the great snow. Snow filled over any footprints… Snow reached the horizon and filled up to the heaven…

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing did not cease to speed ahead. They forced their horses at full speed the whole way. They had been on the road for seven days already. Chu Yang was reticent and did not

talk much. The two cultivated as they traveled in the wind and snow so time passed by quickly for them.

Chu Yang did not say anything, and Gu Du Xing treated each of his words like gold. Naturally, the two were as tight-lipped as a puzzle.

After three more days, Chu Yang saw some people using dogs to pull their sleds in the snow. They thought it seemed fun so they bought one. He and Gu Du Xing sat on the sled while their two strong horses pulled it like mad. Surprisingly, they were travelling even faster than riding on horseback.

They could not help but exclaim in excitement.

Plus, the snow surface was flat so the two could completely concentrate on their cultivation. They traveled like so until they finally reached the wilderness. Seeing that it was dark, they chose a crack in the mountain and brought both horses and sled in. Gu Du Xing used ice energy to create a small snow cove. After going in, they found that it was actually much warmer than outside.

“Another day of travel and we will be at my Beyond the Heavens Sect.” Chu Yang leaned against the snow and said happily.

“What does it look like?” Gu Du Xing showed a rare look of interest, “How about we go there and have a look around? I also want to take a little sightseeing tour.”

Of course Gu Du Xing did not want a sightseeing tour. It was simply that he could see that Chu Yang was homesick so he conveniently said that. The feeling of a wanderer returning home was most heartwarming; Chu Yang would have surely longed to see his master and his junior martial brother.

“Ah, at that time, you must remain calm when you see my junior martial brother.” Talking about Tan Tan, Chu Yang could not help but laugh.

“With my fortitude, there are not many people that could scare

me.” Gu Du Xing said with an arrogant posture.

“Hmm, Du Xing, how much do you think Ji Mo and the rest can accomplish?” Chu Yang said pensively.

“Rest assured. When it comes to resourcefulness and wisdom in battling against the world, they are far inferior to you. But, if it comes to making trouble and chaos, one hundred people cannot match these dandy young masters...” Gu Du Xing said with certainty, “I am willing to bet that they already caused chaos all over Great Zhao before they even reached Continent Center Citadel!”

He paused and said, “The weather is currently cold right now. If it is in spring, the four of them would definitely poke a hole in the heavens!”

Chu Yang tilted his head and thought, “You are right. Especially Ji Mo and Luo Ke Di, the two of them are the masters of trouble.”

“The two of them causing trouble is nothing.” Gu Du Xing sighed, “You don’t know. I will bet that while he left with a hundred silver taels, by the time he gets to Continent Center Citadel, Rui Bu Tong would definitely become a rich man. If that is not the case, I will bathe in the latrine.”

“That monstrous?” Chu Yang’s eyes widened.

“Before, out of respect for you, he did not make a move on Iron Cloud Citadel. After almost two months of inactivity, he is almost sick...” Gu Du Xing rolled his eyes.

“Ah, that’s it.” Chu Yang laughed. He suddenly thought about when he just arrived at Iron Cloud Citadel and pretended to be the bandit Ma Tuo Zi. He could not help but feel joyful.

“As for Dong Wu Shang... This punk usually does not like to cause trouble, but, once he starts, there will definitely be death!” Gu Du Xing sighed, “When Dong Wu Shang pulls out his saber, there won’t be any survivors... I truly find it strange as to how his

dad thought of that odd name. Could it be that the moment he was born, his father saw his killing characteristic and named him Wu Shang?"

"Ah, a talent!" Chu Yang sighed.

"A talent? Dong Wu Shang?"

"I am talking about Dong Wu Shang's father! This kind of prophet is really amazing. To be able to name him so while he was still a babe is really monstrous!" Chu Yang sighed.

"So once Dong Wu Shang causes trouble, he would not stop until there is death." Gu Du Xing said in annoyance.

"You are talking as if it is the end of the world..." Chu Yang said in puzzlement, "Could it be that you, Gu Du Xing, are not like that? Can I ask Revered Sword Artist sir, how many people live under your sword?"

Gu Du Xing's jaw dropped; he was stunned for a while then he said in embarrassment, "Ah... under my hand, no one survives..."

Chu Yang laughed.

During this period, Gu Du Xing had successfully broke through first grade Revered Sword Artist. He was feeling somewhat proud. He also no longer cultivated with Revered Berserker Sword Technique.

One time Chu Yang had an enlightenment; he was able to mobilize the spiritual aura of heaven and earth. Gu Du Xing was able to join in the effort. He unexpectedly was able to break through right to the peak of first grade Revered Sword Artist.

This kind of enlightenment left Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang stunned with disbelief.

Finally, Chu Yang had to bother and threaten the sword spirit for a long time before he was able to coax the technique for Revered Sword Artist cultivation from it. Right now, he was thinking about

how to reasonably hand it to Gu Du Xing...

In any case, all the things that he had were extremely special. Each thing that he brought out was capable of causing a great shock to the whole continent. And here he was coming up with an endless supply of things... This could not be easily explained.

“Big brother, tell me what your junior martial brother really looks like.” Gu Du Xing could not sleep at night. He could not be blamed though; these days, he was too elated.

“Haha, this punk...” Chu Yang was joyful. He spoke excitedly, “...”

After midnight, Gu Du Xing cultivated for a while and then suddenly asked, “Chu Yang, once Ji Mo gets to Great Zhao, would there be any issues for him to find that person? I keep having a feeling...”

“What do you feel?” Chu Yang immediately became alert.

“I keep feeling that there is someone else behind Diwu Qing Rou!” Gu Du Xing pensively rubbed his temple, “When I was looking over your Bu Tian Pavilion’s information on the battle against Golden Horse Riders Department. After thinking about it, I feel more and more that Diwu Qing Rou’s work has the same kind of characteristic as that of a clan!”

“Characteristic of a clan?” Chu Yang’s countenance became very serious. This was an area he never thought of. For Gu Du Xing to bring up this speculation, Chu Yang immediately felt the gravity of the situation.

“To put it simply, Diwu Qing Rou uses the kind of strategies that sees the rest of the world as nothing. He uses the methods that the great clans use in the fight between clans on the continent! It is an effort to simplify everything.”

Gu Du Xing said solemnly, “If every family has a secret group, it would be the mini version of Golden Horse Riders Department.

They would be specialized in dealing with all things that could not be done in the open; things that are underhanded."

"Golden Horse Riders Department is the most obvious thing; it is controlled by him and not the emperor!" Gu Du Xing said gravely, "This is not like a royal court at all; it is the greatest difference between the royal courts and jiang hu. And Diwu Qing Rou is actually able to perfectly bring the two together."

"First of all, the people of Great Zhao are, of course, weak. But the key reason is Diwu Qing Rou's background!" Gu Du Xing said slowly, "You can understand that, under normal circumstances, no matter how weak an emperor, it is still possible for him to deal with a prime minister. Even if that prime minister has the power to control the court..."

"The occurrence of this situation can only have one possible explanation... A massive power is controlling it! And it is not that the emperor of Great Zhao cannot fight against Diwu Qing Rou; he cannot go against that power!"

Gu Du Xing said slowly, "This is my speculation!"

Chu Yang frowned and became pensive.

Could it be that Diwu Qing Rou comes from a clan? Could the fight in Lower Three Heavens be controlled by someone? These things were all never considered by Chu Yang.

Gu Du Xing came from a clan; if it was anyone else, they would never have brought up this issue.

However, Gu Du Xing had completely placed himself in Chu Yang's dangerous situation; he had placed himself in the position of another. He looked at it from another person's point of view. Thus, he was able to bring up an entirely different conclusion like this.

Such an angle was a little beyond Chu Yang's scope.

But Chu Yang felt that these words were not without reason!

All of it will have to wait to be verified by him...

Early next morning, the sky was overcast, and cold wind howled. After travelling for less than a hundred miles, snow unexpectedly came down. In fact, it grew heavier and heavier, and covered heaven and earth within moments...

Howling winds along with snowflakes bombarding their faces practically rendered their mouths and noses frozen.

“Huh? In such a great snowstorm, how could there be a fire?” Chu Yang suspiciously looked up and inhaled a few times.

Gu Du Xing also looked up and said pensively, “It’s probably on a mountain near here. Hmm, based on the direction of the wind, it should be ahead of us. This smell... The smell of the fire is very strong. It is not a forest fire... It seems the burning of buildings...”

“In front of us? Buildings?” Chu Yang frowned; his face suddenly lost its color, “Could something have happened to Beyond the Heavens Sect?”

Chapter 250: Don't belittle forever

"Beyond the Heavens Sect is in trouble?" Gu Du Xing was stunned.

Chu Yang whipped the pair of horses pulling the sled; the horses neighed and sped up quickly on the road.

"If something happens to Beyond the Heavens Sect, the target is definitely my master and my junior martial brother!" Chu Yang's face was icy. He grunted and said with eyes ablaze, "At Beyond the Heavens Sect, besides those two people, no others can have an impact on me!"

"You are saying Diwu Qing Rou is taking revenge?" Gu Du Xing suddenly realized.

"Exactly!" Chu Yang was filled with anxiousness. There was a look of worry in his eyes. Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan were two people that Chu Yang absolutely could not lose.

"Stay calm!" Gu Du Xing held Chu Yang's shoulder, "Even if Diwu Qing Rou is currently taking revenge, what can the two of us do? If Diwu Qing Rou wants to deal with your master, how can the two of us deal with this?"

"Even if we cannot deal with it, we still have to go!" Chu Yang grunted. His gaze was slowly becoming calm and pensive once more.

"We must have a foolproof plan!" Gu Du Xing started to contemplate.

During this encounter, Chu Yang will have two weaknesses! One is his master, and the other is his junior martial brother! Beyond the Heavens Sect is in trouble. Even if Chu Yang is trying to be calm right now, he could not.

So at this moment, I must be calm! Plus, I have to help Chu Yang figure out a plan. If I become emotional and impulsive like Chu

Yang, then we are truly done!

“Snow storm… mountain… Beyond the Heavens Sect…” Gu Du Xing sat on the sled as it glided forward as if it was flying. His eyebrows pinched together. How can we resolve this dangerous situation?

“There is also Purple Bamboo Garden!” Chu Yang quietly added. His fore was looking tyrannical showing signs of a brewing storm.

“No matter what, first, your face cannot be seen. Second, we cannot be reckless in front of the enemies!” Gu Du Xing said gravely, “Third, we must rescue people…”

While these were his words, looking at smoke filling the sky, Beyond the Heavens Sect’s outlook was surely grave.

“You are right.” Chu Yang pulled out his hand showing two sets of white clothes, “Put it on. In this kind of weather, it will be hard for them to discover us.” Then he pulled out a bottle. He reached out and released Gu Du Xing’s bun. Using his martial energy, he sent the powder from the bottle all over Gu Du Xing’s head.

Gu Du Xing’s whole head of black hair had unexpectedly become the same color as his clothes.

“Spread it all over your face.” As Chu Yang said this, he poured the powder all over his own head. Then he stood up and put on his own white clothes.

In the blink of an eye, the two became white from head to tail. In this snow storm, they were essentially invisible.

Then, Chu Yang brought out a small bag from out of nowhere. He started to pull out many shiny things and hid them on his body. They were all strange hidden weapons that looked like glistening demons’ eyes in an icy cold night.

“You… You brought so many weird weapons…” Gu Du Xing was dizzy from looking at them. These things were all hidden weapons that were capable of taking lives and extremely insidious. He could

not believe that Chu Yang had prepared so many.

“You don’t know how to use these things; leave them to me.” Chu was busily putting the last few sophisticated-looking daggers around his waist. Nine Tribulations Sword edge suddenly clanked from inside Chu Yang’s dantian. And, with a raging killing intent, it went into the sword on Chu Yang’s hand.

The sword point was not to be outdone as it went right after and took its own place.

“Clang!” The sword suddenly let out a soft ring from inside the sheath. It was an air full of fury as if was saying to its owner: We are ready!

This little ring was enough to startle Gu Du Xing!

He could not help but stare at Chu Yang.

The hands did not move and the body did not move, but the sword rang out in its sheath! This was the aura of an Emperor level swordsman! Emperor level sword aura!

How could Chu Yang have such massive power?

Plus, a moment ago, Gu Du Xing could clearly sense a sword that could pierce the high heavens!

As a person who trained with swords, Gu Du Xing understood well that such a sword aura was invincible! It was the sharpest sword intent in the whole world!

As he was planning to speak up, Chu Yang slowly closed his eyes.

A sword aura stirred and did not cease to emanate from Chu Yang’s body. Then it was gradually absorbed by the sword still in its sheath. It unexpectedly formed a halo of arrogant and fierce sword intent in the air seeming to be able to cut the icy wind into pieces!

A bloody aura raged on, growing fiercer and fiercer…

Being affected by this fierce sword aura, Gu Du Xing suddenly felt

the sword aura within his own body becoming excited. Black Dragon Sword rang out. Gu Du Xing suddenly felt as if he had just awoken. It felt as if a small clear stream was running right through his head. At the same time, he felt something like lightning striking right past his ear.

Boom!

Gu Du Xing suddenly felt an explosion in his head. A dense sword aura surged out from his body.

Swordsman!

From now on, Gu Du Xing had officially entered the ranks of swordsmen!

It was yet another convenient windfall. Gu Du Xing was truly speechless... Such a great fortune filled his body and soul with a fighting spirit.

The horses galloped as if they were flying. They seemed like a wisp of smoke on top of the snow and covered a great distance in just a blink of an eye!

Atop the sled, the two people were like two swords already out of their sheaths aiming directly at Beyond the Heavens Sect! All the bystanders who saw this felt a chill from their heads to their toes!

Only another hour and they would arrive at Beyond the Heavens Sect!

Master, you must hold on! You must hold on!

Chu Yang's heart cried out! In this moment, he only regretted that he did not have a pair of wings!

On the road, vast expanses fell back behind them.

*****

Meng Chao Ran was breathing heavily. It felt as if his throat was broken. While his gaze was still calm and indifferent like before, his face was as red as blood.

Using his familiarity of the terrain, he had led the enemies around this forest for no less than four hours! But the cliff, the place he wanted to get to most, was essentially unreachable.

There, they had a chance of survival, Heavenly Blizzard!

There reason it was called Heavenly Blizzard was because of its special condition. Under the cliff was a cave that went right through the mountain. In this snowy weather, no one could see it. Especially when the crevice of the mountain was covered with more than two hundred feet of snow. He only needed to reach it and drop his body down. His life would not be risked because of this thick snow.

As long as he was still breathing, he could find the entrance to that cave under the snow and hide. Then he could escape or hide there; both of these options were safe.

After all, this cave was created by Wu Yun Liang, Meng Chao Ran and Kong Jing Feng. Even in Beyond the Heavens Sect, not many people knew about it.

However, the enemies, now, seemed to be aware of his plan. They surrounded him. Some of them did not even hesitate to toss out their own swords to prevent him from jumping down the cliff!

They did not know what was there. But Meng Chao Ran wanted to go there so they absolutely could not allow him to do so.

Meng Chao Ran's body was crisscrossed with dozens of wounds after many deadly battles!

Wu Yun Liang moved like the wind. He had joined up with Meng Chao Ran time and time again and then separated. But, no matter what, if Meng Chao Ran was in mortal danger, Wu Yun Liang would rush over without any hesitation.

But there was a limit to human strength. At this point, the two had almost run out of steam!

Tan Tan was lying unconscious in Meng Chao Ran's arm; his

whole body was without any injuries.

Meng Chao Ran continued to hold on to his disciple and not let him get injured.

Any ordinary person would get goosebumps if they looked at Tan Tan, but Meng Chao Ran loved him a lot!

Even if the rest of the world belittles you! Casts you aside! You are precious to me! With me here, you will not suffer!

Meng Chao Ran acted so, practically proving it, by using his very own life!

With a whoosh, a figure appeared behind Meng Chao Ran like a flash. Meng Chao Ran's gaze remained calm, but his body suddenly moved. Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement. His figure became dreamy as it flashed a few times. Each time it flashed, it moved beyond people's expectation. The sword in his hand was like a snake as it moved powerfully in the snow.

Clang... clang... clang...

The sound of contact rang out softly. Meng Chao Ran, with one hand holding the sword, had went through more than ten exchanges against his enemy as his body slowly moved back.

His opponent was a sixth grade Revered Martial Artist who did not have it easy either. After chasing for such a long time, he had lost a lot of energy and was also breathing heavily with a purple face.

In any case, he was not living for decades in this kind of Beyond the Heavens Sect weather like Meng Chao Ran had been. Compared to this place, Great Zhao's weather was much more temperate. Especially in this kind of snowy weather. At first, one did not feel anything, but after energy had been consumed for a while, there would be a growing tightness in the chest!

A mocking voice, sounding excited and tired at the same time, rang out, "Meng Chao Ran, let's see where you are going to run to

now!”

Behind Meng Chao Ran’s back, two people in white suddenly appeared; one on the left and one on the right, the rushed toward him!

The three Revered Martial Artists, two sixth grade and one ninth grade, formed a triangle surrounding Meng Chao Ran. There was no way to escape!

Utter despair!

Meng Chao Ran suddenly became alert!

He did not evade or run away anymore. His two legs were suddenly planted firm into the snow. He was like a motionless mountain.

His clothes were already tattered, and his body was covered with injuries. But, standing there, he unexpectedly looked awe-inspiring! This kind of air was as strong as a solid object. Surprisingly, it made the three Revered Martial Artists hesitant to advance any further. On the contrary, they seemed anxious as they cautiously took a step back.

In their hearts, these three knew well that, in such a situation, Meng Chao Ran was finally going to make his final desperate move!

Their opponent was calm. Whether a real or pretended calmness, they had seen enough. But with an opponent like Meng Chao Ran, this bone chilling calmness from beginning to end was the first. When they first saw him, his gaze was already like that. At this point of despair, it still did not change. It was still a kind of indifference that looked down on and did not care for anything.

It was a kind of calmness and indifference from the bones; it was a kind of arrogance and loneliness from the soul!

With such a person, the three people would bet that they had never met in their lives! At this moment, this person was taking a

desperate stance, but he remained calm, indifferent and elegant. Such a thing made the three feel a chill all at once.

Meng Chao Ran calmly smiled and slowly looked up. He felt the cold snowflakes on his burning face. The relaxing feel of the cold seeped into his soul, and he let out a sigh... as if a burden was lifted off him.

Then he gently let go. Tan Tan's body slowly fell to the ground.

He calmly looked down at his sword. His gaze was persistent and loving. His figure was tall and firm as he stood quietly in the snow storm. Lonely and arrogant.

While his body was filled with injuries, and his clothes were tattered, this kind of majestic appearance was from his core! It was a kind of nobility that would still exist even if he was shattered to pieces!

The three people surrounding him suddenly all had the same strange feeling.

A feeling of shame.

Even though the three of them could definitely kill him, they all still had an odd notion: We are not worthy of killing him!

The sword light flashed, and the blade shined brilliantly. It was like a living entity currently joining with his soul as they pushed each other on. It was like two teammates putting their lives on the line for each other and exchanging their souls as they prepared for a great battle.

Meng Chao Ran smiled as he gently flicked the sword with his finger. The sword trembled and rang out. The sound was like dragons and tigers roaring as it shocked the snow in the air and freely showed its fierce killing intent!

Meng Chao Ran suddenly straightened like a sword out of its sheath. Looking up, the loneliness and iciness had disappeared. There was only a sharp sword aura left. He became one with the

sword in his hand.

His whole body was in shock as sword aura shot out in all directions. He never moved, but he was like a bomb exploding. Under the sword aura, the snow under him was pushed up and shot out in four directions!

Meng Chao Ran's dark hair flew up fiercely in the falling snow. Raising his sword, he recited, "It's difficult for the rain and wind to erase the marks in your heart; parting can never destroy love..."

While he was reciting coolly, Meng Chao Ran's eyes glimmered with tears. All of a sudden, he stomped and spun up into the air for more than seventy feet. He was like a soaring eagle as he lamented softly, "...We not take what is eternal lightly..."

His body and the sword became a dragon flying in the air; they became light as a radiance burst from the sword, and he shot through the air!

"... Only in parting does everything become desolate..."

These four verses was Meng Chao Ran's way of telling himself, his life, and his love a final painful farewell...

Even though he was unwilling!

But this sword move was one of no return!

His face remained cool and calm as before, but from the depth of his eyes, a wistful nostalgic feeling quietly appeared. It brought with it a kind of eternal loneliness and pain which mixed with the sword's radiance as it fiercely plunged into the sky!

This was a life and death move! But it also brought with it a heart-breaking pain!

In desperation, Meng Chao Ran used this deadly sword move!

Chapter 251: Hanging by a thread

“Charge! Kill him!” The three yelled out loud at the same time and rushed in with their swords.

Just now, while they did not hesitate for long, it was enough for Meng Chao Ran’s sword aura to quickly reach its peak. At this moment, that sword aura was formed, and its power was especially great!

From their standpoint, this was something that should not have happened. When facing an enemy, it was most important to not allow the enemy to gather momentum, by attacking him nonstop; that was how one could gain the advantage. But they had currently allowed the enemy to completely garner up his sword aura; they were unexpectedly not feeling regretful!

Facing such a sword, someone would, of course, get injured. But they did not regret it! This was a extraordinary state of mind!

Although their opponent did not speak from beginning to end. Just seeing him so calm, cool and firm like that was enough to gain their respect!

Three figures rushed at him like they were flying!

“Little martial brother!” From a distance, Wu Yun Liang desperately ran over with disheveled hair. Behind him, the ninth grade Revered Martial Artist and the other people fighting with him were also not doing any better.

Meng Chao Ran seemed to not hear anything at all. There was only a faint smile filled with love as he lowered his sword!

The swords shined blindingly as it came crashing down.

The four sword lights suddenly went against each other as they met in one place!

The atmosphere shined to an extreme brightness when the four

people's swords touched. Then, as if a bomb exploded, countless sword light rays flew everywhere!

The cold light shined so brightly it made the people running toward him involuntarily close their eyes!

Meng Chao Ran let out a painful roar as he flew backward like a loose kite.

In the other three directions, there were simultaneously three screams!

Four figures were immediately sent back to their original positions. This time, at the point where the swords met, blood splattered on the ground, and countless pieces of flesh fell.

The three people now had an addition of more than a dozen sword wounds as they fell from the air. After landing on the ground, the first thing they did was look at Meng Chao Ran.

For some reason, they were actually currently concerned with Meng Chao Ran's expression. They wondered if that person's mask of indifference still remained on his face or if he did not have to time to recover his expression after being gravely injured!

They were disappointed.

Meng Chao Ran's body trembled slightly; fresh blood from the wounds on his body did not stop flowing. With his sword pointing to the ground, hot blood dripped endlessly from his sword point. On his face, there was still an everlasting indifference. As he eyed the three people, there was still nothing but iciness and indifference in his gaze.

"Powerful!" A person from the group smiled and said, "We have met countless masters much more powerful than you. But to be able to maintain such calmness, Meng Chao Ran, you are the first! It would be worthwhile to die by your hand!"

"Haha!"

After letting out two laughs, his chest suddenly burst, and blood splattered in all directions. He slowly fell to the ground with a plop and sank into the snow. There was no longer any breath left, but his face still carried a smile.

During that previous move, Meng Chao Ran's sword had pierced right through his chest.

Meng Chao Ran coolly looked. Slowly raising his sword, he said, "Come! Fight! It's only life or death. Jiang Hu is the path of life and death after all. To be able to leave with a smile is also a state!"

Surprisingly, he continued to face the two remaining enemies and issued his challenge.

"Little martial brother! Are you okay?" Wu Yun Liang rushed to his side at the speed of flight. This sect master of Beyond the Heavens Sect was panting heavily as he held his sword. His hair was disheveled and his body was covered with scars. Even his face had two cuts.

The seven remaining opponents surrounded the two in the blink of an eye. Everyone was panting heavily.

"I can still breathe." Meng Chao Ran smiled. As he looked at Wu Yun Liang, there was a little less indifference and a little more care in his gaze.

It was only with those who were close to him that Meng Chao Ran's expression changed. He remained unmoved with everyone else!

Wu Yun Liang panted and chuckled, "Powerful! Hmm, how could you not pay a big price if you want to deal with our Beyond the Heavens Sect? Haha... cough cough..."

"We can still pay that price!" That ninth grade Revered Martial Master reached them. He grunted and tried to suppress pressure in his chest. He sneered, "If we can cause King of Hell Chu to go crazy, any price is worth it!"

“Go crazy?” Meng Chao Ran muttered. Then he said confidently, “My disciple will never go crazy.”

“Charge!” That ninth grade Revered Martial Artist raised his arm, “Don’t let this stretch out any longer.”

“Cough cough… cough cough…” On the ground, snow suddenly pushed up. Tan Tan just crawled out in a daze. He stood up and looked around.

His eyes went from confused to alert in a moment. Then it was followed by grief and anger…

He jumped up, and without saying anything, he pulled out his sword and stood in formation with Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang.

Facing him was none other than that female Revered Martial Artist. Looking at Tan Tan’s strange face and his serious expression, she could not help but feel nauseated.

With a loud scream, the battle exploded once more.

*****

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing silently snuck into Beyond the Heavens Sect. This road, even if Chu Yang closed his eyes, he could still find his way. That was why the two could enter without anyone knowing.

After moving quickly for a while, a white snow covered mountainous area was in front of them. A purple bamboo forest was swaying in the wind.

“This is Purple Bamboo Garden!” Chu Yang cautiously advanced, “There has been fighting here.”

“After them!”

Chu Yang went first as he followed the traces left behind.

Inside Purple Bamboo Forest, there were signs of battle every now and then. There were many places where the heavy snow did

not have time to cover up the traces of blood.

Chu Yang's countenance grew grave.

"The blood here has not frozen yet." Almost right at the moment they entered Purple Bamboo Forest, Gu Du Xing had already checked all the traces with his hand; his spirit rose.

In such weather like this, and the blood had yet to freeze, this meant that the battle did not happen too long ago. There was still hope. The weight in Chu Yang's heart lightened as he rushed to follow the traces.

Suddenly, footsteps were heard from in front of them. It seemed that there were other people trying hard to give chase as well. Their heavy panting could be heard clearly.

"What should we do now? Should we join in the fight or return to the sect?"

"Return to the sect? Are you kidding me? This is not over yet."

"It's terrifying!" One person said fearfully, "Who knew that those two people from Beyond the Heavens Sect were so powerful…"

"Let's catch up quickly or that bastard will get angry!"

Killing intent suddenly flashed in Chu Yang's eyes as he quietly got closer to them.

They could only see two people in red trekking in the deep snow and talking as they went along.

"People of Saintly Saber Pavilion." Chu Yang grunted coldly. Dropping his hand, two sword fragments had already appeared in his hand. Right after, he flicked his wrist, and two flying meteors shot out.

Pop! Pop!

The two people could only let out one painful scream before dropping into a pile of snow. They were only exhausted so how could they have been aware of being ambushed from behind?

Chu Yang's figure flashed and he was immediately there. He grabbed the hair of one person and yanked him up. Between the two, only one was fatally hit, and the other one was gravely injured. He wanted to ask a few questions.

"People of Saintly Saber Pavilion?" Chu Yang asked. But life was dissipating from that person's eyes. He was now exhaling more than inhaling.

The sword fragment only hit his waist; it was not supposed to endanger his life. But Chu Yang did not know that there was already another injury on his body. Wu Yun Liang had slashed him once. Now that he received another slash, he had died...

"Bad luck!" Chu Yang tossed his body to the ground.

"There is fighting over there!" Gu Du Xing listened carefully.

"Let's go!"

The two white figures flashed like lightning.

After some distance, a strange sound of howling was heard from afar. Chu Yang trembled, and a odd expression appeared on his face.

There was an odd expression on Gu Du Xing's face as well.

"Wooh... I say, big sister. Don't hit my face..." It was the sound of a male duck getting killed and the angry howling of a wolf, "Such a handsome face like this; doesn't it break your heart to ruin it?"

"It's Tan Tan's voice." Chu Yang said excitedly.

Gu Du Xing's stone-cold face twitched slightly. This guy is really strange. How narcissistic can you be to say something like that especially at the moment when your life is in danger???

The two carefully advanced. From a distance, they could see some people fighting fiercely. Three people were surround in the center. Their bodies were covered with injuries, and the situation was extremely dangerous. It was indeed Wu Yun Liang, Meng Chao

Ran and Tan Tan!

Looking at the nonstop flow of blood, Chu Yang's face immediately convulsed.

Meng Chao Ran and company were at the losing point; they could lose their lives at any moment!

"Remain calm!" Chu Yang told himself; then he waved his hand to signal Gu Du Xing.

Gu Du Xing silently nodded and slowly bent down his body. Chu Yang sat down, and suddenly activated his martial energy. His body glided on the ground. Right at the moment he moved, Gu Du Xing fiercely pushed both palms against the soles of Chu Yang's feet.

Under normal circumstances, this would have been useless. But currently, there was a lot of snow on the ground! With a swoosh, he was quickly gliding toward the battle.

White clothes, white hair, and white brows, he was no different from a small pile of snow moved quickly.

The people fighting seemed to hear a faint sound. They paused and turned to look. In front of them was only snow; they did not discover anything.

Even though Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang were trying hard, they were starting to feel hopeless. They knew that they were burnt out lamps, and they could not hold on much longer.

The only reason their enemies did not fight more fiercely was because they wanted to reduce their loss.

In any case, this terrain was clear. If there was anyone, they could easily be seen with just a glance. Plus, the three of them no longer had the strength to break out of this encirclement.

Tan Tan roared angrily as he fought with the female Revered Martial Artist. This Revered Martial Artist's martial power was

much stronger than his. But she was injured earlier, and she fought with Wu Yun Liang a few times so she had lost seventy percent of that power already.

In addition, this was high up in the mountain, and it was extremely cold; her body was not doing well so she unexpectedly could not pin down Tan Tan. What drove her crazy was the fact that this hideous guy surprisingly loved his face; he would have sooner taken a sword to the shoulder than let his face suffer from a scratch...

“Big sister, I am begging you. You can kill me if you want, but don’t ruin my handsome face...” Tan Tan felt there was no hope so he had to beg, “I am still not married...”

The Revered Martial Artist almost fainted from these words.

At that very moment, she suddenly saw an unimaginable scene and could not help but blurt out in shock!

Behind the ninth grade Revered Martial Artist, a pile of white snow suddenly stood up. A sword seemed to appear from the netherworld. It fiercely pierced through the chest of this ninth grade Revered Martial Artist with thunderous rage...

Chapter 252: Thunderous attack

This Revered Martial Artist instinctively sensed the danger and swung his body forward. His sword slashed back creating a blinding flash of sword light.

Everyone who saw this sword move cried out internally in enlightenment. In an unguarded moment, and he was able to react like that. This was truly the peak of cultivation; standing firm in a losing position.

This sword move was truly amazing. Everyone believed that even if the enemy behind him was a King level master, that sword move would have blocked the attack.

But...

What happened next surprised everyone.

Ka!

A very soft sound rang out. Two swords met each other. The ninth grade Revered Martial Artist's sword surprisingly did not even slow down the attack for even a second. It was cut into two like a piece of paper!

That other sword still went after him at an extremely fast speed!

Pop!

That ninth grade Revered Martial Artist was flying in the air when his figure suddenly paused. He eyes were empty; there was only despair.

On his chest, a blood flower bloomed brightly. On that flower, a sword point shined coldly. This ninth grade Revered Martial Artist was in daze and disbelief as he looked down at the half of the sword that had pierced through his heart. Surprise and hopelessness filled his eyes!

Swoosh!

The sword just pierced through, and it was suddenly pulled back. Its white blade became a faint shadow in the snow and wind as it rushed to another ninth grade Revered Martial Artist!

Behind it, the ninth grade Revered Martial Artist who was hit was now holding on to his chest as he slowly fell to the ground. His action was like a slow motion film while that mysterious person in white was moving as fast as lightning!

One fast and one slow, it was too much of a contrast!

That one sword slash earlier was both precise and ruthless. It had unexpectedly ended the life of a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist!

“Big brother!” The remaining ninth grade Revered Martial Artist screamed out. He looked up and yelled in fury, “Bastard! I will kill you!”

Raising his sword, he even abandoned Wu Yun Liang as he went head on with crazy rage!

But right at this moment, that faint white shadow suddenly backed up with a swoosh.

He was clearly advancing with all his strength, but he had immediately backed up in the blink of an eye. As it turned out, he was actually moving back the whole time. However, in the eyes of others, he seemed to be moving forward!

This was an extremely precise move that was capable of fooling the eyes of others!

As if forward, as if backward; as if there, as if gone!

Meng Chao Ran and Wu Yun Liang exclaimed internally!

This was too familiar!

Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement!

But such Fleeting Snow Cloud Movement was beyond the realm of understanding of these two!

That ninth grade Revered Martial Artist angrily roared like thunder. He desperately tried to catch the person. But at that very moment, under the snow behind him, a white shadow shot up!

He swung one sword like lightning right through the chest! There was an unexpected second person in white! Not just one!

And the sword of the person in white in front of him continued to move like the wind; it went for the chest of a sixth grade Revered Martial Artist nearby! Sword and person were one as they attacked feverishly!

This sixth grade Revered Martial Artist terrified. He shouted and pulled out his sword in desperation. But his opponent did not even try to dodge. With a swoosh, the sword had went through his stomach, but the person in white also brought with him blood flower from inside the Revered Martial Artist's body... out!

Yes, from inside his body... out!

The entire body of the person in white was soaked with blood. On his stomach there was almost clear cut. It was the stab from his opponent earlier. Pausing on the snow, his body still had pieces of that sixth grade Revered Martial Artist's organs...

Behind him, that sixth grade Revered Martial Artist only had two legs, two arms, a head, and a layer of skin connecting everything. At the stomach, his body had completely disappeared! It had become a large opening!

Such a big hole, even a wild boar... could go through!

The eyes on this sixth grade Revered Martial Artist unexpectedly widened. He plopped to the ground, and his body divided into five pieces...

Head, two legs, two arms...

No body...

The remaining ninth grade Revered Martial Artist roared with

burning red eyes as he rushed over. But he suddenly screamed out when he reached half of the way. There was a pop, and a sharp sword point came out of his chest. It flashed with an icy white light and was gone.

He shouted and ferociously palmed backward. The person who attacked from behind quickly backed up and greeted his palm with another. Bam! That person in white flew outward like a loose kite. But, on the chest of the ninth grade Revered Martial Artist, at the position of his heart, there was a hole that went right through his body, and fresh blood was spewing out!

He frowned and murmured, “Still one more left! Still one more left!” While everyone still did not understand his words, he had fallen down and completely stopped moving.

In a blink of an eye, two ninth grade Revered Martial Arists and one sixth grade Revered Martial Artist had died tragically on the spot!

All of these things happened in a moment; it was so quick that everyone felt that even if their bodies were covered with eyes, they could not have seen all the details of what had just transpired.

All of heaven and earth became quiet; even the sound of panting had ceased completely.

Everyone opened their eyes wide to look; the stood stunned with chaotic feelings going through their minds.

The whole thing was unbelievable!

A moment ago, the Revered Martial Artists of Golden Horse Riders Department had complete upper hand. Now, they were dumbfounded!

The enemies were on their last leg so they did not want to pay a big price and chose to kill their enemies slowly... This place was mountainous; even if the enemies were able to get martial experts to come in their aid that aid would come unnoticed. And at that

moment, they would still have time to kill their enemies.

After all, everyone had fought and chase for a long time. Both sides had lost almost all of their strength. Even the ninth grade Revered Martial Artists were exhausted. They were trying to save whatever energy they could. If they acted hastily, they risked dying together with the enemies... In this kind of situation, who would have wanted to be the sacrificial lamb?

In any case, with each second that passed by, the enemies were weakened by another part. The enemies could barely even hold on to their swords. Everything was in the palm of their hands; they only needed to deal a final blow, and their task would be over. Great rewards were waiting for them upon their return...

They would have been able to deal the greatest possible blow to King of Hell Chu!

It could be said that if King of Hell Chu fell, Great Zhao would have won the battle of nations. Today's battle was the foundation of everything. Its massive effect was unspeakable!

However, no one ever expected that such perfect outcome would turn upside down in a blink of an eye! They were just full of joy, and, now, they had fallen into an abyss.

Two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists died as fast as lightning; they had become two corpses! They died needlessly!

As for that sixth grade Revered Martial Artist, he was even more pitiful. In a blink of an eye, his opponent had beaten him to pieces...

From a distance, a voice was heard. Everyone hastily turned; they could see the person in white who sneaked an attack on the second ninth grade Revered Martial Artist had stood up. Fresh blood did not stop coming out the edge of his mouth, but he remained as erect as a spear. And, like that, he walked over step by step. (TLN: May not be necessary, but in case your head is spinning like mine is

right now. This guy is Gu Du Xing. The blood soaked one is Chu Yang.)

As he continued to approach them, everyone could clearly sense a sword radiating with cold light slowly approaching them; it showed a sharp edge as if it could slash through everything!

A swordsman!

This is a swordsman!

A Revered level swordsman! No wonder he was able to sneak attack the ninth grade Revered Martial Artist so easily!

This person in white had white hair; even his face and his brows were as white as snow just like the rest of his body. Even if they were standing right in front of his face, they would not have been able to see what he looked like.

At this point, the person in white that had appeared first also slowly turned around. He was now a person wearing blood red clothing; this made it even harder to see what he looked like.

Only his piercing eyes and his sharp temperament was enough to let everyone know that he was also a swordsman!

Swordsmen! In this moment, everyone from Golden Horse Riders Department felt like they want to cry.

In this Lower Three Heavens, how many swordsmen were there? Under normal circumstances, meeting one swordsman was already rare. Right now, in the moment they are exhausted and burnt out, two swordsmen unexpectedly appeared!

This kind of thing truly left people speechless!

While the two were both injured, their auras did not diminish.

If they counted Tan Tan, the situation was now reversed. Meng Chao Ran's side now had five people while Golden Horse Riders Department's side suddenly became a party of four. In term of numbers, they had fallen into a disadvantageous position.

Tan Tan relaxed. He could only feel all the wounds on his body. There was not one place that did not hurt or burn. His whole body was without one bit of energy. He plopped on the ground and became unconscious. He had been out of strength long before this, but he was simply struggling to fight and keep himself from falling down. Now that he was relaxed, how could he maintain that state any further?

Wu Yun Liang suspiciously eyed they two people in white in front him. In his memory, these two people did not seem to exist. Where did these two people come from? Why are they helping me? But, no matter what, we are now temporarily out of danger.

Meng Chao Ran calmly watched his enemies as before. He said casually, “Do you people want to continue?”

His words strongly hinted: This is an ambush I have prepared ahead of time! You people have fallen into my trap!

The four Revered Martial Artists of Golden Horse Riders Department looked at each other; this was a dilemma.

Meng Chao Ran said frankly, “We have no personal vendetta against each other. Today’s battle, let’s end it here. If you don’t want to leave your lives here, I will not see you off.”

“This is your trap? You planned this ahead of time?” That female Revered Martial Artist said in disbelief.

“Perhaps yes, perhaps no…” Meng Chao Ran said ambiguously, “I just never thought… that it would be in such a timely manner…” Meng Chao Ran said so because he recognized one of the two people.

While he did not see what the person look like, that gaze was enough for Meng Chao Ran to immediately recognize that: This person in Chu Yang! My disciple! No matter what Chu Yang changes into, how could he fool the eyes of the person who raised him?

This had led Meng Chao Ran to make this impromptu decision.

He and his eldest martial brother had lost all fighting strength. It was pure mental power that kept them going. Now that their aid had arrived, they naturally let out a sigh of relief. But the moment they did this, the two even had trouble standing straight let alone fight!

If it was indeed Chu Yang, he seemed to have improved a lot. But how much could he have advanced in such a short time? Moreover, they were successful with their sneak attacks, but his stomach suffered a serious wound! This wound was enough to cost him his life. If they continued to fight, the injuries would become more severe, and the consequences would be unimaginable...

And the remaining person, while he was able to kill a ninth grade Revered Martial Artist, his injuries were also not light. The blood on the edge of his mouth was bright red; it was the blood of his internal organs. If he continued to fight, he would probably have difficulties keeping his life.

Therefore, Meng Chao Ran immediately made this decision.

Chapter 253: This cannot be...

While four people had died on the other side and those who remained were also injured, their fighting strength remained greater! More importantly, Chu Yang's identity should not be revealed, and he definitely could not die!

If they had to fight, even if they would win in the end, they would at least lose two or three lives!

So Meng Chao Ran made a quick decision to scare the enemies into retreating first!

Although the enemies had attacked Beyond the Heavens Sect, and the hatred between them was as deep as the sea, their lives had to be saved first no matter what.

Meng Chao Ran's calmness had proven to be most useful at this moment!

The four opponents were now scared witless. Their two leaders had died, and all those remaining were injured. The current situation was very clear: If they continued to fight, they could only die together with their enemies!

"Let's go!" Giving Meng Chao Ran's group a hateful look, that female Revered Martial Artist angrily waved her arm. They did not even bother to gather the bodies of their fallen comrades as they turned and left.

Meng Chao Ran said casually, "Please go back and tell the Prime Minister... Today's debt, Beyond the Heavens Sect will definitely remember it!"

The female Revered Martial Artist let out a cold snort and did not reply. The four disappeared within the wind and snow in a blink of an eye. At the blood-soaked battlefield, only five people remained...

Meng Chao Ran watched as their opponents disappeared from

view. His two legs finally faltered, and he plopped to the ground. He only had time to say, “Chu Yang, quickly! Go to the cliff…”

Then he fainted; his face was pale and his breathing was faint and weak.

“Chu Yang? You are Chu Yang?” Wu Yun Liang’s eyes widened in disbelief. He looked doubtfully at the strange person who was white from head to toe.

“I am Chu Yang. Eldest martial uncle, long time no see.” Chu Yang held his wound with one hand while ripping his shirt’s hem with the other. He temporarily wrapped up his wound.

“So it is really you…” Wu Yun Liang sighed. He rolled to the ground and laughed with difficulty, “Quickly do as your master said… We are on the verge of dying…”

Gu Du Xing hobbled over. He let out a dry cough and said, “Ninth grade Revered Martial Artist… really powerful!” He maintained a strong posture, but his injuries were not light.

Meng Chao Ran’s group was, of course, burnt out, but did Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing not rush over a great distance to come to this desperate fight? The fact that they were able to achieve such victory was already the best possible situation…

After directing Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing to a secret cave, Wu Yun Liang felt completely relaxed; he immediately fell unconscious.

This cave was hidden under many layers of snow. In the sky, snow continued to fly. Everyone’s footprints disappeared without a trace in no time.

Not long after everyone left, the Revered Martial Artists of Golden Horse Riders Department led a large group of people back. But, of course, they were fighting thin air. These people were of Saintly Saber Pavilion and Black Blood League, two big sects that surrounded Beyond the Heavens Sect…

They had planned to temporarily retreat and return after that have gathered more people. According to their speculation, all of these people were seriously injured. Even if they escaped… how far could they have gone? They never though that when they returned, there opponents had disappeared without a trace!

After searching surround area for a long time, they still could not find anything; the only thing they could do was bitterly withdraw.

Underneath the snow cover, inside the cave…

Meng Chao Ran and the other two were unconscious for two days and two nights. Chu Yang gave each of them a drink of Vitality Spring Water so their lives were not in danger. But the three had lost a lot of blood and spiritual power. Plus, they were physically exhausted to the extreme limit… They needed to slowly recover from these things.

After that palm, Gu Du Xing also suffered from internal injuries. He needed two days to get rid of all the blood clots. As for Chu Yang's stomach, he recovered a little quicker than everyone else; at most, he had to hear complaints from the sword spirit for a while.

"There is something I cannot figure out!" Gu Du Xing frowned. He sat with his legs folded and said suspiciously, "We both did sneak attacks; they were both ninth grade Revered Martial Artists; they were both hit at the hearts! Why did the other person immediately die while the person I hit was able to hit one palm back? This cannot be!"

Chu Yang coughed dryly and said, "This… this…"

"Too hard to comprehend." Gu Du Xing could not figure it out no matter what, "It was clear that we both hit the heart! Plus, I even added an invisible sword aura. And my martial power is stronger than yours… Why?"

Chu Yang hastily coughed and said, "Maybe there are some people are not normal; they were born with their hearts on the

right.” He thought to himself: Perhaps you want me to tell you I am the master of Nine Tribulations Sword? On my sword, there was the sword point and sword edge of Nine Tribulations Sword; that was an equivalent representation of Nine Tribulations Sword already. Do you think your block of steel could compare to it?

“This is not what I am talking about. How could I not know if I hit the heart or not?” Gu Du Xing said in annoyance, “They are two totally different feelings! I am not that stupid! What I mean is that it was right he turned around and palmed me. But the guy you snuck up and stabbed died immediately; this does not make sense…”

“Why?”

Chu Yang helplessly looked at Gu Du Xing’s inquisitive appearance and said, “This… I also don’t know. You should go and ask him…”

“Fudge!” Gu Du Xing was speechless. Ask him? Ask him how? He is dead!

That afternoon, Wu Yun Liang was the first person to come to. It was not until the third day that Meng Chao Ran woke up.

“Why did you come here?” Those were the first words Meng Chao Ran said after waking up. Surprisingly, he looked displeased.

“I was passing by, cough, cough…” Chu Yang laughed, “On the way, I just stopped by to look…”

“On the way?” Meng Chao Ran looked at him suspiciously. He clearly did not trust Chu Yang’s words. But in the end, he was able to see his disciple again. Joy took over as happiness slowly appeared on his face. He said casually, “Earlier, I was still thinking… how you would avenge my death? I never thought that revenge would not be needed.”

“This is the greatest of hatred, how could revenge not be needed?” Chu Yang sneered, “Diwu Qing Rou dares to do such a

thing. If I do not make him pay a great price, how can I be worthy of your eighteen years of care?" (TLN: Definitely said eighteen, but should it not be sixteen?)

"It's fine as long as we are okay. How is your injury?" Meng Chao Ran looked at his disciple with concerns.

"I am fine." Chu Yang smiled, "Master, you are also fine."

At this moment, Meng Chao Ran discovered that something was off. His whole body was injured. All of his internal and external injuries were extremely serious. Even if he did not die, he should have become disabled. But how could he feel like this after waking up? He could not help but feel very surprised.

Wu Yun Liang was a little jealous as he watched master and disciple talking next to him; he grunted and said, "The two of you are surprising sappy; it's so nauseating..."

"You are just jealous." Meng Chao Ran smiled, "This is not behavior becoming of a sect master."

Wu Yun Liang grunted and turned away.

"Master, guess what this is." Chu Yang showed off a small jade bottle.

Meng Chao Ran took it. He opened the cap, and a fragrance burst out. He immediately felt refreshed and blurted out, "Vitality Spring Water? Where did you get this priceless item?"

"It was by chance that I got it. You are truly well-informed; you even recognize this." Chu yang laughed, "This is my gift to you."

"No, you are alone out there. This is what you need most. You are giving me so much. What about you?" Meng Chao Ran glared, "Take it back; I don't need it."

"Oh... I still have some. Just take my gift." Chu Yang smiled from ear to ear, "Master, I am not the type to not keep some for myself..."

Meng Chao Ran was still hesitant when Wu Yun Liang stuck out his hand. With a look of desire in his eyes, he said, “Little martial brother, haha, since you don’t need it, why don’t you give it to me…”

“Get lost!” Meng Chao Ran mouth curled up with a look of pride. He held on to the bottle tightly, “This is a gift from my disciple. If you want it, go find your own disciples!”

Wu Yun Liang sighed, “If I have such outstanding disciples, I can die right now without any regrets…”

Meng Chao Ran said generously, “While I cannot give it to you, you can drink some when you need it.”

Wu Yun Liang thought with a frown: Is all my butt kissing not for this? I am still the master of Beyond the Heavens Sect; I don’t normally have to kiss up to anyone.

“Oah… woah…” Tan Tan woke up with a start. The moment he opened his eyes, he saw Chu Yang. He rubbed his eyes and looked again before jumping up in joy, “Chu Yang, you have come back? When did you come back? Why didn’t you let us know you were coming back? You…”

Gu Du Xing sat on the side with a frown. He could not help but stare with his eyes wide open. He tore a piece of fabric into two and stuffed them in his ears. It was truly unbearable…

Before, hearing Luo Ke Di howling every day, the others already thought it was most unbearable. But now that he was hearing Tan Tan’s voice, Luo Ke Di’s voice seemed truly… heavenly…

Then…

“Chu Yang, look, look… during this period, do I look like have become more handsome?” Tan Tan searched in his chest and suddenly cried out, “Woah… that bitch broke my mirror!”

“Mirror?” Chu Yang glared as his whole body shivered.

Wu Yun Liang asked anxiously, “Broken mirror? Is the Heavenly Chi Gathering Fish okay?”

“The Heavenly Chi Gathering Fish is with me.” Meng Chao Ran rolled his eyes, “How could I be okay with letting this punk hold it while fighting…”

Wu Yun Liang let out a sigh of relief, “That’s good then. That’s good then.”

On the other side, Tan Tan was holding on to Chu Yang telling him about everything. In a blink of an eye, he went from tell about the day they were attacked to what happened three months ago. He talked about things from heaven to earth then he started to discuss about his own appearance. He talked enthusiastically…

Meng Chao Ran’s countenance remained unchanged. He did not move. With this kind of situation, Meng Chao Ran was already used to it. His nerves had been trained to its peak level. Wu Yun Liang sighed… He really admired his martial brother. Meng Chao Ran had lived so long with such a person, and he still did not go crazy yet…

Even though Gu Du Xing already covered his ears, he was not able to block all of the sounds. After listening for a while, he could only feel his head spinning. This was worse than having demons in one’s mind. Next to him was someone that kept him from being able to concentrate. With a sigh and blinking eyes, he turned and said, “Chu Yang, heal your martial brother’s injuries… Since he came to, he has yet to stop talking…”

Chu Yang looked at Gu Du Xing in surprise. He suddenly smiled and patted Tan Tan’s shoulder, “Brother, you are very skilled. You are able to move this blockhead. In all of the Nine Heavens continents, you are the first…”

“Really?” Tan Tan was stunned as he eyed Gu Du Xing from top to bottom. It was as if he had finally met a bosom friend, “This big brother, you are also mesmerized by me? My handsomeness has

moved you? My handsomeness…”

Gu Du Xing’s eyes widened in terror. He suddenly let out a moan and became unconscious…

Chapter 254: This is a parting

These past few days, everyone was recovering nicely from their injuries. Two days ago, they were still relying on Chu Yang's dried food. On the third day, Gu Du Xing had to go out and hunt down a deer. The five people hiding in the cave had a grand feast.

With Beyond the Heavens Sect's current situation, sect master Wu Yun Liang was unconcerned.

Gu Du Xing was very surprised about this. Beyond the Heavens Sect was being turned inside out, and the sect master was still looking as secure as Mount Tai?

In regards to this, Wu Yun Liang seemed to understand and said, "Losses are expected, but I have much faith in second martial brother..."

Gu Du Xing was somewhat puzzled. It was not until Chu Yang explained that he learned that Li Jin Song was Diwu Qing Rou's spy. He could not help but shake his head and smile.

"But would such an attack not cost many lives of Beyond the Heavens Sect's ordinary disciples?" Gu Du Xing asked.

"This is Jiang Hu." Wu Yun Liang sighed, "I hope that this will help the disciples remember that the sect is not their shelter. Being in the sect means being connected to it even in death. If the sect is gone, they will be nothing but wandering ghosts."

"In suffering, we can forge backs of steel! While the price is high, we will not bear it if we don't pay it. Then we will never be able to stand up for the rest of this life!" When he said these words, Wu Yun Liang let out a long sigh.

Gu Du Xing became thoughtful.

Wu Yun Liang's words made Gu Du Xing think about Gu Miao Ling. Was the suffering that the two of them have to bear not a kind of tempering?

After resting for a bit, Wu Yun Liang asked Chu Yang indirectly, “Is there any lady in your heart?”

“Yes!” Chu Yang replied without any hesitations; the edge of his mouth revealed a loving smile.

Wu Yun Liang was elated. He stroked his beard and smiled with a knowing look.

In his mind, Chu Yang worked with his daughter in Iron Cloud so if there was someone in his heart, who else could it have been if not his own daughter? He did not even try to imagine that the two perhaps already had secret liaisons...

Therefore, Wu Yun Liang did not ask anymore.

Meng Chao Ran sneered. In his opinion, the person in Chu Yang’s heart was definitely not Wu Qian Qian. In this respect, Meng Chao Ran understood his disciple too well.

If it was indeed Wu Qian Qian, Chu Yang’s attitude toward Wu Yun Liang should have been much warmer than this...

In these days of recovery, Meng Chao Ran was the most content person, but Tan Tan was, of course, the happiest. This punk practically did not close his mouth. Gu Du Xing also started to feel that his words were not too bad to listen to.

Moreover, Tan Tan’s pure heart made it difficult to have bad thoughts toward him.

After another six days, they had verified that Wu Yun Liang’s health was completely restored. Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing were preparing to leave.

With his disciple’s decision, Meng Chao Ran did not question it. He simply said with concern, “Be careful!”

With tears in his eyes, Tan Tan watched as Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing left the cave and continued on their way. Chu Yang’s words rang out in his heart, “I will wait for you in Iron Cloud!”

As for Meng Chao Ran and Tan Tan's safety, everyone had discussed and decided that the two of them should temporarily leave Purple Bamboo Garden. If Diwu Qing Rou acted this time, there was no guarantee that there would not be a second time. Things would be better in the long run if they left temporarily.

"Chu Yang has changed so much; his advancement is too great. Why are you not surprised? You did not ask him anything." After Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing left, Wu Yun Liang asked Meng Chao Ran.

"What if I asked? What if I did not ask?" Meng Chao Ran said casually, "It is his own fortune. As long as my disciple obtained it, I will not ask how he did so."

He smiled and turned toward Wu Yun Liang, "If anyone wants to steal from my disciple, I will fight to the death with that person."

Wu Yun Liang snorted.

"Where are you planning to hide?" Wu Yun Liang asked.

"I want to bring Tan Tan with me to Middle Three Heavens." Meng Chao Ran sighed. A strange expression appeared in his gaze, "If we continue to remain in Lower Three Heavens, we will be the greatest burden for Chu Yang. Plus, in Middle Three Heavens, there will be more spiritual energy for the Heavenly Chi Gathering Fish to absorb compared to Lower Three Heavens. This will be very useful for Tan Tan's advancement."

"You want to give it another try?" Wu Yun Liang remained quiet for a while before asking.

"No." Meng Chao Ran shook his head looking forlorn, "If it was just me, I would go. But with Tan Tan, I cannot. When I hand Tan Tan over to Chu Yang or find his birth parents..."

Wu Yun Liang sighed and said, "With you leaving like this, I lose another diligent helper..."

"In a situation like this, my leaving... is the greatest help for

you!” Meng Chao Ran grunted.

“When are you leaving?”

“Right now.”

Two brothers, four eyes, looked at each other exposing a deep closeness. After a long while, Wu Yun Liang turned away and said softly, “If you have to go, go quickly. I won’t watch you leave.”

Meng Chao Ran sighed and took a deep breath. He simply said, “Take care.”

“Take care.” Wu Yun Liang said to himself.

He stood for a long time listening to the parting footsteps growing more distant. When it was completely gone, he still did not turn around.

A long time after, he smiled and muttered, “Little martial brother, I still hope that you can fulfill your dream. You have guarded Beyond the Heavens Sect for so many years; how much you are suffering in your heart, I already know. Now that you finally make a decision for yourself and choose your own path, I hope you will travel it well…”

He smiled leisurely with a look of goodwill in his eyes, “I only hope that if there is a day in the future when you and I are still alive we can still sit down to talk and drink together. I am sure, at that time… I will be closer to death than life…”

He wanted to turn around and watch his junior martial brother leave, but he hesitated for a long time. In the end, he was able hold back and maintained an odd posture. He left this cave at the speed of flight.

Let me deal with the mess at Beyond the Heavens Sect by myself!

Wu Yun Liang thought as he glided like a bolt of lightning.

Purple bamboos in Purple Bamboo Garden still swayed as before, but the people were no longer there.

Wu Yun Liang went through the sea of purple bamboos with an indescribabe emotion in his heart.

Purple Bamboo Garden was lost. Then the nine peaks and one garden of Beyond the Heavens Sect was also at the point where it would break apart. Tomorrow, the journey to Iron Cloud would begin...

Junior martial brother, take care!

*****

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing walked together as they left Purple Bamboo Garden and Beyond the Heavens Sect.

At the bottom of the mountain, Chu Yang turned and looked into the distance. He looked the faint mountain top. There seemed to be a little bit of purple swaying in the horizon as if it was sadly saying goodbye.

Chu Yang remained still for a long time.

It was as if he felt that in this trip, he would be gone for a very long time and not be able to come back to this place! When I come back, will this place... still be Beyond the Heavens Sect?

“Your master is impressive.” During these past few days, Gu Du Xing’s deepest impression was Meng Chao Ran’s indifference. It was as if he looked right past this world, and nothing could touch his emotion. But at the same time, there was also a touch of stubbornness!

This was a kind of feeling that could not be put into words.

“My master will leave this place with Tan Tan...” Chu Yang said sadly, “What my master likes most is the color purple, purple bamboos. If they leave, I am afraid he would be very sad.”

“Do you know where your master would be going when he leave?” Gu Du Xing asked.

“My master’s cultivation level is not that high. He can protect

himself in Lower Three Heavens. But if he goes to Middle Three Heavens, it would be very dangerous." Chu Yang slowly sighed, "However, I have a feeling that master's chance to break through is in Middle Three Heavens."

"He took care of us even though, at a glance, it seems as if he did not care about anything. The two of us have always been in my master's heart. As long as we live well in Lower Three Heavens, he would support us and take care of us."

"But my master has discovered that his presence has an impact on the fate of Beyond the Heavens Sect and my emotions. So he decided to leave. But, in leaving, he would leave his world behind."

Chu Yang softly sighed, "Gu Du Xing, from now on, no one will be able to see my master in Lower Three Heavens!"

"Middle Three Heavens?" Gu Du Xing asked.

"Yes." Chu Yang said, "My master would absolutely not let Diwu Qing Rou use him against me. So once he leaves, he would go very far. And this... is also because I understand his situation. I hope, but also don't... that he has given up."

"Oh?" Gu Du Xing was slightly confused.

"Do you know of any great clan with the surname Ye?" Chu Yang asked in a low voice. A mysterious thought flashed in his eyes.

"Surname Ye." Gu Du Xing thought for a bit and said, "From what I know, there is no clan in Middle Three Heavens with the surname Ye. But this could be because of my ignorance."

"Hmm..." Chu Yang was slightly distracted.

"But, in Upper Three Heavens, there is the surname Ye." Gu Du Xing's gaze became contemplative.

"Upper Three Heavens?" Chu Yang suddenly turned around and looked at Gu Du Xing.

"Upper Three Heavens' Ye clan is one of the nine great clans that

dominates over Nine Heavens since ancient times!" There was a look of awe and respect in Gu Du Xing's eyes. It was as if they were the tallest of untouchable mountains.

Chu Yang was startled. Given Gu Du Xing's character and he showed such look, the power of Upper Three Heavens' Ye clan was not difficult to imagine.

"Since ancient times, they have been one of the nine great clans that dominates over Nine Heavens!" Chu Yang quietly repeated it. A light flashed in his eyes.

He remember the hopelessness, pain, and helplessness in Meng Chao Ran's eyes...

"Upper Three Heavens is it?" Chu Yang muttered, "Nine great clans of Upper Three Heavens? Haha..."

"What do you want to do?" Gu Du Xing sensed something out of the ordinary and could not help but feel anxious.

"Nothing." Chu Yang's figure flew up and he flew forward. His voice was heard faintly from the front, "Du Xing, do you want to be the leader of one of the nine great clans?"

"Chu Yang, this joke is not funny at all."

"Oh..."

*****

Some distance off, Meng Chao Ran was calmly bringing Tan Tan to a sea of thunderous clouds.

"Master, where are we going?" Tan Tan turned back to look after every few steps.

"We're going to find your biological parents." Meng Chao Ran said casually, "It is a mysterious place."

"When can we return?" Tan Tan's voice was somewhat hoarse, "Chu Yang is still waiting for me to help him at Iron Cloud Citadel..."

“You can also stay at that mysterious world and wait for him to come and help you.” Meng Chao Ran said softly. He turned and looked back, “Eldest martial brother, take care. Chu Yang, you must take care of yourself.”

Then he grabbed his disciple’s hand and let out a loud shout. Two figures flew up and went into the sea of clouds...

Chapter 255: Ask the Heavens Sword Saint's sword, Underworld Saber Saint's saber

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing went through two snow storms on the road.

"We will be at Great Zhao in ten days." Chu Yang smiled and pointed his whip ahead.

Gu Du Xing nodded solemnly.

The appearance of the two had changed greatly. Compared to what they looked like before there was nothing similar. Even their figures, the shape of their faces and the distance between their facial features changed.

Right now, even if Wu Yun Liang stood in front of them, he would probably not be able recognize that the person in front of him was Chu Yang.

As for Gu Du Xing, he was wearing a black outfit with an icy countenance. His gaze was as sharp as a falcon. Even with his change in appearance, he still maintained the same dead face from before. A glance was enough for one to see the following words on his face: "Don't come any closer."

This place was the border between the two countries. From a distance, flags of soldiers sent a chill straight into the sky! It was as if the souls of millions of soldiers were still fighting nonstop for their countries.

"The scene at the border is definitely different." Gu Du Xing was a little moved.

"Yes, if they don't come to the battlefield at the border, no one could imagine that even the air here is filled with the smell of tragedy." Chu Yang sighed deeply, "How could those who enjoy the life of luxury and wealth know that millions of bones are buried here because of them? An ordinary life without any fighting

for power and position is what these heroes thirsted for…”

“For bones that have been buried in this place, there are countless mothers, lovers, wives still longing and waiting for their return. How could they know that their dreams have gone up in smoke already?”

Gu Du Xing remained quiet for a long time before saying, “Big brother, you have been especially emotional lately.”

“It’s not emotion.” Chu Yang looked at the atmosphere at the border and said, “Perhaps… this is the law of Nine Heavens.”

“The law of Nine Heavens…” Gu Du Xing looked gravely at the military camps of the two nations and sighed, “If I am the ruler of Nine Heavens, I would also not allow people of Middle Three Heavens and Upper Three Heavens to come and interfere with the fight between the royal courts of Lower Three Heavens. With the many people here, a martial expert only needs to flip his hand and millions would die needlessly.”

Chu Yang nodded, “Compared to Middle Three Heavens and Upper Three Heavens where a blink of an eye or a movement of a hand could cause great change, life in this Lower Three Heavens seems more human.”

Gu Du Xing suddenly halted and murmured, “Compared to Middle Three Heavens and Upper Three Heavens where a blink of an eye or a movement of a hand could cause great changes, life in this Lower Three Heavens seems more human.”

He momentarily felt a bit of clarity.

Of course Chu Yang was not talking about an actual great change. But were the powerful and gifted with abilities to move mountains and cover the sky not be those who can cause great changes in Lower Three Heavens?

Looking at the two contrasting worlds, Gu Du Xing immediately had a breakthrough! When he was looking at the battlefield, a

feeling of respect rose in his mind.

And his cultivation unexpectedly had a breakthrough after only ten days!

Second grade Revered Sword Artist!

Chu Yang smiled; such advancement was appropriate for the two words “heavenly talent” that was used to describe Gu Du Xing. From now on, each of his words and actions, and his demeanor will be more like that of the lone swordsman that shocked the world in the previous life.

But in this life, he would no longer be alone.

After a long while, Gu Du Xing was done with his breakthrough. He opened his eyes and looked at Chu Yang, “Big brother… thank you.”

“It’s nothing.” Chu Yang said casually, “We did not have to go through a battlefield to cross this place, but I wanted you to feel some of the emotions of it. Since you were able to be enlightened by this and even break through as well, we should be on our way.”

“How did you know that I would be able to have an enlightenment?” Gu Du Xing asked in puzzlement.

“Because you train with swords; it is also the way of the merciless sword…” Chu Yang showed a smile.

“Yes.”

“However, the way of the merciless sword would never reach the peak!” Chu Yang said softly, “This is a detour. Only after you have come to this battlefield can you have a kind of understanding; it is a guard.”

“The way of the sword is to guard!” Gu Du Xing frowned and thought for a long time.

“In cultivation, the most important thing is understanding. Your way of the sword, after today, will transform into way of the

merciful sword. Because you guard your heart. With Gu Miao Ling waiting, and us brothers as well, all these things will be the forces for your sword path."

Chu yang sighed internally. If it was the previous life, how could there be someone to guide him like so...

"Here." Chu Yang tossed a book over to a pensive Gu Du Xing, "Look at this book; before you reach King level, you probably don't need it though."

Gu Du Xing took it and looked. He could not help but be startled, "King revered sword enlightenment?" His thin body trembled.

It was not a sword technique, but an enlightenment in cultivation of a swordsman. Each step, each moment was clearly written. For someone who trained in the way of the sword like Gu Du Xing, this was definitely a great help!

It was no different from having a guide while walking in darkness. Or like a blind person struggling in life suddenly finding a staff.

Because following its methods, there would be no detours in this path!

Moreover, Gu Du Xing also did not know... that this copy of king revered sword enlightenment did not belong to anyone. It was some of the enlightenment from the Nine Tribulations Sword spirit.

Cultivating in the ways of this enlightenment, Gu Du Xing will not be equal to a Nine Tribulations Sword master like Chu Yang. But he would still be at the peak of the way of the sword in the Nine Heavens continents.

A few more days passed and the two were finally advancing into Great Zhao territory. Along the way, villages and towns had started to appear.

And rumors also started to cause big commotions everywhere.

In the middle of the afternoon, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing went into a restaurant. They chose a few dishes and tried to rest a bit.

The restaurant was crowded with customers. Most of them were Jiang Hu people carrying sabers and swords. Everyone were talking and swearing. Given the way the two people were dressed, in this restaurant, they were not worthy of any attention. They were like two drops of water in an ocean.

But gradually, a piece of news appeared and caught their attention.

“Do you know? Nine Heavens’ treasured Ask the Heavens Sword has appeared!”

“Huh? That’s not news; I know about this already.”

“Ask the Heavens Sword. According to legends, it is the personal weapon of the great Sword Saint Ji Wen Tian (TLN: Wen Tian translates to Ask the Heavens) from eight thousand years ago... The most important thing is, within Ask the Heavens Sword, there is a hidden martial art technique. It is the enlightenment in the way of the sword by Ji Wen Tian...”

“This kind of thing, once you get it, will you not become the future Sword Saint. My god!”

“Huh? Ask the Heavens Sword? Sword Saint? Tell me about it. Waiter, bring a bottle of good wine and two pounds of beef to this table!” The moment the people at this table started talking, they caught the attention of the nearby table. They cheerfully lifted their table and connected it.

“Mm, Ask the Heavens Sword is an extraordinary treasure. I heard that a few days ago, someone was holding Ask the Heavens Sword. He only lightly slashed and Northern Zhou’s hero, Zhang Da Hou, was cut into two pieces. Then he slashed again, and Zhang Da Hou became four pieces... This is truly a powerful weapon.” This punk spat everywhere as he talked. His face flushed with

excitement; it was as if he witnessed the whole thing first hand.

“Yes, yes. If not, how could it be a weapon of a Sword Saint?” The listeners were eagerly waiting.

“If you could see this with your own eyes, this life would be worthwhile…”

“Yes, yes.” In the restaurant, everyone echoed the same words, but each person carried only one thought.

“I wonder where the owner of Ask the Heavens Sword is right now.” This is something everyone wanted to know most.

“I don’t know. But, the since this owner of Ask the Heavens Sword has revealed it, his road would be a dangerous one. Seeing the path of killing, he is definitely heading for Continental Center.”

“Oh…” Many people let out a meaningful cry…

“Hahaha, do you people only know about Ask the Heavens Sword appearing?” Someone suddenly laughed loudly and said, “Do you know how Ji Wen Tian fell eight thousand years ago?”

“Why did the Saint level master fall?” Numerous people turned. They saw a middle-aged man in black sitting alone at a table. There was a look of content on his face.

“Please tell us.”

“Well, this is a little embarrassing…”

“Waiter! Bring wine! The best wine! The best food!” Someone yelled out loud with a magnificent flair, “This big brother, will you accept a cup from me?”

“Sure, sure, haha.”

“May I inquire, Ask the Heavens Sword Saint…”

“Speaking of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint, he was a child without a mother. This story is really long…” The middle-aged

man in black looked sad, “... Legends said that eight thousand years ago, there was a heavenly endowed Sword Saint. His cultivation shocked ancient history. That person was Ask the Heavens Sword Saint Ji Wen Tian! But an inevitable thing happened. At that time, it was not only Ask the Heavens Sword Saint that dominated Jiang Hu...”

“There was another? Could he be even more powerful than the Sword Saint?”

“Hmm! At that time, one saber and one sword were famous in Nine Heavens. They dominated for a few hundred years and their fame would remain for a million years! The other person was Underworld Saber Saint, Xia Huang Quan!” The middle-aged man in black took a big gulp of wine. (TLN: Huang Quan means underworld.)

“Underworld Saber Saint, Xia Huang Quan...” Everyone gasped at once. While they did not know who this Underworld Saber Saint was, they were in awe to learn that this Saber Saint was as famous as Ask the Heavens Sword Saint.

Even though they did not know anything about Ask the Heavens Sword Saint before this, they were all ignorant people; what could they say?

“Do you know?” The middle-aged man chewed on the beef and drank the good wine. He was lost in joy, “At that time, the two top masters were irreconcilable mortal enemies!”

“Huh? Really?”

“Yes! Ask the Heavens Sword Saint and Underworld Saber Saint fought endlessly for hundreds of years. Finally, one day, the two met to fight to the death...” The middle-aged man in black spoke melodiously.

“Fight to the death...”

“Yes! A fight to the death.” The middle-aged man in black sighed,

“That battle shook heaven and earth. The sun and moon were eclipsed! They fought from Upper Three Heavens down to Middle Three Heavens. All of the dozens of mountains in Upper Three Heavens were flattened! It is now the Chaotic Souls Plain in Upper Three Heavens!” The middle-aged man in black was extremely vivid with his description.

“Amazing!” After hearing, there was a look of awe and admiration in everyone’s eyes.

Chapter 256: Wind and rain from all directions gather at Continent Center

"At that time, the two Saint level masters fought and created a big hole in Upper Three Heavens. They flew directly down to Middle Three Heavens! Once again, they fought in Middle Three Heavens for nine days and nights! They sank more than twenty large mountains!"

"Sank!"

"Exactly, sank!" The middle-aged man in black said solemnly, "It is now the Boundless Sea of Middle Three Heavens. Do you know of the Boundless Sea?"

Everyone nodded like pecking chickens. They acted as if they had truly seen that "Boundless Sea."

"After the two Saint level masters finished fighting in Middle Three Heavens, they punched a large hole in Middle Three Heavens and went down to Lower Three Heavens." The middle-aged man in black described it lively and vividly.

"They even went to Lower Three Heavens?"

"Gibberish! Otherwise, where would Ask the Heavens Sword come from?" The middle-aged man in black rolled his eyes, "Do you want to listen or no? If you don't, I won't talk anymore."

"No, no, no... It's my fault; it's my fault. Waiter! Bring out two more jars of good wine!"

"Mm... After fighting in Lower Three Heavens, the two Saint level masters were finally exhausted, but they were still at a stalemate!" The middle-aged man in black sighed and looked dreamily, "At that time, Underworld Saber Saint, Xia Huang Quan finally made his last slash..."

"Then Ask the Heavens Sword Saint, Ji Wen Tian also made his

final slash!”

Everyone’s heart jumped right up to their throat.

“... Boom! The mountain howled, and the sea roared. Heaven and earth was turned upside down. The clouds changed color, and thunder filled the sky.” The middle-aged man in black sounded as if he was mourning, “And the two saint level masters... perished together...”

“Huh?”

“Huh....”

Everyone’s voice was filled with regrets.

“However, even though the two Saint level masters died, their sword and saber remained intact. Plus... even more mystical is the fact that Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber absorbed the spirit of the two Saint level masters and developed a saintly imprint! Do you know what a saintly imprint is?”

“Could it be...”

“Yes!” The middle-aged man in black smacked the table, “The lifelong experience of the two Saint level masters are in Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber. Therefore, for the past eight thousand years, there existed a legend...”

“What legend?” Everyone hastily asked.

“Ask the Heavens Sword can deal heavenly justice with its slash! Underworld Saber sends people to the underworld!” The middle-aged man in black said softly. His appearance looked more and more like a lonely martial master without an opponent.

“Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber are enemies, but, once the sword appeared, the saber would surely not remain lonely. It will definitely show its glory against the sword. This is fate!”

“Oh? No wonder...”

“Yes!” The middle-aged man in black sighed, “Gentlemen, you only know that Ask the Heavens Sword has appeared, but you don’t know that Underworld Saber has also appeared in this world. Plus, in its path, there is even more terror and bloodshed!”

Everyone was terrified! In the entire restaurant, a pin drop could be heard clearly.

“This is a catastrophe of Jiang Hu, but it is also the greatest opportunity for the people of Jiang Hu!” The middle-aged man in black sighed and said, “No matter who it is, as long as they get Ask the Heavens Sword or Underworld Saber, they have the chance to open the imprint of that Saint level master! And anyone who can open that imprint can become a Saint level master in a short time period!”

“Become a Saint level master!”

The whole restaurant suddenly boiled with excitement.

Who did not want to become a Saint level master? Saint level masters were legendary figures. In all of the Nine Heavens continents, in all of history, how many Saint level masters were there?

So many people did not even dare to dream of it! So many people tried their whole lives and only reach the level of Martial Master! Between Martial Master and Martial Saint, how many levels were there? Martial Great Master, Revered Martial Artist, Martial King, Martial Emperor, Martial Monarch, Martial Saint... Each title had nine grades, and each grade had peak, middle, and low.

Oh my god, one could not even imagine it.

Today, an opportunity had presented itself! With just a sword or a saber, they would be able to reach the heavens in just one step and achieve their dreams in a blink of an eye!

Such an opportunity make the world tremble! Right now, two of them unexpectedly appeared at once!

Their fanaticism rose!

Their blood was boiling!

“Tell us! Tell us about Underworld Saber!” Everyone was feverish...

“However, in the legends, all those who obtained Ask the Heavens and Underworld Saber, after they were lucky enough to open the Saint imprint, they had to have a fighting match with their opponent! This is the obsession of two Saint level masters!” The middle-aged man in black said slowly, “This is really too dangerous.”

“What’s so dangerous about it? Is this not how things should be?” Everyone voiced loudly, “Even the saber and the sword have become spiritual things. And this is the last wish of the two Saint level masters. If you’re getting an inheritance from someone, you will have to do it for them. Isn’t this expected?”

This kind of risk had unexpectedly left them wanting even more...

“Hmm, do you think that the saintly imprints inside Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber are that easy to open?” The middle-aged man in black rolled his eyes, “First, you must have either Ask the Heavens Sword or Underworld Saber. Second, if you are not sincere, even if you get the saber or the sword, it would be useless without a little reaction. In short, you must have the fortune to open the saintly imprint... This is easier said than done...”

“Gibberish! If it is that easy, then being a Saint level master is not worth anything!”

“No matter what, regardless of whether one meets the requirement, the first thing you would have to do is get the item.” Someone rubbed his chin with a longing countenance.

“This is true. Mm, I heard... the people who have Ask the

Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber do not have very high cultivation levels. They only depended on the power of the heavenly weapons. I heard that all of Lower Three Heavens are boiling over. Almost all of the sects, and people in Jiang Hu gather at…" The middle-aged man in black said, "This kind of heavensent opportunity, everyone wants it…"

For the time being, the whole restaurant suddenly became quiet once again. Each person had his own thoughts.

It could not be denied that there was a fierce feeling in each person's heart: Such weapons in my hands…

If I can become a legendary figure…

If I can hold Ask the Heavens Sword in my hand and battle against Underworld Saber…

Oh, only think about it was enough to make one feel excited. For the moment, in the whole restaurant, anyone who heard this news became as excited as fighting cocks. They all imagined themselves holding Ask the Heavens Sword and opening the saintly imprint…

"What is the use of wanting? Hmm, does anyone know where these two blades are currently?" Next to the window, a young man sighed and said, "I really want to give it a try."

The young man in black sitting opposite him also sighed with an icy countenance, "This is a great opportunity to become a legend… ahh…"

He shook his head and sighed endlessly.

Suddenly, the whole restaurant was filled with the sounds of sighing.

"However, I heard that Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber does not have any restrictions…" That youth said, "I heard that ordinary people who come into possession of them can also become a Saint level master…"

“I heard that those two blades are heading to Continent Center?” The young man in black asked.

After that, the two did not say anything else.

Everyone became thoughtful.

Not too long, someone stood straight up and yelled, “Check please!” He went out the door and hastily walked off.

Right after, more and more people left.

Within moments, more than half of the Jiang Hu people left with their sabers and swords.

Next to the window, the two young men looked at each and smiled.

Those two were, of course, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing.

As for those so called “Ask the Heavens Sword” and “Underworld Saber,” they were fictitious. Those two were simply a sword and a saber that Chu Yang made!

The two people calmly finished eating and walked out. They went far away from that town before, unable to control themselves any longer, rolling over with laughter.

“Talented... Really talented...” Chu Yang shook his head with a look of admiration on his face, “I never imagined that they could turn an ordinary sword into Ask the Heavens Sword. These punks really have the guts to stir up a storm...”

“I also never imagined that they could make such a ruckus...” Gu Du Xing’s face twisted. It looked as if he was having great difficulty holding back his laughter. He said in admiration, “If this keeps going, Diwu Qing Rou will really have a headache...”

“Ask the Heavens Sword, Underworld Saber...” Chu Yang was in awe, “I thought they would discuss with each other to come up with such an interesting story. Two saint level masters unexpectedly appeared...! This... is too much!”

“Saint level masters from more than eight thousands years ago!” Gu Du Xing sighed and said, “Even if someone doubts this, who can check this matter in Lower Three Heavens?”

“Check?” Chu Yang laughed loudly, “Even if they are able to check this matter, who would believe it? If you don’t know the root of this matter and someone told you that this information is false, would you believe them?”

Gu Du Xing thought and could not help but laugh. If it was him, he would not have believed it.

Even though he was a suspicious person, he would still have to come and see for himself.

“This is a truly good tactic.” Chu Yang smiled and said, “I was worried that the moment the sword and saber cause trouble, Diwu Qing Rou would deal with them right away… Now, I cannot believe they have cause such an earth-shattering commotion like this. If Diwu Qing Rou keeps them for himself, the Jiang Hu people would probably level the Minister’s manor along with Golden Horse Riders Department…”

Gu Du Xing laughed happily. With laughter, the two advanced toward Continent Center in high spirit.

This leg of the trip was extremely lively.

Almost all of Jiang Hu was boiling over. Each day, they heard different rumors. In short, Ask the Heavens Sword was like this and like that; Underworld Saber had appeared here and there…

All of Jiang Hu was in an uproar. Everyone was pouring toward Continent Center!

On the way, there was a constant stream of Jiang Hu people.

There were even rumors…

Some hidden sect had fully returned to Jiang Hu because of this matter; they were advancing to Continent Center.

Some old reclusive evil guy had also suddenly appeared and was headed for Continent Center...

So and so sect... heading to Continent Center...

...

Then one day, someone publicly announced that he was the descendant of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint, Ji Wen Tian, from eight thousand years ago! This sword was the inheritance of his ancestors; it must be returned to his ancestral shrine...

After a few days, the three hundred thirty something generations great grandson of Underworld Saber Saint, Xia Huang Quan also appeared in Jiang Hu. He announced that he would obtain his ancestral saber at any price...

Next, more than a dozen sword sect went into Jiang Hu; they called themselves the true descendants of Ask the Heavens Sword Sect...

Dozens of sects also announced that they were the true descendants of Underworld Saber Sect. Because so many years had passed, they lost their saber and their sects had become dilapidated. Currently, their sects would have the chance to rise once more. If any dared to stand in the way of their recovery, they would fight to the death...

This was truly: One saber and one sword emerged in Jiang Hu causing wind and rain from all directions to gather at Continent Center...

Chapter 257: Adding fuel

Before Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber even reached Continent Center, Continent Center was already in chaos.

Ask the Heavens Sword Saint's three hundred thirty-ninth generation's descendant, Ji Cheng Zhi, had announced at Continent Center Citadel, "Does any descendant of Underworld Saber Saint dare to have a battle with me?"

When these words came out, they immediately caused an earth-shattering uproar in the entire citadel.

Right away, there were a few hundred descendants of Underworld Saber Saint scrambling for a showdown against the three hundred thirty-ninth generation's descendant of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint!

And hundreds of people stood out cursing, "Who the f* do you think you are, Ji Cheng Zhi? I am the true descendant of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint! Here is the ancestral tablet to prove it!"

Because there were so many descendants of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint, their identities had to be verified first before any fight could commence...

And the hundreds of descendants of Underworld Saber Saint also faced internal issues and ended up fighting each other all over...

From all directions, Jiang Hu people poured into Continent Center Citadel like streams into a river; like sand into the Ganges, they poured in nonstop.

Many people started to fight with each other on the road.

Such situations only intensified as they got closer to Continent Center. They only needed to encounter each other, say a few opposing words, or learn that the other person was also fighting for Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber. They would immediately pull their weapons and fight. They had to deal with

their opponents first and talk later…

Seeing this kind of lively situation, Chu Yang was reminded of two words: Market meet!

Yes, it was a market meet, and it was on a super-large scale. But the items being dealt here were the kind of things that could never be bought.

On this particular leg of Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing's journey, things remained peaceful like that…

"Oh, like that…"

"Uh-huh, uh-huh…"

"F*!"

"Too many people…"

"Oh yeah…"

On the road, the two people's faces were practically stunned the whole time. They watched with a speechless expression; they almost turned to stone.

When they reach the outside of Continent Center Citadel, their eyeballs virtually fell out.

They could only see, outside Continent Center Citadel, a great mass people carrying sabers and swords. Some were even carrying axes, tridents, sledgehammers, Emei thorns…

Of course, there were also people who were empty-handed.

Outside of the north gate, there was about a few thousand people. And in the distance, there were still people, or groups of three or five rushing toward them like meteors.

"Open the gate! Open the citadel gate right now!" Someone shouted angrily with a hoarse voice, "Why won't you let us in?"

"Yes!" Thousands of people voiced in support, "Why won't you let us in?"

“Do you people want to take Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber for yourselves?”

“Yes! If you infuriate me, I will rebel!”

The atmosphere at the foot of the citadel grew more and more intense.

Among the bickering and yelling, a thunderous roared sounded, “If you don’t open the citadel gate, I will flatten Continent Center Citadel!” With that, a figure flew up about seventy or eighty feet high. He was about as high as the citadel’s wall. He yelled out in midair, “Your grandmother! Open the citadel gate!”

Before he could finish, he dropped to the ground with a boom.

There was a roar of laughter outside the citadel gate. A few hundred people yelled out together, “If you don’t open the citadel gated, we will flatten Continent Center Citadel!”

As Chu Yang watched, his whole body shivered.

At this moment, six strong men, looking as big as towers, were standing outside of the crowd. They suddenly turned around and glared at the two newcomers. They immediately ran right to them, “What are you two doing? Do you want to fight for Ask the Heavens Sword?”

“No, no. We are scholars.” Chu Yang quickly smiled amicably.

“Hmm, scholars are especially bad!” The six strong men glared and said, “You must be honest!”

“Yes, yes.” Chu Yang nodded like a pecking chicken.

The six strong men left.

After a while, there was another group of people interrogating them. After about seven or eight rounds of interrogation, there was suddenly a great commotion in the front. Weapons slammed against each other loudly.

“Bastards! You guys can come here; why can’t we come? What

kind of reasoning is this? Someone lamented.

“Just because I say so! What? Get lost! If you still dream that you can get Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber, I will kill you!” Another voice replied.

“What? Is Ask the Heavens Sword yours?” Someone on the side was not pleased and voiced his objection.

“What? You’re not satisfied? Are you itching?”

“Itch, your mother!”

“Get him!”

Suddenly, three to five people fighting turned into dozens of people fighting. After a while…

“F*! Who hit me?”

“Motherf*! Who tossed a hidden weapon? Come out!”

A surly person unwittingly became involved, “Bastards! Someone hit my little guy. Ow, I am really hurting, mother*…”

“Fight!”

“Fight!”

“Underworld Saber is mine!”

“Ask the Heavens Sword is mine!”

More or less than a hundred people were fighting. There were lewd words, angry roars, painful cries, whizzing fighting sounds, rustling of sleeves, mother*s, cursing ancestors, and someone yelling, “I am Xia Bian Liu, the three hundred thirty-eighth generation’s descendant of Underworld Saber Saint, Xia Huang Quan! Let me in!”

The moment this person spoke up, more than a dozen people rushed in and gave him a beating, “F* your grandmother! This is Xia Bian Liu, this is Xia Bian Liu… You are the descendant of Xia Huang Quan, my butt…”

For a time, outside the north gate of the citadel, there were loud sounds of laughing, punching, kicking...

There were people laughing loudly, people wailing, people moaning in pain, and people screaming.

The crowd was really lively at the moment.

And this was only the north gate of the citadel. At the three remaining gates, things were also just as chaotic. In fact, compared to this place, they were even more chaotic.

Wooo... The loud sound of horns rang out. Then, someone yelled out loud, “Everyone! Everyone! Listen to me.”

At the foot of the citadel, the Jiang Hu people slowly stopped what they were doing.

On top of the citadel, a man in silk, looking to be around forty or fifty years old, stood authoritatively with his arms folded. His sleeves fluttered in the wind as he stood with the air of a martial expert.

“Everyone! About the matter of Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber, Prime Minister Diwu has investigated carefully! He has concluded...” The man in silk glanced over the entire field and saw that everyone was looking up at him. He could not help but smile, “Eight thousand years ago, there was no Ask the Heavens Sword Saint, and there was definitely no Underworld Saber Saint!”

“In other words, this is purely a conspiracy! It is completely non-existent. It is purely a conspiracy created by King of Hell Chu.” The man in silk yelled loudly.

“Purely your mother!” Before he could finish speaking. A few hundred people below were cursing, “Your grandmother! You king of bastards, what are you farting about? Conspiracy? More like your whole house is pubic hair!” (TLN: Conspiracy and pubic hair are similar; Yinmou and yinmao)

“Just because you say it’s not real, then it’s not real? What kind of farting logic is that?”

“Bastard! They don’t exist just because Diwu Qing Rou says so? Did that bastard come back to life from eight thousand years ago?” Someone screamed.

“I have carefully investigated! I can confirm that Ask the Heavens Sword Saint really existed eight thousand years ago! There was also an Underworld Saber Saint!” Someone yelled loudly, “This is, without a doubt, true!”

“This is very simple. Diwu Qing Rou wants to take Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber for himself... Diwu Qing Rou, do you think all the heroes of this world are fools?” Chu Yang squatted on the ground and yelled with his nose pinched.

The strength of this voice was really powerful.

The people below were already crazed. They were like a bomb waiting to explode. These words from Chu Yang completely fueled the situation, and the bomb exploded!

“Diwu Qing Rou, f* you... open the gate now!”

“Despicable Diwu Qing Rou! Diwu Qing Rou, you dirty bastard!”

“Diwu Qing Rou, king of bastards. Your family have been cuckolds for generations. We don’t know where you crawled out from, and you want to take Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber for yourself...”

“Charge! Kill!”

“Charge... wooh... wooh... wooh...”

“Charge! Ask the Heavens Sword is in there...”

“Yes! Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber must be inside Continent Center Citadel! If not, why does Diwu Qing Rou not let us in?” Chu Yang held his nose and roared in indignation, “Maybe Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber are already

in Diwu Qing Rou's hands right now. Diwu Qing Rou is not letting us in because he is currently trying to open the saintly imprints!"

These words immediately put everyone on alert!

"Yes! It must be that!"

"Damn Diwu Qing Rou. Eighteen generations of your ancestors..." Thousands of people cursed together. Each one felt that these words truly expressed what was in his mind and cursed to his heart's content...

"Charge..."

"Break the gate! Break the gate!" Gu Du Xing pinched his nose and yelled out from the back. This dead-faced guy was so excited his face had turned red.

"Yes, break the gate!" Thousands of people rushed forward.

"Woah... woah... woah..."

"Silence!" The man on top of the citadel also changed his tone, "Anyone who dares to defy these orders will be considered traitors! Their property will be seized, they will be executed, all nine generations of their family will be killed..."

"Nine generations, your grandmother! I roam in Jiang Hu; I only have my "stick!" Diwu Qing Rou can go ahead and kill nine generations of my family!"

"Yes! I also don't have anything. Seize my property and kill me? Kill your mother..."

These Jiang Hu people were truly with few family members. Plus, they were all mostly outlaws. Why would they bother to care about having nine generations of their families killed?

"You dare threaten us? This damn Diwu Qing Rou!" King of Hell Chu shouted from within the crowd, "Are we Jiang Hu people scared of dog officials?"

"Woah... woah... woah..." The people's emotion grew more

intense.

There were already forty or fifty people running toward the gate and hitting it with their weapons...

Clang clang clang...

Boom boom boom...

Bam bam bam...

Bang bang bang...

All kinds of strange sounds rang out like a storm. Not too long, a good citadel door had become full of marks.

It could not be left unsaid that the number of men was too great.

On top of the citadel wall, the soldiers had pulled out their weapons, and their arrows were ready. But the commander was hesitant. He did not dare to give the order to attack. He knew that if an arrow flew out, there would probably be an uncontrollable uprising.

But... if he did not do it, he could only open the gate. However, after he opened the gate, what was he going to use to control these rough, lawless men...

“The Prime Minister has ordered for the gates to be opened. Seeing an inevitable conflict, an order suddenly rang out.

Chapter 258: Deep foresight

The crowd was like a tide. It roared as it rushed in.

The citadel gate was not small; it opened immediately. The width was about enough for more than six horses to go in side by side. But the moment the door was opened, the martial experts rushed in from all directions...

The next moment, they forcefully shoved and pushed each other into a chaotic clump!

Since the citadel gate opened, hundreds of people cramped into one place. At this time, no one could go through. Loud cursing resounded to the sky.

“Your mother! Shoving your ancestors!”

“Hey hey, you’re squishing me to death!”

“Move, move...”

“F*, you want to kill me...”

The most outrageous thing was there were two tall surly men with full beards in the crowd. They were pushed into one space. They tried to shove, but they unexpectedly were unable to beat the crowd. They were a head above the rest of the crowd. People could see that their faces turned red and their beards practically became erect as their figures squished against one another. Face on face, nose on nose, and mouth on mouth squeezed together...

They immediately spat at each other’s faces...

This kind of phenomenon happening in front of everyone immediately caused an uproar of laughter. While everyone were cramped to the point they could not move, they still were not able to hold back their laughter. But this laughter caused an unexpected result. Their stomachs contracted and then expanded. There was an immediate increase in pressure...

“This is Jiang Hu! These are the people of Jiang Hu!” Chu Yang watched the situation in front of him and could not help but laugh, “If it was the military, this situation would not happen even if there were a million people going through the citadel gate! These people total no more than ten thousand, and this laughable situation actually happens…”

“A motley mix!” Gu Du Xing gave an extremely accurate description.

“Exactly! Compared to the military, the people of Jiang Hu are a motley mix! These people, all of them have much high cultivation than ordinary soldiers! In fact, one person could fight against a group of soldiers! But if a thousand Jiang Hu people like this fight against a thousand soldiers who have been properly trained, then the losers would surely be the Jiang Hu people! Plus, the one thousand soldiers will not suffer much losses…”

Chu Yang said seriously, “Therefore, there is a saying in the military: One Jiang Hu person is powerful; ten Jiang Hu people are terrifying; one hundred Jiang Hu people are ordinary; and one thousand Jiang Hu people… are just a pile of meat waiting to be chopped up!”

Gu Du Xing thought carefully for a while before finally nodding his head in agreement.

“That is why Jiang Hu people are only suited for Jiang Hu.” Chu Yang gave his conclusion, “Never expect them to do anything big!”

At this time, the jam at the citadel gate was finally gone. They had started to rush past each other as they entered Continent Center Citadel. Everyone’s face was red, and each person looked as if Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber were displayed right in front of his face for the taking…

It was not until more than half of the people went in that Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing lifted their legs and walked slowly into the citadel.

Only after a few steps, they saw two people punching and kicking on the ground. These two did not stop rolling right outside the citadel…

It was indeed the two people who were “kissing” earlier. Naturally, the two felt they could no longer face anyone…

Chu Yang smiled and walked around them as he advanced into the citadel. But even after he was a ways off, he could still hear the loud sounds of kicking and punching along with cursing and painful howling…

“What do you think the guys are currently doing?” Chu Yang smiled.

“I am guessing… Two people are definitely taking the jade calling card and making themselves Diwu Qing Rou’s guests. As for the other two, they are sure to be stirring up trouble…” Gu Du Xing said with certainty.

“Yes, when I assigned them to their tasks, I thought about this.” Chu Yang laughed, “Ji Mo is a lazy punk. If he could sit, he would not stand. Having a place to rest, he would surely not let the opportunity pass him by. Plus, Rui Bu Tong loves thievery. Being a guest at a great house is too much of a convenience… Hahaha…”

Gu Du Xing’s eyes widened. This big brother even calculated thievery in to his plans…

“As for Dong Wu Shang, he is a fighter; he naturally likes to cause trouble. The more people there is for him to fight, the more excited he becomes… So I am sure he is still fighting…” Chu Yang held out a finger.

“Isn’t that also Luo Ke Di?”

“Well, Luo Ke Di is also a king of troublemakers, but this guy has some control… So when there is a powerful opponent, Luo Ke Di will come into play. He will drag Dong Wu Shang away and hide!” Chu Yang smiled with interest, “If it is only Dong Wu Shang alone,

he would not run away until the last minute. This is too dangerous. Plus, Luo Ke Di is not the same as before…”

“So that’s it.” Gu Du Xing finally understood Chu Yang’s arrangements. He did not just consider their personalities but also all the things that could happen, the dangers they could run into, and what method would be used.

“Since that’s the case, why did you switch the sword and saber?” Gu Du Xing wondered, “You know full well that Ji Mo is good with swords and Dong Wu Shang is good with sabers… Why did you gave Ji Mo the saber and Dong Wu Shang the sword? Is this not putting his beard on her face?”

“Not so.” Chu Yang said, “First, Ji Mo has his own sword; I cannot let him use a different sword over a long period of time. This will cause his spirit to lose some connection with his own sword…”

Gu Du Xing’s eyes brightened.

Chu Yang’s words were transcendent. Someone who was not a sword expert would not have been able to say such words!

Each sword, even made with ordinary metal, had its own spirit! Spirituality!

This was the reason.

“It is the same thing with Dong Wu Shang. In Dong Wu Shang’s case, he is too persistent with sabers. This should be a good thing, but there is also a disadvantage to that. It is the fact that the way of the saber and the way of the sword share common ground. This is especially true with the agility of the sword. Before reaching the peak state, this is not achievable with the saber. Besides protecting Dong Wu Shang’s connection to his saber, I want Dong Wu Shang to also be enlightened in the agility of the way of the sword in this deadly battle.”

“The more dangerous it is, the more likely he is to break through.

This is most advantageous to his training in the way of the saber!" Chu Yang said casually, "If I told him this beforehand, it would not be effective. So I intentionally planned so and hoped that Dong Wu Shang will be enlightened..."

"So that's it." Gu Du Xing was pensive. He could not help but feel even more admiration for Chu Yang. Chu Yang's thorough thinking had reached the point where every little thing mattered. Who would have guessed that such a simple set up with one saber and one sword could have such deep intentions?

"At the time, didn't you say that you would arrange some setup?" Gu Du Xing said, "Why don't you need to all of a sudden? Instead, you let Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong go?"

"Is this not a setup?" Chu Yang said in surprise, "Is my setup not already used?"

"Used?" Gu Du Xing's eyes widened.

"At that time, in front of Cheng Yun He, I revealed Ji Mo's group name. Of course, they would be able to investigate those guys' background. And the situation then was extremely extraordinary; who would believe that it was without King of Hell Chu's involvement? At least, someone on Diwu Qing Rou's side would surely see through this." Chu Yang smiled in satisfaction, "So the moment they arrived in Great Zhao, Diwu Qing Rou's people would think that... I am among them... Understand?"

"So they will watch Ji Mo's group closely in hope of finding you with them?" Gu Du Xing asked in shock.

"That's why I had already told Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong to go directly back to Middle Three Heavens after everything is done. And when I am in Great Zhao, I will absolutely not have any contact with them." Chu Yang smiled.

"I wonder, when that time come, how Diwu Qing Rou and Cheng Yun He would feel when they see Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong..." Gu Du

Xing shook his head smiling. “I am sure they would be very annoyed.”

“Hahaha…” Chu Yang laughed loudly.

“Knowing that those two are brothers of King of Hell Chu and not even dare to touch them…” Gu Du Xing could not help but laugh, “Touching them would be provoking two great clans; they dare not let them go freely, but they also dare not get close. With the thick skin of these two punks…”

Gu Du Xing sighed, “I cannot imagine how Diwu Qing Rou feels…”

Diwu Qing Rou was definitely not feeling good.

It could be said that his mood was terrible.

From out of nowhere came one Ask the Heavens Sword and one Underworld Saber. Diwu Qing Rou was so furious his chest almost burst!

Diwu Qing Rou never showed his anger even if his troops were defeated. Losing a few hundred thousand soldiers in a day, he would not even have half a frown on his face. But right now, he was so angry that his orifices were blowing steam.

With Nine Heavens Volume in hand, all major events that had happened in the past thousands of years were recorded inside! What ridiculous Ask the Heavens Sword Saint was there? And Underworld Saber was not even worth discussing…

And yet, such a sword and saber had suddenly appeared… Would this not annoy people? Plus, the craziest thing was… this could not be explained.

Diwu Qing Rou had once sent someone to bring out the Nine Heavens Volume to explain. In the end, it was almost burned by the people.

“Aren’t these things written by you people?” A King level master

took a look and said authoritatively, “F*! Who are you trying to fool with this tattered book? Do you think everyone in the world is dumb? This kind of thing... I can buy as many as I want with a few dozen taels!”

That kind of talk made Diwu Qing Rou furious.

He had never seen someone who was so irrational. But it was also because of this that Diwu Qing Rou recognized the seriousness of the situation! If a King level master could so easily believe in this rumor and not even bother to accept an explanation, what about the others?

Ordinary people in Jiang Hu would be even less rational.

*****

In the Prime Minister Manor.

“Yun He, what about that Ji young master?” Diwu Qing Rou frowned, “Those saber and sword are not brought here by him, right?”

“The two of them are really carrying swords. Young master Ji has a sword, and young master Rui has a dagger.” Cheng Yun He said cautiously, “In my opinion, the sword of that young master Ji is not Ask the Heavens Sword.”

“Ask the Heavens Sword...” Gao Sheng sneered, “What is this Ask the Heavens Sword? It’s just a conspiracy! That young master Ji is Ji Mo; I will go and see him tomorrow.”

“Even if Ask the Heavens Sword is indeed a conspiracy, we can no longer undo it!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said, “This move of King of Hell Chu is truly beyond my expectations.”

Chapter 259: Diwu Qing Rou's headache

Everyone became silent.

"Bu Chu, is the Office of Defense done with their tally?" Diwu Qing Rou said with a sigh.

"It is done." Han Bu Chu was slightly hesitant. He let out two dry coughs and said, "This number is probably not accurate..."

"Speak." Diwu Qing Rou said quietly.

"Yes. These past three days, the number of Jiang Hu travelers increased..." Han Bu Chu swallowed and stole a quick glance at Diwu Qing Rou's countenance, "The other day, the number of Jiang Hu people increased to about over a thousand. Yesterday, Jiang Hu people increased to about four thousand people. Cough... cough... cough..."

"What about today?"

"Today... today... Until noon today, the number of Jiang Hu visitors has... surpassed thirty thousand!" Han Bu Chu was sweating profusely, "There are also numerous people rushing to get to Continent Center. It is expected that before we close the citadel gates tonight, the number would reach fifty or sixty thousand people."

Everyone became crestfallen from shock by this terrifying number.

Within these past few days, news about Underworld Saber and Ask the Heavens Sword rose like wildfire all over Great Zhao. The number of treasure hunters coming into Continent Center Citadel also increased more and more.

Ten days ago, there was only a few dozen or a hundred people. Right now, the number had unexpectedly increased by tenfold each day...

“This situation is extremely grim!” Diwu Qing Rou frowned, “King level leader Jing!”

Jing Meng Hun bowed and said, “Please give me your orders, sir.”

“Golden Horse Riders Department must move to capture the person holding Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber! We must have this saber and sword in our hands and not let them cause trouble on the outside!”

“Understood!” Jing Meng Hun nodded.

“This is probably the only way to put out the fire. Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber have already had their effect. Completely dissolving it is not possible!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “We can only keep them in our hands. The people will be restless for a while; after nothing turns up, they will disperse themselves…”

Han Bu Chu sighed, “But it would still be a long period.”

Diwu Qing Rou frowned, “How goes the mission at Beyond the Heavens Sect?”

Jing Meng Hun’s forehead was flooded with sweat, “Cough… cough… They came back yesterday… But Meng Chao Ran is not killed. Instead, our people… lost two ninth grade Revered Martial Masters.”

Diwu Qing Rou frowned and said, “Beyond the Heavens Sect is that powerful?”

Jing Meng Hun’s forehead was thoroughly drenched in cold sweat.

Diwu Qing Rou had always been gentle. Ordinarily, a frown would have already been extremely dangerous. Yet, today, not only did he frown, he unexpectedly took a few deep breaths as well. His emotion was exceedingly bad.

“Because... as they were about to go in for the kill, two mysterious swordsmen suddenly appeared.” Jing Meng Hun explained.

“Two mysterious swordsmen?” Diwu Qing Rou laughed softly, “When they were going in for the kill? King level leader Jing, Golden Horse Riders Department needs to be straightened out.”

“You are right, Prime Minister.” Jing Meng Hun did not have anything to say. In this mission, success was completely in their grasp. Before the two mysterious swordsmen appeared, it could be said that they had countless opportunities to kill Meng Chao Ran.

However, to keep their strength, those two ninth grade Revered Martial Artists did not give the order to kill with everything they had; so they allowed their chances to pass by.

In fact, it could be said that right from the beginning, they would have been able to kill Meng Chao Ran if they had used deadly techniques with him.

But those infinite possibilities became impossibilities right after those two mysterious swordsmen appeared.

Diwu Qing Rou’s words meant just that. While Diwu Qing Rou never showed any disappointment toward him, misunderstanding Diwu Qing Rou’s meaning would be a total misfortune...

Speaking of this matter, Jing Meng Hun also hated King of Hell Chu to no end.

If it was not for the fact that King of Hell Chu was devious and caused one of Golden Horse Riders Department’s King level leader to die and the other to be disabled, If they could have had one King level leader in this mission against Meng Chao Ran, it would have been foolproof.

But currently, they highest level people they could send out were ninth grade Revered Martial Artists! It could be said that all of this was because of King of Hell Chu!

“In almost half a year, more than half of the spy network in Iron Cloud Citadel had fallen into the hands of the enemies! One King level leader lost his life and the other is now disabled. Almost fifty martial experts at the leadership level in Golden Horse Riders Department died in Iron Cloud Citadel!” Diwu Qing Rou said softly, “Even Number One died there. Right after, our mission against Meng Chao Ran and Beyond the Heavens Sect failed when it should have been a success!”

Jing Meng Hun kept his head low.

Diwu Qing Rou slowly continued, “Golden Horse Riders Department, over this half year, has not had one successful mission!” His voice was stern and cold.

“This time, with Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber... I hope Golden Horse Riders Department will not disappoint me!” Diwu Qing Rou said calmly, “King level leader Jing, you will have to give this a little more of your attention.”

“Understood!” Jing Meng Hun responded loudly.

“Prime Minister, Number One’s family... they have been sent over by Tie Bu Tian.” Han Bu Chu brought up this subject to distract Diwu Qing Rou a bit. And for that, he received a thankful look from Jing Meng Hun.

“Number One’s family...” Diwu Qing Rou looked a bit wistful. He thought for a long time before speaking, “Bu Chu, make the arrangements. No matter what they need... Treat them with the same decorum as royalties. Understood?”

Han Bu Chu bowed in response.

“Gao Sheng, are there any issues between your Gao clan and the Ji clan?” Diwu Qing Rou asked slowly.

“Both of our houses are clans in Middle Three Heavens. But one is in the south and the other is in the north; the distance between each other is very far. We don’t have any grudges or disputes.” Gao

Sheng said.

“Hmm, if that is the case, you will deal with young master Ji Mo. While you are at it, check his background.” Diwu Qing Rou said softly, “As for Rui Bu Tong, have you heard of this person’s name?”

“Never.” Gao Sheng thought for a long time and said, “I have never heard of a Middle Three Heavens clan with the surname Rui.”

“Hmm…” Diwu Qing Rou thought for a little and said, “With this person, you need to pay careful attention… See if this person could be an incarnation of King of Hell Chu.”

Gao Sheng was surprised, “An incarnation of King of Hell Chu?”

Han Bu Chu and company were also startled!

“This possibility is not too high.” Diwu Qing Rou said, “However, according to our prior speculations, King of Hell Chu will definitely come to Great Zhao. How would he do this? What identity would he use? We need to think about all of these things…”

“Even if that Rui Bu Tong is not King of Hell Chu… King of Hell Chu will certainly contact the two of them…” When Diwu Qing Rou said this, his speech was a bit broken showing hesitation and indecisiveness, “Gao Sheng, this matter will depend on you. If you could catch King of Hell Chu, then their fate is sealed!”

Gao Sheng’s eyes flashed, “Rest assured, Prime Minister. If this Rui Bu Tong is indeed King of Hell Chu, he would not escape from my hands even if he grows a pair of wings!”

“Mm, but you have to pay attention not to use your clan’s background or get into direct conflict with them.” Diwu Qing Rou said calmly, “In considerations for your clan, you must not break… the rules.”

“I understand.”

“Split up and do your work. Han Bu Chu, you will be in charge of this matter.” Diwu Qing Rou said, “Yun He will assist you. Gao Sheng will be in charge of contacting the clans. King level leader Jing will take care of the Jiang Hu people. King level leader Yin will take care of… some secret matters.”

Currently, Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong were lying about in Cheng Yun He’s manor. With their legs up, they were talking and drinking tea with great delight.

There was something Chu Yang was wrong about; even Gu Du Xing was wrong as well.

After Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong caused such an uproar, the two immediately started to gather up wealth.

On the way, countless wealthy households were cleaned out by Rui Bu Tong.

Gu Du Xing’s estimate of a few millions was too low! In fact, Ji Mo only followed behind Rui Bu Tong and got some leftovers, but he already amassed a few million.

When they left Iron Cloud, the two only brought a small bag. Right now, they had to use a carriage. Inside were all bank notes!

Furthermore, Rui Bu Tong had also stolen quite a few strange and rare items. The two people were now carrying an air of new money. On Ji Mo’s wrists, there were actually two purple jade bracelets. The cap on his head was also adorned with a large pearl, a luminous one.

Along the way, the two stuffed their mouth with countless delicacies. Their bodies had unexpectedly increased in size.

When they had nothing else to do, they pulled out Underworld Saber and went around killing some people and causing trouble. Generally, they led this wave of chaos and excitement toward Great Zhao.

Finally, the two punks quietly marched their way toward Cheng

Yun He's place and ignored the uproar in the Continent Center Citadel; they ate and drank as if there was nothing.

This alone was enough to show that they were much cleverer than the two coolies, Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di...

This was indeed the second young master of the Ji clan whose skill in laziness had reached its pinnacle.

"Ji Mo, tell me, in this cold weather... what's fun to do?" Rui Bu Tong was admiring a purple jade horse he accidentally picked up from Cheng Yun He's bedroom. He loved it so much that he did not want to put it down, "Stealing like this all the time is no fun at all."

"No problem, your third brother just looks at a pile of money and feels pleasure." Ji Mo smiled, "Just keep stealing for me."

"I wonder if big brother will come here." Rui Bu Tong rolled his eyes.

"Shut up!" Ji Mo glared, "Stupid, what nonsense are you speaking?"

Rui Bu Tong immediately became muted. If other people learned about King of Hell Chu's whereabouts, it would be a big disaster.

"People! Send two beautiful girls to massage us now." Ji Mo stretched his neck and yelled loudly.

After some time, as second young master Ji Mo almost fell asleep from being massaged by the maid, Cheng Yun He returned.

"Young master Ji...?"

"What is it?"

"Cough... cough... There is a young master here who claimed be an old friend of yours." Cheng Yun He looked at the punk who did not even want to lift his eyelids. He really wanted to kick this guy out. Is he not a second young master? I am taking care of you out of respect for the Ji clan, but you are really pushing it...

"Call him in!" Ji Mo's eyes remained closed as he waved his arm

and spoke arrogantly. That kind of attitude was like an emperor ordering a eunuch.

Chapter 260: Chaos

“Ji Mo, second young master Ji, you look well.” A clear voice spoke.

“Who is this?” Ji Mo stretched his voice as he lazily opened his eyes. Suddenly, he called out, “Eldest young master Gao? You are here? Haha, it’s such an honor to have a special guest here! Brother Cheng, bring tea! The best tea!”

Cheng Yun He’s face darkened. The only thing he wanted to do was kick this punk!

Is this your home? You actually think I am your servant?

Unable to do anything, Cheng Yun He swallowed his anger and ordered the maids to bring tea before quickly disappearing. It was now up to Gao Sheng to deal with them. These past few days had become unbearable for Cheng Yun He!

This second young master Ji was essentially not aware of his “guest” status! He went straight to Cheng Yun He’s home and treated it as his own. Who could bear such a thing?

“Brother Ji, how is it that you are interested in hanging out at Continent Center?” Gao Sheng smiled and sat down.

“Young master Gao is wrong on this!” Ji Mo sat up and said, “I will go where I want. Plus, all of Continent Center is not your Gao clan’s property. What? You, Gao Sheng, can come, but I, Ji Mo, can’t?”

“Of course that is not what I meant.” Gao Sheng amicably smile and said, “It’s just that I am worried Brother Ji is lost; it would be bad if you cannot return home.”

“Even if I get lost… I won’t run to Brother Gao’s home…” Ji Mo laughed, “Eldest young master Gao, I heard that during this training outing, young mistress Huyan has went to Lower Three Heavens as well. It seems that you and your fiancée can be reunited

at Continent Center Citadel."

"..." Gao Sheng's countenance changed. Veins popped up on his forehead.

The young mistress Huyan that Ji Mo just spoke of was the second young mistress of the Huyan clan in Middle Three Heavens. Gao Sheng was her betrothed since before she was born. It was said that she grew up to be tall and sturdy with the back of a tiger and shoulders of a bear... Eldest young master Gao Sheng seemed to be unhappy with this marriage arrangement...

If it were not for this young mistress Huyan, Gao Sheng would not have went to hide at Diwu Qing Rou's place... Ji Mo was currently poking at his tender spot by bringing this up.

"I heard that young mistress Huyan loves brother Gao fervently. She travelled thousands of miles from Middle Three Heavens to Lower Three Heavens. This kind of love touches heaven and earth."

Ji Mo laughed loudly and said, "Eldest young master Gao, you should not let down such a loving beauty."

"Do you believe that I will not immediately rip your mouth apart if you say another word?" Gao Sheng ground his teeth as he roared ferociously.

"I am so scared of you. Ahwooh..." Ji Mo sneered, "Do you believe that I will not immediately let the whole world know you are hiding here if you continue to threaten me? Let your 'beautiful' fiancée run over here and be lovey dovey with you?"

The two ground their teeth as they glared at each other like two fighting cocks. After a long while, they suddenly burst into laughter.

Gao Sheng leisurely leaned back on his recliner and said, "Ji Mo, I heard you have been staying in Iron Cloud recently?"

"Mm, I still did not know that you were hiding in Great Zhao.

You are really well-informed." Ji Mo finally lifted his body off the recliner and sat opposite of Gao Sheng.

"If you were staying in Iron Cloud, you must have seen the famous King of Hell Chu?" Gao Sheng asked with interest, "What does King of Hell Chu look like?"

Ji Mo sighed and said, "Gao Sheng, I know why you came today. But this matter, I cannot discuss with you."

"Oh? Why?"

"You have your friends, and I have mine." Ji Mo said frankly, "Like you said, if I stayed in Iron Cloud, how could I not know King of Hell Chu? But... I see him as a friend. Do you understand my meaning?"

The smile on Gao Sheng's face slowly disappeared; he said somewhat seriously, "You are saying... King of Hell Chu is your friend?"

"Yes! That is exactly what I meant!" Ji Mo nodded in affirmation, "That is why I cannot tell you anything relating to him."

"I understand!" Gao Sheng nodded softly. Then he smiled and said, "I won't force you."

He had originally wanted to ask a few polite questions, but Ji Mo said everything before he even started. Plus, Ji Mo made it clear that there was no discussing this matter.

You have your friends, and I have mine. You won't sell out your friends, and I definitely won't sell out mine.

Gao Sheng thought to himself: If Ji Mo speaks this way, he is definitely not lying.

However, he did not know that while Ji Mo did not lie, he did not say one thing. He and the King of Hell were not simply friends. They were brothers!

"This young master is..." Gao Sheng looked at Rui Bu Tong.

“Rui Bu Tong!” Rui Bu Tong nodded and smiled, “Young master Gao, I have admired you for a long time.”

“Oh, young master Rui is also a person of Middle Three Heavens?” Gao Sheng attentively asked, “And which clan has such a handsome and talented young descendant like young master Rui?”

“I do not dare to assume to be handsome and talented. As for clan… I don’t have one.” Rui Bu Tong smiled, “Young master Gao thinks too highly of me.”

“You don’t know him?” Ji Mo pointed to Rui Bu Tong and asked in surprise, “Gao Sheng, you did not just recently come down to Lower Three Heavens for training right? Am I right to assume that you have been down here for a long time?”

“It has been two years.” Gao Sheng sighed. It was all because he had to avoid that demoness that he could not go home for two years. Now that they were talking about it, he felt bitter once more.

“No wonder.” Ji Mo said, “But even if you do not know about Rui Bu Tong, you should know about Stealing God and Thieving Ghost, right?”

“Stealing God and Thieving Ghost?” Gao Sheng immediately became serious, “Could it be?”

“Rui Bu Tong is the disciple of those two! He made his debut in Middle Three Heavens more than a year ago. The name Through the Heavens Robber is extremely infamous…” Ji Mo glanced at Gao Sheng, “You are really ignorant…”

“It’s you!” Gao Sheng was startled. He thought this was King of Hell Chu, but it turned out that this was a thief!

Now that he knew Rui Bu Tong’s identity, Gao Sheng got even more of a headache, “Then… Brother Rui, more than one hundred recent cases of grand theft… were all by you?”

Gao Sheng quietly swallowed.

There were millions of bank notes as well as a number of rare treasures. Even Gao Sheng was envious with these things. While bank notes could not be used in Upper Three Heavens, they were regularly used items in Middle Three Heavens.

This was such a large fortune.

For Great Zhao, this was a major case! However, their opponent was the disciple of the two tough guys, Stealing God and Thieving Ghost...

They could not take in this punk. If they crossed the two monsters, Stealing God and Thieving Ghost, Diwu Qing Rou's Great Zhao and his Gao clan would take the brunt of the punishment...

"You think I want to do that?" Rui Bu Tong unexpectedly fumed, "If it was not for this second young master Ji... He got crazy poor since he came down here so he forced me to go stealing every day."

Gao Sheng's eyes widened as he thought to himself: You are the disciple of Stealing God and Thieving Ghost; who would dare force you? Is it not because your hands are itchy or King of Hell Chu asked you to? And you pushed the blame on Ji Mo...

"Hey, hey. Speaking of that, it's really easily to find money here." Ji Mo smiled happily as he pulled out a stack of bank notes from his robe and stuffed it into Gao Sheng's hand, "Take it, take it. We should share the wealth. I, Ji Mo, am not a stingy person."

Gao Sheng did not know whether to laugh or cry.

"Ji Mo, let me ask you a question. We are peers from Middle Three Heavens so you must answer me honestly." Gao Sheng pushed the stack of bank notes back to Ji Mo and said seriously, "If King of Hell Chu also comes to Great Zhao... your stance would be...?"

"In a short time, I will be returning to Middle Three Heavens

already!” Ji Mo said casually.

“Oh? That is very good then.” Gao Sheng’s face relaxed.

“Eldest young master Gao, do you know where the other trainers from my clan are?”

“Your brothers are heading toward Continent Center.” Gao Sheng sighed, “No just your Ji clan, the Luo clan, the Gu clan, the Mo clan, the Black Saber clan, the Liu clan, the Dong clan, the Wang clan… Almost all of the clans that came down for training are going to Continent Center…”

Gao Sheng counted his fingers as his head looked like it was going to explode, “It’s all because of those confounded Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber… Ah, this is really too much.”

Gao Sheng watched Ji Mo’s countenance as he spoke.

“Ask the Heavens Sword? I have never heard of this before.” Ji Mo frowned pensively, “I really never heard of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint from eight thousand years ago. Could it be… that our family’s records are wrong?”

“Motherf*, what Ask the Heavens Sword? It’s all a lie!” Gao Sheng cursed, “That bastard King of Hell Chu intentionally came up with this scheme to cause internal chaos for Great Zhao!”

“But what does Great Zhao and Iron Cloud business have to do with you?” Ji Mo rolled his eyes, “You can watch the excitement like watching a show. What are you getting worked up about? Could it be that you want to join in the fight for power in Lower Three Heavens? Eldest young master Gao, has life in the Gao clan become too comfortable lately? You want to do something a little stimulating?”

Gao Sheng immediately recovered. He coughed dryly and said, “Nonsense! How could I do that?”

Ji Mo sneered to himself as he thought: You are not doing that? That would be strange.

Gao Sheng continued to beat around the bushes for a while. But Ji Mo was too careful. He could not ask anything and got played instead. The two rolled eyes and poked at each other, but both were equally matched. In the end, Gao Sheng did not dare to offend this second young master Ji as he wished.

After a long time without any gain, he had to go back in frustration...

And that night, a storm surged in Great Zhao's Continent Center Citadel. Underworld Saber suddenly appeared on the east side then on the west side. In a flash, it brought a trail of bloodshed and people in an uproar...

All of Continent Center was like a boiling hotpot.

That night, there was at least a million people that was not able to sleep.

Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di played like mad. Plus, the two of them changed and transformed into two unrecognizable appearances and did not care about anything. Dong Wu Shang went out to cause trouble with the saber. Luo Ke Di assisted him and conveniently robbed a few great houses along the way...

[TLN: Dong Wu Shang and Luo Ke Di are supposed to have Ask the Heavens Sword. This section is rather vexing to me. I triple checked with original version. Later chapters will go back to sword.]

He did not have thieving skills like Rui Bu Tong. Instead, he directly jumped in and robbed while things were chaotic...

When Dong Wu Shang fell into danger, second young master Luo let out an ahwooh and appeared. Then the two would join forces, break out of the encirclement, and disappear to another part of the citadel...

Chapter 261: The fantastic Ask the Heavens Sword

“Continent Center Citadel has boiled over.” Chu Yang stood at the top of the biggest inn in Continent Center and watched people moving nonstop in all directions. Hearing the sound of chaos everywhere was truly enjoyable.

“Dong Wu Shang’s fights are really exciting.” Gu Du Xing was somewhat envious. Gu Du Xing’s character was not too different from that of Dong Wu Shang. They were both introverted fighting maniacs who were eager to fight and eager to kill. Of course, he also hoped that he could be like Dong Wu Shang and fight to this level of excitement.

The only difference was Gu Du Xing was a calm kind of fighter whereas Dong Wu Shang grew more aggressive as he fought.

“This level of chaos is still not enough.” Chu Yang said pensively, “This is only superficial chaos. Once the training disciples of the clans come, it will quickly calm down.”

“After all, they all know that there were no Ask the Heavens Sword Saint or Underworld Saber Saint eight thousand years ago!” Chu Yang sighed, “How should we make this cause more chaos?”

“Not so!” Gu Du Xing said, “This monstrous idea is probably Ji Mo’s. If he has thought of such a plan, and it is clear that the four of them discussed about this, they surely have underlying intentions. It definitely is not that simple.”

“Underlying intentions?” Chu Yang was caught off-guard.

“When Ji Mo took the saber, did he not ask you to engrave something mysterious on the blade?” Gu Du Xing said in a low voice, “Even though I grew up in the Gu clan, I was not their direct descendant. So… I did not have the chance to see some special collections of books in the clan.”

Gu Du Xing continued, “However, Ji Mo is a direct descendant of the Ji clan! While I do not know what that mark of Ji Mo means, I am sure there is an underlying intention.”

“I am guessing... when that mark is discovered by other people, and this Ask the Heavens Sword Saint scam is exposed, it will lead to an even greater uproar!” Gu Du Xing sighed and said, “What I am worried about right now is that they would create too much of uproar. This might cause the great clans of Middle Three Heavens to join in on the fight and create a real disaster.”

Chu Yang frowned and thought carefully. A long time later, he said hesitantly, “This can’t be, right?”

“Haha...” Gu Du Xing’s icy face suddenly showed a warm smile, “Perhaps you don’t even recognize this. Us six brothers, from the moment we met each other, we have been fighting among each other. We did not respect each other. But you were able to control all the infighting to an acceptable level. Given that your martial strength was much lower than all of them at the time, you were actually able to control the situation and changed everyone’s point of view. This already impressed them.”

“Then, with your help, everyone was make to make great strides. This confirmed that your big brother position is unshakable. For any disciple of a clan in Middle Three Heavens to be able to bring together so many second young masters like this is virtually impossible. Yet, you were able to do this. Of course this was because you do not belong to any clan in Middle Three Heavens, but your skill is also unquestionable.”

Gu Du Xing said in a deep tone, “As time progressed, everyone had matches with you. You were practically tortured every time, but you never got angry and just bore it. This has started the formation of the word brother. Between us brothers, there was nothing unacceptable. And big brother is not someone high and mighty, but one of our own. So everyone felt comfortable and warm.”

Chu Yang pondered quietly and did not speak.

“Therefore, until a month ago, we did not separate.” There was a hint of a smile in Gu Du Xing’s eyes, “When you suddenly wanted to deal with Mo Tian Yun, the five of us were surprised. At the time, we had talked about and you acted as if you had changed your mind by not mentioning it anymore. But, Ji Mo and the rest knew that just because you don’t mention it does not mean that you don’t want to do it; you just don’t want to discuss it with them.”

“You brought up the issue of dealing with Mo Tian Yun because of Xiao Wu. At the time, you were a little impulsive. After considering the brothers’ clans, you stopped mentioning it. But just because you no longer mention it does not mean they no longer think about it.”

“You want to cause chaos in Great Zhao and stir up a trouble in Continent Center because of the fight for power between the kingdoms, but Ji Mo and the rest of them do this because they want to create a storm during this training period of the clans from Middle Three Heavens.”

Chu Yang suddenly understood.

“So if you want to deal with Mo Tian Yun, it is much easier now. Plus, in the chaos, even if Mo Tian Yun dies, no one would suspect you… After all, King of Hell Chu is still currently in Iron Cloud.”

“This is also the last thing the brothers could do for you before leaving.” Gu Du Xing said quietly, “While they did not say anything before, but since they are doing it, they will do it to the best of their abilities for you! Otherwise, they would not feel comfortable leaving.”

“Chu Yang, since the day the six of us truly saw each other as brothers, we have the world’s greatest wealth… It is a clan power comparable to about half of that of Middle Three Heavens! Perhaps they have thought of this or perhaps they have yet to recognize it.

But wait until years from now... This glory will be within reach!”

“So I am guessing that Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber are just getting started!” Gu Du Xing said quietly.

Chu Yang’s heart was filled with warmth. These words of Gu Du Xing had stirred his mind. He slowly walked toward the window and watched the night outside for a long time. Then he let out a soft sigh, “Such brothers, such friendship... how can it be forgotten! Others are faithful to me, and I am faithful to them. Du Xing, the future of us brothers is not just going to be in Middle Three Heavens.”

Gu Du Xing smiled faintly. He seemed to understand Chu Yang’s frame of mind and said, “Chu Yang, no matter what you are doing, don’t be hasty. Dealing with Diwu Qing Rou, you practically calculated exhaustively. But with Mo Tian Yun’s situation, you are a bit hasty.”

“Hmm.” How could Chu Yang not know? The moment he thought about Mo Qing Wu’s situation, he could not hold anything back!

“Also, this trip to Great Zhao, we need identities.” Gu Du Xing went over to Chu Yang and watched the white snow in the night with him, “We have to join in this chaos!”

“Don’t worry, I have already prepared for this...” Chu Yang smiled and said, “Right now, we just need to fight and join in this competition for the saber and sword!”

“Great!” Gu Du Xing’s eyes brightened.

The two only needed to join in the fight and create fame for themselves. Then they could create a name for themselves from their identity-less status. That way, not only could they muddy the water even more, they can also eliminate any suspicions toward King of Hell Chu.

All of this was King of Hell Chu’s scheme; who would have

thought that King of Hell Chu, himself, would join in the competition?

“Let’s go!” Chu Yang pushed his feet and flew out of the window. Gu Du Xing’s body floated like the wind and followed Chu Yang closely. The two black figures blended in with the shadows of the night.

Dong Wu Shang held “Ask the Heavens Sword” in his hand and killed in all four directions. At first, he was not comfortable with using the sword to fight for a long time. But now he was becoming used to it and many insights rose up inside him.

And his own martial skill, over this prolonged period of fighting, was becoming more and more refined. There was even a faint sense that he might unexpectedly break through ninth grade Saber Great Master!

This greatly surprised Dong Wu Shang. In this time frame, he had continued to only use the sword so how could his way of the saber advance so quickly?

But doubts were just doubts, he could not let go of even a second of this enlightenment!

His mind flashed like a bolt of electricity, and his arms swung nonstop as he roared, “Only a few of you and you want to fight for my Ask the Heavens Sword?! You are worthy?”

His sword aura suddenly changed; a shocking light flashed in the night. The clanking sounds continued to ring out fall falling beads. All of the weapons aiming toward him from four directions were chopped. Seven or eight people backed up in terror. Everyone around had a fiery look in their eyes!

Ask the Heavens Sword! This was definitely a legendary heavenly weapon of the ages!

This kind of sharpness, one swing had cut up more than ten weapons, and the blade was surprisingly not the least damaged. If

they could open that saintly imprint...

Everyone screamed loudly, “Leave the sword!”

The whole bunch was filled with excitement as they rushed in chaotically.

Dong Wu Shang’s countenance was icy. The sword swung up; suddenly, it drew a large flower as it greeted all of the attacks without any avoidance.

Clanking sounded out nonstop as Dong Wu Shang yelled out, “Your grandfather will leave you now!” He was surprisingly arrogant as he abruptly cut a path through the crowd. His figured flashed as he brought a trail of blood right to a roof top at the speed of light.

Everyone was anxious and angry as they roared in pursuit.

Dong Wu Shang was like a marathon runner; he pulled up clouds of dust as he ran all over the citadel. He also intentionally showed off the sword so people did not cease to discover him.

“Huh? Is this not Ask the Heavens Sword?”

“After him!”

Round and round, he ran like mad. From over ten people chasing him in the beginning, the crowd had now turned into a few hundred people. But second young master Dong became more and more enthusiastic. He could only feel his fighting spirit rising with each moment. The saber aura inside him grew large and became excited! It was breaking through!

“Ah...” Dong Wu Shang looked up and yelled out. His body suddenly shot up. In the moment of extreme excitement he unexpectedly pushed strong enough to jump more than a hundred feet up the sky!

His arm mightily raised the sword straight up to the heavens! Energy flooded into the sword blade like a tide. The sword shined

in the sky like a little blinding sun!

Forget about the people below, this was seen even beyond the hundred feet radius. Immediately, screams continually rang out from the waves of people poured in this direction.

But the moment they moved, they halted in shock!

It was because Dong Wu Shang let out a fierce roar in midair. Suddenly, a powerful aura exploded! For a moment, his body also paused in the air!

Ninth grade Saber Great Master breakthrough!

He actually broke through at this time!

Dong Wu Shang suddenly roared in midair, “Your grandfather broke through again! Woah hahaha... Ask the Heavens Sword is indeed a heavenly weapon!”

Thousands of Jiang Hu people witnessed this scene. Their eyes reddened momentarily with extreme envy and jealousy... This was Ask the Heavens Sword’s power! He was actually able to break through even while fighting...

How terrifying was this?

The people below became even more crazed!

Chapter 262: Ahwooh...

You can even break through as you are being chased by people trying to kill you.

Who in Jiang Hu had not been chased down by those trying to kill them? Who had not been put in an awkward situation? Being able to run and escape was already not bad; who would even think about breaking through?

But this lucky bastard in front of them had unexpectedly broke through as he was being chased by people trying to kill him!

What was this?

There was no doubt! This was the mysterious power of Ask the Heavens Sword.

Dong Wu Shang flew down from the air with a blinding sword light. He roared, “Come! Meet Ask the Heavens Sword!”

The people below practically spat up blood.

This bastard, you already got what you want, and now you’re bragging?

“Aaah...” A loud roar was heard as a few hundred people rushed up simultaneously. The moment Dong Wu Shang’s sword touched the forest of weapons below, he immediately flew backward like a shooting star.

On the roofs of the houses around him, there were already numerous Jiang Hu people waiting for the opportunity to attack. At this time, they moved to block him. But given the sharpness of Ask the Heavens Sword, how could they block him?

Clanging sounds rang out, and before the broken sword pieces could reach the ground, Dong Wu Shang was already out of their encirclement.

Swoosh, swoosh. Almost a thousand people simultaneously

rushed up like clouds in the wind.

Dong Wu Shang ran like mad.

In a blink of an eye, he had reached the main doors of a government office and was standing there majestically. This was the Ministry of War of Great Zhao's Continent Center. There were even a few groups of soldiers on patrol.

"Who goes there? Halt!" Someone ordered.

Dong Wu Shang simply ignored them as he rushed forward like a cyclone. His two legs continually kicked. Seven or eight soldiers were kicked away by him. In a blink of an eye, a path appeared. Dong Wu Shang aimed straight for the closed main door of the official building. The blade of Ask the Heavens Sword flashed as he attacked right at the main door!

With a boom, he made a large hole. Dong Wu Shang's body flashed, and he disappeared from sight.

Behind him, more than a thousand Jiang Hu people rushed forward. The crowd became crazed as they watched Dong Wu Shang enter the Ministry of War. They barely had time to think as the whole group simultaneously pushed toward the main gate...

"Halt! Halt!" The guard's voice had greatly weakened, "This is an official military building! Anyone who dares to cause trouble...!"

Before he could finish speaking, he was kicked away. Right after, countless feet stepped over his body as the loud crowd rushed into the Ministry of War!

All of a sudden, this orderly Ministry of War turned into messy pig slurry. The soldiers in the garrison awoke from their slumber and hastily tried to block them with all their might. But they were beaten silly within moments.

Boom. Dong Wu Shang broke one side of the encirclement with the sword. As if he was trying to escape in terror, he ran listlessly. The moment he tried to get out, hundreds of Jiang Hu people were

waiting like tigers on the prowl. He let out a terrified cry and went back in like lightning. Boom. He made another big hole on the other side.

These people were a little hesitant when they saw that it was the Ministry of War. They were not impulsive enough to rush in like the others. But at this moment, seeing the owner of Ask the Heavens Sword running toward them in terror and then running back, it was as if a piece of delicious meat was being placed right at their mouths and then taken away.

How could they hold back?

With a cry, all the hotheaded people no longer paid any mind to some Ministry of War. They rushed in without any regards. Boom. Dust and smoke filled the air as the wall on this side of the office of the Ministry of War collapsed.

The horn hastily sounded to signal for backup from the guards of the Ministry of War!

Right away, the sound of horns came from all directions.

The Jiang Hu people giving chase in the back were coming up. However, without knowing where Ask the Heavens Sword was currently, they did not dare to break into the Ministry of War; the whole group halted.

However, at this moment, they only heard an angry roar, “If you want to take Ask the Heavens Sword, you have to step over my dead body!” Then they saw a blinding sword light shoot straight up into the sky; painful screams continually sounded out…

Their minds could not help but be engrossed.

An old man with Revered cultivation level yelled out, “I will go in and see.” Flying up, he immediately broke into the office. Everyone looked at each other; seeing that the number of Jiang Hu people gathering was increasing rapidly, their courage grew stronger and stronger. A phrase came to their minds: “The law

cannot punish a crowd…”

Suddenly, someone shouted out, “Ask the Heavens Sword is inside, what are we waiting for?”

This shout ripped apart the night sky. Everyone immediately roared and rushed into the already tattered office with the forces of mountains and oceans!

Not until after they entered did they discover the scene inside was that of ruins. On the ground, corpses of soldiers and Jiang Hu people were scattered in large numbers!

The sound of killing and screaming rang out endlessly from all directions. People were killing until their eyes turned red.

While these people were suspiciously searching for the sword, a grievous voice shouted, “It is an urgent matter; what is the reason for delay? Breaking into an official building is a capital offense! Shoot the arrows!”

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh. Arrows rained from all directions.

Caught unprepared, more than a dozen people were hit with arrows and let out painful screams. With their companions dead and injured, the fierce temper of the Jiang Hu people rose, “Fight! Fight to the death with them!”

“Fight to the death with these dogs!”

Among the yelling, everyone pulled out their sabers and swords. They collided with the soldiers surrounding them.

Horse hooves sounded like thunder as the soldiers nearby came to their aid.

The moment the leaders saw the earth-shattering chaos, they immediately decided to give orders for the soldiers to rush in right away…

A great fight scene had commenced…

Before the sound of horse hooves was heard, the owner of Ask the

Heavens Sword, Dong Wu Shang... the person that caused this chaos, had panicked and broke free...

“Ahwooh!...”

A mysterious howling sound rang out. Luo Ke Di, second young master of the Luo clan, appeared with a blinding sword light. He asked with excitement, “Ask the Heavens Sword is mine! You bastards dare to come and take it?”

The sword light immediately stopped more than half the people who were pursuing Dong Wu Shang.

Everyone almost fainted from his teasing. Even if you want it, and even if you are anxious, you should still have the sword in hand before talking. Right now, you are not trying to take the sword, but block us instead. Aren’t you just helping that punk escape?

They cursed him, and they were right. Luo Ke Di definitely was trying to help Dong Wu Shang escape.

After fighting excitedly for a while, Luo Ke Di turned and ran, “F*, where did that punk go? Leave the sword...”

The large wave of disoriented people behind him quickly rushed past.

Bam, bam...

In front of them, a group of a few thousand riders turned the corner and headed toward them. They were face to face with Luo Ke Di...

“Brothers, let’s kill! The dog officials are here. Even if we have to die, we have to take these dog officials with us! Ahwooh...” Luo Ke Di let out an odd howl and rushed forward with an extremely grievous look.

“Shoot the arrows!” The leader of the soldiers had an icy gaze that flashed with cruelty.

The moment the order was given, thousands of arrows were shot simultaneously.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

Right away, the dark arrows flew toward them and covered the sky. Luo Ke Di barked, “Dog officials! You are truly ruthless!” Swinging his sword nonstop, he protected his body and shot forward like a meteor. He was coming from behind, he went first into the group of soldiers!

Clang. The sound of weapons hitting each other rang out. Luo Ke Di jumped up and kicked the general off his horse. His two legs kicked fiercely at the majestic rectangular face of that general. He even cursed, “What majesty! What arrogance! You are a shameless king of bastards... Ahwooh...”

The soldiers hastily rushed toward them. More than a dozen angry blades slashed in Luo Ke Di’s direction. Luo Ke Di let out a loud scream and jumped. He ran and hid under the horse’s stomach, “Ahwooh, brothers, you must hang on! Hang on...”

Then with a boom, the wall next to him exploded, and he disappeared without a trace.

The general who was kicked in the face several times by Luo Ke Di, clamored up with a black and blue face. His mouth and nose were bleeding; his face was looking no different from that of a pig. He also lost a few teeth. He roared out fiercely, “Kill! Kill! Kill! Don’t even leave one!”

“Kill!” Two thousand soldiers rushed toward a few hundred Jiang Hu people.

After a wave of raining arrows, these people already suffered great loss and injuries. At the point, the whole bunch only wanted to run away, but it was too late. Thousands of troops were rushing in. They immediately surrounded the bunch, and swords and arrows rained down on them from above.

“Kill... kill... kill...” The leading general clutched his nose with his hand. The look of embarrassment and anger in his eyes was practically becoming solid. He heard a horn signal for help and immediately came to the rescue. He never expected to be beaten up on the way.

The attacker was merciless! How could he hold back his anger? If these guys are your martial brothers, I will kill them all...

Smoke suddenly appeared everywhere in Continent Center Citadel; horn signals sounded out nonstop.

The chaos at the Ministry of War had yet to subside when even more chaotic sounds came from another direction.

“Ask the Heavens Sword! Ask the Heavens Sword is here!”

If there was someone who knew the lay of Continent Center Citadel well, they would definitely know that the sounds came from Great Zhao’s Ministry of the State...

The Ministry of War had already become a ruin, and the Ministry of State was starting to become chaotic. But how lucky it was that second young master Dong Wu Shang ran into the Ministry of State’s vault?

This was too much!

Second young master was just a just a maniac; why would he care about money? With one kick a trunk flew out. Two Jiang Hu men who were chasing him turned into smashed meat. At the same time, there was a boom. Glistening gold scattered all over the ground.

“Oh! Gold!” Second young master Luo Ke Di just ran over when he saw gold all over the ground. He immediately yelled out in excitement, “Ahwooh... So much gold... Grab it quickly everyone... Motherf*, there is only one Ask the Heavens Sword, but there is so much gold... Motherf*, this is the real stuff...”

Then he rushed over and grabbed a few pieces...

Dong Wu Shang was extremely strong. He picked up one trunk of gold after another and threw them out. The entire Ministry of State was immediately glistening in gold…

Boom…

It was boiling over…

“Ahwooh… Not robbing is not robbing. If I rob, no one would know… His grandmother! It’s gold; it’s gold… Ahwooh…” Dong Wu Shang howled loudly.

Chapter 263: Strange swordsman

Money moves human hearts! This saying was indeed true!

Gold and silver trunks broke open, one after another. Glistening white was silver, and shining yellow was gold. Pieces flew out all over like stars in the sky.

While the vault of the Ministry of State was not the national treasury, gold and silver were still as plentiful as water in the sea.

Even though these Jiang Hu people ate and drank well, how could they have seen so much silver and gold like this before now? The eyes of most brightened. They only hated the fact that their parents did not give them another pair of arms as they frantically grabbed gold and silver.

Momentarily, the owner of Ask the Heavens Sword, Dong Wu Shang, held the sword and stood some distance away. Surprisingly, no one bothered to pay attention to him.

Those who still had their sanity were blocked by those who were crazed with fever for gold. They were not able to get over. Second young master let out a howl and disappeared. Then there was only the pitiful sound of the horn signaling for help. It was followed by an earth-shattering hoarse scream, “Thieves are robbing the Ministry of State’s vault... Thieves are robbing the Ministry of State’s vault...”

It was second young master Luo yelling with all of his might.

Right away, horns madly sounded out from all directions. Many soldiers were quickly heading this way...

The leader was one of the ten famed generals from Great Zhao, General Qiu Feng Yang. Having a famed general in action was definitely not ordinary. After one sound of a horn signal, all the horn sounds from all directions immediately ceased.

In Qiu Feng Yang’s line, the horn sound put everything an

orderly fashion.

Almost ten thousand soldiers advanced like a forest and surrounded all of the Ministry of State so tightly that a drop of water could not get through. Qiu Feng Yang's countenance was as cold as water, "No one can escape! Capture them all!"

All the soldiers complied loudly. Right away, under the command of officers at all levels, they began the onslaught. They were Great Zhao's elite soldiers; how could the crowd here keep them at bay?

Dong Wu Shang had long escaped from the chaos...

This side was just finished when suddenly loud noises came from the west end of the citadel. A great fire rose up as if wanting to burn up the heavens.

"Underworld Saber! Underworld Saber appeared here... Ahwooh... Dog aunt! Dog aunt!" Young master Ji Mo held Underworld Saber. Clearly, there was no one chasing him, but he hid in a secluded place, pinched his nose, and yelled out.

His voice was filled with excitement like someone who just ate a hundred pounds of aphrodisiac.

On the other side, Rui Bu Tong carried a large bag as he crawled out from a wealthy home. He stood right on the roof of that house and yelled, "Underworld Saber has appeared... Punk, where are you? Leave Underworld Saber here for me!"

A great commotion immediately exploded!

"What? What? Underworld Saber also appeared?"

"Let's go see."

"Quickly! We won't get anything if we are too slow..."

Outlines of people flying through the air were like a swarm of locusts.

Ji Mo excitedly swung the saber in his hand as if he was afraid other people might not see. Then he unexpectedly let out a pained

cry, “Who is it? Who is so lowly? Sneaking an attack on my butt?”

Then he yelled, “Who dares to grab my Underworld Saber?”

In the darkness, Gu Du Xing and Chu Yang were holding back their laughter. It was Gu Du Xing who pulled a piece of tile from the roof and mercilessly threw it at Ji Mo’s butt. It was bugging them that this guy was too arrogant.

Within moments, Ji Mo was surrounded. He depended purely on the sharpness of Underworld Saber to fight left and right, and jumping up and down. He was so excited that his whole body trembled. His mouth was spitting all over, “Ah... Ah ah ah...! Dog aunt! Dog aunt!”

“This bastard is too happy; he is going to be sad soon!” Chu Yang was annoyed and amused at the same time as he watched Ji Mo, “In the crowd surrounding him, there are a few Revered level masters! In tonight’s chaos, we have the first wave of Revered level masters appearing!”

“We have to be prepared to make our moves at any moment!” Gu Du Xing nodded; he softly placed his hand on his sword hilt.

Suddenly, a few shadows shot up like meteors. In a blink of an eye, they had joined in the fight and made their moves at the same time!

Four Revered level masters!

Ji Mo suddenly felt a force pressing on him as heavily as a mountain. He could not help but curse, “Bastards! So many of you are surrounding me. If you have any courage, you will fight with me one on one!”

Even the crowd surrounding him fell into laughter! In such a situation and this guy was still talking about fighting one on one; this punk was truly imaginative!

With a cry, Rui Bu Tong shot out from the darkness, “Underworld Saber is mine!”

However, at this moment, the four Revered level masters had moved at the same time. They stood in four different directions as they attacked Ji Mo together! They exploded on him a flash flood!

Ji Mo was only a Great level master. Now that he was completely surrounded, how could he block them all?

Bam, bam, bam. Ji Mo was dealt with, with much suffering. His body could barely stand straight. His back was suddenly palmed. With an “ah,” he spat out a clump of fresh blood as he staggered forward. Then another hand reached out like a flash of lightning and grabbed the spine of Underworld Saber. A powerful force went through the saber and made Ji Mo’s arm felt numb. His chest felt a shock, and Underworld Saber left his hand.

“Got it! Let’s go!” The person who just snatched Underworld Saber shouted excitedly. The other three simultaneously gathered to cover him as they broke through the encirclement. There was a look of excitement on each of their faces.

Underworld Saber, a heavenly item for them to break through to Saint cultivation level, was finally in their possession.

“Oh no. Underworld Saber has been snatched away... Stop them...” Rui Bu Tong was sweating with anxiousness. Ji Mo was also bewildered. F*! We’re not at this scene yet...

The whole thing is messed up! Ji Mo almost vomited blood. Why are there Revered level masters today? This... should not happen yet!

“Leave Underworld Saber! Stop them! Trying to escape? No way!”

“Kill! Those four guys have snatched Underworld Saber...”

A lot was said, but things happened really fast. The crowd rushed in from four directions and did not cease to scream as they surrounded those four Revered level masters in the center. However, these four people were powerful and were not at all

fearful. They screamed and fought with the others fiercely and were not at all like Ji Mo.

While Ji Mo had the precious saber, he did not injure people unnecessarily. These four that possessed the saber in their hands killed without a care. Within moments, much blood was spilled. Heads flew out like watermelons and flew in the air like a circus show.

Among them, one head had flown a few dozen feet up in the air, but it surprisingly still yelled, “Underworld Saber is mine…”

It looked like these four people were about to successfully kill their way out of the encirclement! Given their cultivation levels and the fact that many high-level martial experts have yet to arrive at Continent Center, they would probably disappear without a trace! By that time, all the armies of the world might not be able to search them out.

Ji Mo wanted to cry, and Rui Bu Tong was grinding his teeth. How could this have happened?

It happened really quickly. A black shadow suddenly appeared and yelled out, “Leave Underworld Saber!”

A sword slashed down like a dragon!

A bone chilling sword aura came crashing out from this sword!

The four simultaneously yelled out in terror, “Swordsman!”

This sword move was majestic and indomitable! Facing this sword move, the four Revered level masters unexpectedly did not dare to meet it; they all dodged it. Within moments, the four’s fortified defense had collapsed because of this one sword move.

The sword of a swordsman and the saber of a sabersman were the most terrifying weapons for any masters of the same level! Being a swordsman was a kind of state after all!

This was also a Revered Sword Artist, but it was a swordsman; he

could easily destroy other Revered Sword Artists!

In principle, they were not comparable!

The four jumped, but the sword was like a demon that did not change its focus. It continued to aim at the Underworld Saber they were holding as it pierced forward nonstop! The sword's aura was like a crashing wave!

Naturally, they were unable to avoid it. With eyes closed, Underworld Saber was lifted to block the sword in a hasty moment. Clank. When sword and saber came into contact, sparks flew everywhere! And the sword that looked like light of the swordsman was finally somewhat slowed down by the saber.

That Revered level master felt cold sweat on his body as his legs practically buckled under him!

It was lucky that Underworld Saber blocked the attack. Thinking about the moment just passed when the sword attacked like a lightning bolt, he felt as if his soul had left his body. A feeling of death filled his heart.

Right after, the sword was pulled back in a flash…

This Revered level master completely lost all sense of integrity as he turned and ran. It was because he knew that after the sword got pulled back, it could once again stab forward!

Earlier, all four people could not block it! Next time, it would just be him. So he turned and ran. He cursed internally: Motherf*, you are already a swordsman. Why do you bother with taking Underworld Saber? Even if you get it… can you even use it?

This is really annoying. I have never heard of a swordsman trying to snatch a saber. You should be killing the guy carrying Ask the Heavens Sword.

But this swordsman leisurely chased him instead.

He could feel the thick sword aura behind him. His back felt as if

there were countless poisonous snakes crawling up and down causing his nape hair to stand on ends.

“You want to run? Leave the saber! Otherwise, you can leave your life!”

In his moment of being distraught, another powerful sword aura locked on him from the front! It was icy like it belonged to the heavens! The sword aura unexpectedly filled the air like white snow!

An atmosphere of deep iciness!

Surprisingly, it was yet another swordsman!

There was a blockade in the front and pursuer in the back; they were both asking for his life! The Revered level master was running like mad when his spirit flew right out of him; tears covered his face.

How could he be greeted by two swordsmen at the same time?

Even a King level master would be anxious. I... I... I am only a Revered level master. How can I be worthy of such a treatment? You two think too highly of me...

Two swordsmen fighting for one saber? The implausible aspect of this did not escape this Revered level master. But at this moment, he did not have time to be annoyed.

Right now, he only had one thought. He hastily tossed the hot potato that was this Underworld Saber!

Underworld Saber was incredible. It could make people into Saber Saints... But... If a person lost his life... what would he advance with?

“You can have Underworld Saber...” This Revered level master howled with great urgency. He was completely certain that if he said this a little slower there would be two more holes on his body.

Before he was done speaking, Underworld Saber was already

tossed out from his hand!

Masters, the saber is yours; I can’t give you my life, too. This Revered level master closed his eyes in prayer. Currently, he could only hope that his opponents have mercy on him.

However, right after, an utterly unexpected thing happened!

Chapter 264: Envy and hatred

The swordsmen's appearance left everyone speechless. The ownership of the saber was no longer in question. But... this saber was flying through the air, and these two swordsmen did surprisingly did not dare to jump and catch it. They stood in a struggle.

There was a great sense of guardedness as they stood like that. This kind of stance, this kind of mortal enemy's gaze... Sword auras gushed from the bodies of these two people and struggled all around. They made this wintry weather even more icy and cold...

These two are struggling against each other? They are guarding against one another?

So they are not on the same side.

At this moment, the four Revered level masters were filled with regrets. If we had known that these two were not on the same side, we... we could have joined together and attack one then attack the other... The precious saber was already in our possession, be we tossed it...

The saber continued to fly through the air. How lucky was it that it fell right over Ji Mo's head...

The injured "original" owner of Underworld Saber screamed with glee. He jumped up and grabbed the Underworld Saber. Laughing loudly, he said, "You two fools, thank you. Hahaha..."

Turning his body in the air as quick as a swallow, he flew into the darkness of the night. Everyone spat and ridiculed, "You deserve it! He was not wrong! You two are fools. Hmm, calling you fools is an insult to fools..."

It is clearly a fight for a saber; what are you two swordsmen doing here?

Now it's over, and no one could get it. You two got it flying, but

turned against one another…

However, no one dared to provoke these two. Afterward, these two people actually followed behind everyone else in their chase.

Everyone wanted to cry. You are still coming with us. We're so f*ed…

Ji Mo ran. He was so annoyed and envious he wanted to die. With the fires of jealousy burning in his heart, tears ran down his cheeks!

Swordsman! F*! Gu Du Xing is now a swordsman!

Gu Du Xing was at the same level as me, but now he is a swordsman! A Revered level swordsman!

Chu Yang is now also a swordsman!

Ji Mo wanted to find some deserted place and cry his heart out. What kind of difference is this? It is that of rivers and seas… Heaven is too unfair…

Taking a few turns to shake off his pursuers, Ji Mo joined up with Rui Bu Tong only to discover that Rui Bu Tong was looking exhausted. After seeing Ji Mo's face, Rui Bu Tong showed a look of comfort from seeing someone else faring worse.

Hmm, I was not equal to Gu Du Xing to start with. So what's it to me if he is better than me now? This punk, Ji Mo. He is the pitiful one. Haha. Poor kid. He was at the same level as with Gu Du Xing; now, he is left in the dust.

Thinking about this, not only was Rui Bu Tong rid of all his discomforts, he was even feeling elated. Ji Mo's face looked like it was kicked by an ass eighty-eight times. Rui Bu Tong laughed out loud; his first words were surprisingly, "Hey, third elder brother, second elder brother is a swordsman already, wow… He even broke through Revered Sword Artist. Haha… This is such good fortune; the two of us must celebrate when we get back…"

Ji Mo ground his teeth. His face was twitching as he said, “Shut up!”

“I really envy…” Rui Bu Tong folded his arms in front of his chest as he looked up. It was as if he was being extremely wishful. Then he suddenly had a look of realization, “Third elder brother Ji Mo, I just remember that you were as famous as second elder brother in Middle Three Heavens. You two were equally matched…”

Ji Mo panted as his eyes emitted cannibalistic desire.

Rui Bu Tong was extremely happy as he continued to fuel the fire recklessly, “Hey hey, aren’t you an eighth grade Martial Great Master right now? Oh oh, you have advanced really quickly. I am so jealous of you… Hahaha…”

Rui Bu Tong’s level of schadenfreude had reached its pinnacle. He laughed shamelessly.

Ji Mo ground his teeth and suddenly smiled, “Sixth brother!”

“…” Rui Bu Tong hastily backed up and said, “Huh?… I didn’t say anything.”

“How is it not anything?” Ji Mo affectionately wrapped his arm around Rui Bu Tong’s neck as the two walked side by side, “You are right. Us two brother must drink tonight. To celebrate… Hahaha… It’s strange, what’s worth celebrating is not second elder brother’s breakthrough, but… your cultivation level is still two grades less than mine. This really makes a person feel happy!”

Ji Mo smiled happily, “Sixth brother, sixth, don’t you agree?”

Rui Bu Tong let out an empty laugh as he forcefully said, “Third elder brother is magnanimous…”

“Hah… Let’s go. We must celebrate big tonight. Really big…” Ji Mo tightened his grip.

Rui Bu Tong suddenly felt that even his shoulders could not move. Half of his body instantly became numb. His smiling face

looked like that of someone's whose father just died. He thought bitterly: I am going to suffer either way; I might as well enjoy myself for a while.

"Third elder brother, haha, if that is the case, this little brother will not turn this down even if it means a million deaths. Let's go out and enjoy ourselves. Second elder broke through after all. Don't you agree? I know you must not be feeling too good right now, right? I also know that you are disappointed, sad and dejected. You cannot catch up such a great distance even on horseback. Ahh, I really am sorry… Third elder brother… just let it out; I can handle it!" Rui Bu Tong said pitifully. But before he was done speaking, his voice had turned into a moan.

Gritting his teeth, Ji Mo spoke word by word, "Good! Good! Since you have such a mindset. I would wrong you if I don't enjoy myself…"

They went away at the speed of flight.

The moment the two of them disappeared, a person in blue appeared from the darkness. Watching the silhouette of the two, this person could not help but sweat. His whole body convulsed…

"Mother!" The person in blue quietly groaned, "These two punks… they are not gay are they… Their conversation gave me goosebumps…"

Then he lifted his sleeves and scratched, "This is too creepy."

Being able to make an emperor level master get goosebumps, if Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong knew this, they would definitely feel great pride.

But other people could not be blamed for misunderstanding them. These two spoke too as they please… what enjoyment, entertainment, letting it out…

"I have to find that other punk. If there is a chance that those two punks are gay… Huh!" The person in blue muttered, "In any case,

it's rather strange. Wasn't that little bastard a Master level? How could he break through Great level so quickly like that? And even a swordsman? I have never seen such fast speed. Even if he had pure purple jade essence since he was a child, it's still not possible…"

"Did I miss something?" The person in blue thought as he flew through the air, "Continent Center Citadel is thrown into such chaos. Hopefully, the little bastard didn't get killed…"

After turning a corner, Ji Mo finally released Rui Bu Tong, "My god. Did you feel that?"

"Nonsense! You can't doubt my sixth sense!" Rui Bu Tong cried out as if he was insulted. Then he cautiously turned and looked back, still feeling fearful.

"It was definitely not an illusion!" Ji Mo wiped his cold sweat, "Motherf*, that was too horrible! I feel as if I just fell into a mass grave. Such pressure, while my Ji clan is big, there is no one with such a powerful aura…"

"I really don't know if that martial expert needs any sort of heavenly weapons. He followed the two of us all of a sudden… Motherf*, I thought we were exposed…" Rui Bu Tong clicked his tongue.

The two of them were famous for their super sixth sense. The person in blue did not show himself nor did he expose his aura, but the two instinctively sensed him.

It was the kind of feeling an ordinary person would get if he was to walk across a mass grave during a starless and moonless night…

This kind of sense was not one that an ordinary martial artist would have. A person with this ability, if given the chance to develop, would definitely be a powerful figure!

If this kind of sense was possessed by a scholar, he would be an official of great fortune. If it was possessed by a general, he would be able to win wars and turn failure into victory. If it was possessed

by a martial artist, he would become an overlord for a generation!

The sixth sense!

“Mm, third elder brother, you know that I said those things because of that mysterious person and not to attack you...” Rui Bu Tong smiled sweetly.

“Hmm, I know you did not mean to attack me. But I still feel uncomfortable after hearing them. And if I am uncomfortable, then you will be especially uncomfortable. Let’s go. I will treat you well.” Ji Mo smiled devilishly, “I really have to commend your smart mouth...”

“Ah? No!” Rui Bu Tong cried out.

This night was definitely a blood-soaked night for Continent Center!

At dawn, all of the jail cells in Continent Center were filled to the brim! And even a temporarily vacated barrack was turned into a holding area with many prisoners in it. But the number of Jiang Hu people in Continent Center Citadel only increased.

The Prime Minister’s manor...

Diwu Qing Rou was wearing a soft fur coat as he was using a small pair of scissors to trim a delicate potted plant on his desk. His movement was gentle and slow. His countenance looked peaceful and easy. His gaze was as calm as water.

The emotional moment of yesterday was already gone.

Han Bu Chu and Jing Meng Hun hastily walked in.

“What is it? What is the rush?” Diwu Qing Rou said casually. He remained engrossed in the potted plant and did not even bother to glance at them. It was as if all of his thoughts were not directed at this plant.

Gao Sheng was going to speak but Han Bu Chu gently tugged his sleeve.

Diwu Qing Rou treated everyone as if they were just thin air and continued to prune the plant. Surprisingly, he even admired it for a while after he was done pruning. At this time, he pick up a white silk cloth and wrapped up all of the cuttings. Then he leisurely washed his hands. Almost an hour had passed.

Finally, he sat down and said, “You are all in a rush. Did something big happen?”

Chapter 265: Emperors of two nations

Did something big happen? Sir, these are your words? You surprised us... Everyone turned and looked at each other. Last night, all of Continent Center was turned upside-down under earth-shattering activities. Even until now, the entire atmosphere of Continent Center still had the smell of blood... Perhaps, in your Prime Minister manor, you did not know about anything...

We will never believe this.

Although the three people thought this way, seeing Diwu Qing Rou's calm demeanor, they unconsciously became assured. It was as if any great matter was not worth paying any mind to at all...

The anxiousness that they came in with disappeared without them noticing.

"Something big happened!" Jing Meng Hun said, "Last night, more than twenty thousand Jiang Hu people fought for Underworld Saber and Ask the Heavens Sword. Large-scale fights broke out at many places in the citadel. In fact, the Ministry of Justice, the Ministry of Revenue, the Ministry of Rites and the Ministry of Defense were all turned into ruins. Countless officials and soldiers were injured. We are still in the process of tallying everything."

"Oh..." Diwu Qing Rou nodded softly, "Just these things?"

Just these things? The three did not know what else to say. Was that still not enough?

Jing Meng Hun was especially annoyed. During last night's chaos, Diwu Qing Rou gave strict orders for Golden Horse Riders Department not to get involved. That led to Continent Center being in this state of chaos.

If Golden Horse Riders Department had moved in, the chaos would have definitely not reached this level.

“This scheme of King of Hell Chu is really sinister!” Han Bu Chu said worriedly, “And, seeing the way things are, he succeeded. He has successfully caused great chaos in Continent Center. From what we see, the citadel has turned into a battlefield, and the number of outsiders continues to increase. Continent Center Citadel will become oversaturated soon. The killing has grown fiercer and fiercer. Currently, there are a few hundred people killing each other each day. Many Jiang Hu people even dared to attack the army…”

“The common people are in panic. If it continues like this, will things be okay?”

“Hmm…” Diwu Qing Rou looked up thoughtfully and said, “Gao Sheng, how is that young master Ji?”

“He knows King of Hell Chu. Plus, they are good friends. He did not hide these things.” Gao Sheng frowned, “He refused to divulge any information, but he said that he would return to the Ji clan after the people of the clan come to Continent Center…”

“Ah, he is indeed cautious…” Diwu Qing Rou sighed and nodded his head, “Such a descendant of a great clan and a second young master as well, it seems that he is definitely not ordinary. In any case… did you make our position clear?”

“I did. But Ji Mo did not seem to be too concerned about it.” Gao Sheng said, “His reaction was very nonchalant.”

“Hmm, send a martial expert to shadow Ji Mo…” Diwu Qing Rou said solemnly, “What about that Rui Bu Tong? Is there anything suspicious about him?”

“As for that Rui Bu Tong, he is the successor of Stealing God and Thieving Ghost…” Gao Sheng said cautiously, “This person’s background is not ordinary. His two masters have ninth grade King cultivation level. If we touch him, the consequences would be dire. And he… does not abide by the rules of Nine Heavens…”

“As long as their identities are verified properly, this little Rui Bu Tong... we need not to worry about.” Diwu Qing Rou laughed softly and said, “Last night, the soldiers stationed outside of the citadel were not mobilized, right?”

“No.” Han Bu Chu said solemnly, “Prime Minister, we must mobilize the soldiers stationed outside of the citadel. Just the strength of the guards inside the citadel alone... is probably too weak.”

“No need.” Diwu Qing Rou waved his arm and said flatly, “Let them cause trouble! The more the better! It would be best if this attracts all of the Jiang Hu people within a thousand mile radius of Great Zhao.”

“Huh?!” Han Bu Chu was absolutely surprised by what Diwu Qing Rou said.

“Prime Minister, if this chaos is allowed to continue, I am afraid... Continent Center Citadel would...” Han Bu Chu took in a deep breath and said hastily.

“Bu Chu, you are still stuck with mindset of an ancient dynasty and placing too much importance on a citadel.” Diwu Qing Rou said softly, “You must set your sight further.”

“Further?” Han Bu Chu was a little puzzled. He had followed Diwu Qing Rou for many years; this was the first time that he felt like he was not able to follow the Prime Minister’s thoughts.

Continent Center was the capital of Great Zhao; it was so important. Could it be that it was not important at all in Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes?

“Continent Center is Great Zhao’s capital. It is in the heart of Great Zhao and is heavily guarded in all directions! The closest enemies have to travel more than six thousand miles to get here! Saying that it is impregnable is an understatement!” Diwu Qing Rou smiled lightly, “However, in my opinion, this is a joke! A joke

to be spurned by the rest of the world!”

“A joke?” Han Bu Chu frowned pensively as he thought about these words. Not only him, even Gao Sheng and Jing Meng Hun could not help but wonder.

“Building the capital in a place that is protected from all sides is making a nest for cowards!” Diwu Qing Rou said in a low voice, “While the capital should not be built at the battlefront, it should not be built at in a cradle. It should be set at an appropriate distance so that there is enough of a sense of crisis for all officials and generals to put all of their efforts to taking care of national issues and protect the emperor! Plus, they would make every effort to expand the nation and eliminate all threats! This is the way to make a prosperous nation!”

“Back then, while the first emperor of Great Zhao was ingenious, after gaining the nation, he only wanted to enjoy himself and keep what he had. So he placed the capital at Continent Center. The fact that such an emperor could have found a nation is truly a miracle! And in the years after, this kind of mentality that they have has set Great Zhao back by hundreds of years! What was majestic has quietly become a mentality to keep what they have. It affected the history of the nation and delayed the domination of Great Zhao!”

“Even if it is a promising emperor, staying thousands of miles away from the battlefront like this, he would only see and hear peace... How could he cultivate the ambition to advance his domination?”

Diwu Qing Rou showed a trace of a taunting smile, “Thus, it was not until I, Diwu Qing Wu, came along that Great Zhao begins to expand! Before this, it was not that they could not expand, but that they did not want to. I am certain that, without me, all of Great Zhao would collapse in complacency one day!”

“Great Zhao’s biggest threat is Iron Cloud!” Diwu Qing Rou walked to the window and looked toward the north as he said

slowly, “You see, when Iron Cloud has snowy and icy weather, you can wear three fur coats and still feel chilly when you walk outside. But here, we can just wear one jacket and make it through winter. Going another thousand miles south of Continent center, it is spring year-round! Such a great regional difference, do you not see something from this?”

“What?” Han Bu Chu unconsciously asked.

“Harsh places give birth to tough people! Difficult regions produce militant societies! Plus, Iron Cloud is a grassland close to the north. Young men of Iron Cloud set their sights far and are more connected with the land. What great ambitions they have. If they continue like so, how can they not turn to the ways of martial arts?” Diwu Qing Rou said, “For thousands of years the northern people have always been seen as being sturdy. Plus, chaos has also always originated from the north.”

“Compared to Iron Cloud, the people of Great Zhao are too weak.” Diwu Qing Rou said casually, “This must change!”

Han Bu Chu remained quiet as he carefully thought about what Diwu Qing Rou said. There seemed to be some truths filled with some other hidden meaning...

“Looking at Iron Cloud, you only see a nation suppressed by Great Zhao right now. But you are all wrong. How many years has Iron Cloud been established?” Diwu Qing Rou said lightly, “Three hundred years ago, Iron Cloud was only a big clan. However, after many years of expansion, the clan’s private army grew to the point that they became ambitious. Thus,... more than two hundred years ago, Iron Cloud Nation was founded! At that time, it was just a small nation with over a dozen cities.”

“One hundred thirty years ago, Iron Cloud had a much bigger territory with almost one hundred cities!”

“Eighty years ago, Iron Cloud’s territory expanded with a military numbering at one million...” Diwu Qing Rou sighed

deeply, “Forty years ago, Tie Shi Cheng swept the land and directly turned Iron Cloud into a giant behemoth. Even people of the vast grassland above did not dare to invade Iron Cloud.”

“And Tie Shi Cheng was still not satisfied. He sent a million soldiers to the south and fought with Great Zhao!” Diwu Qing Rou took a deep breath, “Even now, Iron Cloud might have fallen into my deadly trap, but the new emperor of Iron Cloud is an unexpectedly talented person!”

“In more than two hundred years, Iron Cloud had went through seven or eight emperors. However, Iron Cloud’s territory had grown, from more than two hundred years ago until now, thousands of times more than what it was when the nation was founded.”

Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “Don’t you people feel pressured when facing such numbers? Don’t your feel fearful?”

“What does this mean? Could you have never considered this?” Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes showed a weariness.

“Perhaps… all of these emperors of Iron Cloud were all founding type of emperors?” Han Bu Chu finally understood. He carefully thought and got an answer that even surprised himself.

“More than ten emperors, and more than ten of them unrivaled in distinction!” Diwu Qing Rou’s gaze lowered, “They were also all leaders with great ambitions!”

“You all should think a little about Great Zhao’s empire. During the past some two hundred years, there have been more than twenty emperors!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “How were they compared to Iron Cloud?”

Han Bu Bu lowered his head shamefully. He was unable to speak. After the founding emperor passed, there were some emperors that took care of national matters and made Great Zhao prosperous. But there were no other movements after that. Essentially, they all

made it their goals to just keep what their ancestors left behind.

However, just conserving was actually moving backward.

In the recent years, there were truly not many good emperors. The whole bunch was ordinary, and did not have anything that was considered outstanding.

Compared to the emperors of Iron Cloud, the emperors of Great Zhao were really lame.

“Such emperors are not worthy of being emperors!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed deeply. Such extreme words might have come out of his mouth, but Han Bu Chu and company felt that they were sincere.

They were indeed not worthy!

If Diwu Qing Rou said they were not worthy, then they were definitely not worthy!

Chapter 266: Diwu Qing Rou's big opportunity

"In the fight for domination, not advancing means backing up! Not becoming the overlord means becoming a pile of bones!" Diwu Qing Rou said.

"It is true that, during these years, Great Zhao has not lost any territory. But it did not gain any either. During that same time, the enemies advanced every year. Before, they did not dare to touch Great Zhao because Great Zhao was a gigantic beast to them. They were not able to fight it so they did not dare to. But over ten years ago, Tie Shi Cheng fearlessly mobilized his troops and broke this ironclad law!"

"That Great Zhao was falling." Diwu Qing Rou's eyes flashed with a conflicting look, "At the time, I had just come into power. I immediately hatched a dark scheme to assassinate Tie Shi Cheng! Surprisingly, both the officials and military leaders in the court joined together against me. They said I lacked intelligence... Haha..."

"After that, I started a policy to kill all of the blacksmiths of Iron Cloud. They immediately used their words as weapons and called me a cruel person!" Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said, "But have they ever thought... This was war! War is brutal. That year, if I did not assassinate Tie Shi Cheng, Iron Cloud would continue to prosper. And then, even I cannot deal with the brothers Tie Shi Cheng and Tie Long Cheng together..."

"That year, if I did not have thousands of blacksmiths killed, the number of soldiers that would fall under Iron Cloud's vanguard would be at least a million more..." Diwu Qing Rou let out a sigh, "Each of those incidents was inhumane; how could I, Diwu Qing Rou, not know this? But are the soldiers in Great Zhao's military not nurtured by fathers and mothers?"

“If I did not hatch a plan to kill Tie Shi Cheng, the heavenly talent, Tie Bu Tian, would grow up to join forces with his father. With his uncle’s support, he will become a dominating ruler! Then Great Zhao would be finished!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed, “I, Diwu Qing Rou, could not avoid doing this, even if I have to be scorned for all time. Great Zhao has a billion subjects!”

“Accusations can easily be made!” Han Bu Chu said, “You do not need to pay any mind to those backward scholars, Prime Minister. You are talented and wise. You maintained the vast territory of Great Zhao with the strength of just one person. Such great achievements are seen by the world. The later generations can judge for themselves!”

“Judgement of later generations... Hahaha!” Diwu Qing Rou laughed softly, “What does the judgment of later generations have to do with me? Do I, Diwu Qing Rou, need the judgments of the later generations? Even if they look down on me, then what?”

He slowly took a few leisurely steps. Finally, he paused and said slowly, “Continent Center is in chaos, but we can rebuild it again. If the capital is no more, we can leave it. However, if the people’s hearts are in chaos, it is over. Even gods would be helpless.”

“You are right, Prime Minister.” Han Bu Chu said with complete conviction.

“There is one thing, Bu Chu. You only see the sinister side of King of Hell Chu’s scheme. You cannot see the big opportunity hidden in it!”

“For King of Hell Chu, this is of course a successful scheme. For us, however, it might be a big opportunity!” Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes flashed sharply as he said each word, “We must grab tightly onto this opportunity. King of Hell Chu must be very proud right now, but he will greatly regret it later!”

“Big opportunity?” Han Bu Chu was stupefied.

Right now, it looked like all harm and not one good thing. Where was this big opportunity?

“Almost all of Great Zhao’s spies were gathered in Iron Cloud; there were tens of thousands of them in Iron Cloud. In Iron Cloud Citadel alone, there were thousands.” Diwu Qing Rou said, “The first time King of Hell Chu made his move, he only killed a few hundred people. It could be said that the greater part of the network was still safe. However, we made our move, and King of Hell Chu followed that momentum and killed all of them. This paralyzed our spy network in Iron Cloud.”

“When his enemies remained quiet, he made his move and used all tactics to force his enemies to move. The moment his enemies stirred, he used that momentum to turn over fate! This was King of Hell Chu’s strategy.” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly, “This move of King of Hell Chu to strike at inaction, I am still studying and learning.”

“Studying and learning…” Even Gao Sheng’s eyes showed a look of respect.

Who was Diwu Qing Rou? Diwu Qing Rou was an ultimate statesman and a conniving military strategist! It could be said that in all of Nine Heavens, Diwu Qing Rou was the ideal person to learn from. Who would dare say that there was anyone in this world worthy enough for Diwu Qing Rou to learn from?

However, today, in front of his subordinates, Diwu Qing Rou said that he was learning from his enemy, King of Hell Chu! How tolerant, magnanimous, and generous it was for Diwu Qing Rou to say something like this given his position?

By saying so, not only did it not damage his prestige, it actually put everyone in awe!

“I might not be able to learn King of Hell Chu’s skill, but I can learn his technique.” Diwu Qing Rou sighed slightly, “There are many things that might give the most gain. But some methods can

only be done by King of Hell Chu, and not by me."

Han Bu Chu nodded sympathetically.

In saying these words, Diwu Qing Rou had directly pointed out the fundamental differences between him and King of Hell Chu.

They were age, experience and status. There were some things King of Hell Chu could do with his thick skin, but Diwu Qing Rou could not. At least not up front.

However, King of Hell Chu could do them in the light of day and the dark of night.

It was because he was young, and he was being suppressed by a great giant like Diwu Qing Rou. No matter what, he only needed to want to do so. There was no need to pay attention to tactics. He only needed to defeat Diwu Qing Rou once and people would praise him!

But if Diwu Qing Rou failed once, countless people would add insult to his injuries.

Currently, if Diwu Qing Rou could not push himself up, Great Zhao would also be destroyed.

The starting point of these two people were different!

"The opportunity you talked about, Prime Minister?" Han Bu Chu said respectfully.

"The opportunity is the chaos caused by King of Hell Chu. King of Hell Chu can use our offensive to get rid of our people. We can also use his offensive to increase our strength!" Diwu Qing Rou said casually.

"Increase our strength?" Han Bu Chu's eyes lit up, suddenly somewhat understanding Diwu Qing Rou's meaning.

"That's right. This time, King of Hell Chu uses a saber and sword to cause unrest and loss for our Great Zhao. But he only does what I have been unable to do." Diwu Qing Rou's gaze became as sharp

as that of a falcon as he slowly said, “It is getting the Jiang Hu people of the world to gather here!”

“So that’s it.” Han Bu Chu sighed softly.

“When we created Golden Horse Riders Department, few people knew about it. Plus, there were many who claimed to be beyond the fight for fame and power of this world and refused our invitations. These people were dispersed everywhere. If these people wants to avoid us, we would not have enough time to convince them even if we were to find them.”

“Later, it was under the efforts of the four King level leaders that Golden Horse Riders Department finally formed. Plus, it grew more powerful over time. Our invitations became more valued by the Jiang Hu people than before. But it is undeniable that there is an extremely terrifying force within Jiang Hu!”

“In certain situations, the fighting force that could be manifested by the Jiang Hu people would be incomparable even by the military!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “If I could incorporate this force, it would definitely be the biggest boost!”

“Therefore, we should not fear them! Just fear that they won’t come! Let them cause chaos! The bigger, the better!” Diwu Qing Rou said, “Tell Qiu Feng Yang to arrest people whenever he has a chance. The garrison outside of the citadel shall not be mobilized!”

“With Underworld Saber and Ask the Heavens Sword here, most of them will have desires. The ones without desires are most terrifying. As long as there are desires, there is nothing to fear. Once they are here, they will definitely fight. Fighting and killing in Continent Center Citadel is a violation of the nation’s laws! We can do this justifiably without worrying about problems!”

Diwu Qign Rou smiled and said, “As the fight progresses, more martial experts will appear. There will naturally not just be one or two. Lose-lose situations will happen everywhere. At that time, King level leader Jing must follow this carefully, and catch anyone

that can be caught. Welcome those that can be welcomed. This time, if everything goes smoothly, Golden Horse Riders Department can easily gain ten thousand people."

"Since King of Hell Chu wants to cause trouble, not only we won't stop him, we will even cooperate with him fully!" Diwu Qing Rou said casually, "This force is exactly what I want. And what King of Hell Chu wants is time. It would be best if we could kill King of Hell Chu, but if this can't be done, it does not mean we can't play with him."

"All the people captured have to be carefully guarded. Wait until this storm passes, anyone who is willing to work for us will be handed over to King level leader Jing and the Golden Horse Riders Department for processing. Those who are not will be killed!" Diwu Qing Rou said determinately and smiled, "If King of Hell Chu is giving us this big opportunity, and we can even borrow hatred to deal with him and Iron Cloud, why not?"

Han Bu Chu and company immediately realized.

Gathering strength was a tactic. When this ends, they would let everyone know that this was King of Hell Chu's ploy to make them all foolish bait. That way, even if they did not want to help the royal court, they would not be able to take such humiliation and join in Golden Horse Riders Department's fight.

Not joining meant death for the legitimate reason of violating the laws of the nation. Joining would mean being valued and a chance for vengeance... Even an idiot would know what choice to make.

At this point, Diwu Qing Rou had taken into consideration psychological factors, human reaction, hatred... As long as nothing unexpected happened, it would be over by the time King of Hell Chu thought he was successful!

Golden Horse Riders Department would have more than ten thousand more people, and they would be Martial Masters or stronger.

Such a force, after some training, would become fearsome on the battlefield. They would be the defining factor for the outcome of the war!

King of Hell Chu came to cause trouble, but he could not shake the foundation of Great Zhao. However, after Diwu Qing Rou gather up this massive force, he would be able to destroy Iron Cloud.

The pros and cons were clear in everyone's eyes.

Everyone discussed for a while and left with their respective duties. Diwu Qing Rou sat in his study and frowned in thoughts. He was trying hard to think of any possible flaws.

King of Hell Chu... could he have realized this?

If he realized this... what could he do?

Even if Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber are to disappear immediately, people are already here. Fate is sealed!

Diwu Qing Rou thought at once and finally felt assured.

That very afternoon, among the trainers of the great clans of Middle Three Heavens, three clans entered Continent Center Citadel. One of them was the Mo clan that Chu Yang had long awaited for.

Mo Tian Yun had arrived!

Chapter 267: I was wrong about this

For three continuous days, Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber appeared for three consecutive nights. And within those three consecutive nights, all of Continent Center Citadel had turned into a pig slurry. More than half of the government offices were destroyed...

However, besides arresting people, Diwu Qing Rou arrested people nonstop and did not bother with anything else.

All those captured people were secretly brought to Golden Horse Riders Department's secret headquarters; then they continued arresting...

Currently, any signs of the Middle Three Heavens clans joining in the fight still did not appeared as Chu Yang had hoped.

Chu Yang had a nagging feeling that something was not right. His thought was preoccupied for days; it was not until the afternoon of the third day that he suddenly recovered.

"Oh no!" King of Hell Chu slapped his thigh. His eyes flashed with alertness.

"What's wrong?" Gu Du Xing held Black Dragon Sword in his hand and did not bother to look up.

"By doing this, we are, of course, causing chaos. But... it is possible that we are giving Diwu Qing Rou a big hand!" Chu Yang laughed bitterly, "The forces of Jiang Hu! The forces of Jiang Hu!"

"You mean... Diwu Qing Rou is also adding fuel to the fire?" Gu Du Xing suddenly looked up in disbelief.

"This is certain." Chu Yang sighed. Then he took a deep breath to quickly calm his mind. At this moment, any hastiness would mean certain death. Even if he could not calm himself down, he must.

"This old fox is an old fox after all. I have made a big mistake

with this.” Chu Yang felt his blood boiling so he started to break things down to himself.

He broke down the reasons for his mistake, the quickest way to regain his clarity, and the quickest method to find an escape route. While he was still unsure, he hoped that this analysis would help him find a way out.

“You made a big mistake?” Gu Du Xing frowned, “Our plan has no issues at all. Plus, this is also the best way to cause chaos for our opponent. Our chaos caused by Jiang Hu can be the greatest trouble for the royal court. And we can continue the rest of our plans from there. There is absolutely no problem in our plan. Why...”

“Jiang Hu! The forces of Jiang Hu have always been the greatest headache for the royal court; they are also the cause of the chaos. In the years past, the two sides have always opposed each other.” Chu Yang slowly organized his thoughts, “The forces of Jiang Hu are all around; the royal court could only enforce a peace, but they could never destroy these forces or recruit them.”

“But I have given Diwu Qing Rou such an opportunity.”

At this time, Chu Yang remembered something Tie Bu Tian once said: Jiang Hu was the predecessor of the royal court. After a certain level growth, there would be a fight for power. After which the form would quickly change into that of a royal court.

The people of Jiang Hu had always looked down on scholars. However, after they hold power, their first target for elimination would be Jiang Hu people, and the first people they would promote are scholars.

These were what Tie Bu Tian said the first time he met with Chu Yang.

King of Hell Chu currently felt true regrets. He realized that his greatest mistake was not discussing this mission with Tie Bu Tian.

Given Tie Bu Tian's exceptional political mind, he would have definitely seen through the flaws in this plan.

But at the time, he and Tie Bu Tian had run into an impasse that led him to make the decision on his own.

Thinking about this, Chu Yang was a bit upset.

Raised up by Xiao He, and casted down by Xiao He. This saying was perfectly played out in this situation. To block Diwu Qing Rou's plan, Chu Yang caused Du Shi Qing to disappear four months early. That upset Diwu Qing Rou's plans. It gave Iron Cloud a chance to catch its breath and gave his time to make this trip Continent Center and delay the war.

It was also because of this that Tie Bu Tian became unhappy with him. While he still trusted Chu Yang as before, that knot in their relationship could not be undone. It had led to this operation being done without Tie Bu Tian's consultation.

Even though he had two lifetimes of experience, he still did not understand much when it came to politics.

There was another thing. Tie Bu Tian's had all his trust in Chu Yang! No matter what he did, even now, Tie Bu Tian was only supportive! Even this trip to Great Zhao, Tie Bu Tian trusted completely and had no doubt.

But this trust was erroneous; it had created an extremely big mistake.

Thinking about this left Chu Yang feeling uncomfortable.

Chu Yang, you are not capable of doing all things! In term of Jiang Hu, you are no match for Mo Tian Ji. In term of politics, you are far below Diwu Qing Rou. If you continue this way, only failure will await you!

Chu Yang silently told himself.

Then he stood up and slowly paced around the room. He quietly

muttered to himself, “...If there is a next life, I will dance with you under the heavens!” Mo Qing Wu. Right now only Mo Qing Wu could be Chu Yang’s strength! She was also the best remedy to force him to calm down!

If I lose, even if there is a next life, I will not have the chance to dance with you under the heavens!

Gu Du Xing heard Chu Yang mutter something, but did not hear it clearly. He was on the verge of asking when Chu Yang suddenly turned around and said solemnly, “I was wrong about this!”

These words seemed as if they were ripped out from Chu Yang’s heart.

After saying them, Chu Yang immediately felt relaxed! Yes, relaxed!

Powerful people in history were able to recognize the flaws and weaknesses of their enemies and used them to their advantage. However, how many were able to see through their own mistakes?

Not being able to see one’s mistake caused countless heroes to sink like stones and die in bitterness!

By saying these words, perhaps even Chu Yang did not know, he was able to conquer the great demon that everyone in the world had!

He faced his own weakness, his own shortcomings, and admitted failure!

“Diwu Qing Rou’s Great Zhao has many Jiang Hu people. And Great Zhao remains in a state of peacefulness so the rift between officials and Jiang Hu is large and irreconcilable.” Chu Yang smiled and murmured, “Therefore, Great Zhao’s Jiang Hu is Diwu Qing Rou’s biggest headache.”

“What you mean is... Because in the recent years, Iron Cloud was always on the losing side so Jiang Hu people remains on the same side and would smooth things over even if there were conflicts?

And the odd one out was Great Zhao?" Gu Du Xing was also an intelligent person; he immediately understood the implications.

"Yes."

"So, this time, Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber are essentially gathering the forces of Great Zhao's Jiang Hu to Continent Center for Diwu Qing Rou to grab them all in one swoop?" Gu Du Xing frowned.

"Exactly." Chu Yang said slowly, "If I were Diwu Qing Rou, I would use this chance for the Jiang Hu people to compete and fight with each other and just wait for my chance. I would catch and lock up anyone I can. After everything is over, that would be the time to get these people to my side. Even if I can only get a fraction of the people, that would still be a massive force."

"Plus, after this incident, Great Zhao's Jiang Hu would need a long period of time to rise up again. Although Diwu Qing Rou has to suffer through this chaos once, he is able to eliminate a lingering problem."

"The chaos has gone on for three days." Chu Yang said softly, "Of course Continent Center is currently suffering. But the number of people Diwu Qing Rou managed to capture is already more than six thousand! The devastation in Continent Center can easily be fixed with money and ordinary manpower. They just have to do a little renovation. On the other hand, Diwu Qing Rou has taken this chance to amass his strength which he could use in the long run to deal a blow against us!"

"Therefore, this matter buys Iron Cloud sixth months or one year of time. But, essentially, Diwu Qing Rou is the one to benefit from it!" Chu Yang said coldly, "And the chaos is done, but Diwu Qing Rou can continue to reap in the benefits."

"Once Diwu Qing Rou gathers a force so powerful that we cannot handle... Diwu Qing Rou will no longer have to give a care about anything anymore."

Chu Yang laughed softly, “Diwu Qing Rou… you are something!”

Gu Du Xing became dizzy just from listening. He asked, “If that is the case, what can we do to solve this?”

“Solve…” Chu Yang stood up and a thought for a long time before saying, “We can only continue; there is no stopping… So, for the moment, we don’t have any solution. We can only try to find a chance to solve it in as time passes.”

“Diwu Qing Rou is thorough; I am no match for him in that aspect! He could unconsciously turn something bad into a good opportunity. Furthermore, he even uses a very simplistic approach to hit us at a weak spot and render us unable to fight back!”

Chu Yang sighed, “Facing this kind of opponent is truly the biggest challenge in one’s life!” Even though he was sighing, Gu Du Xing discovered that Chu Yang’s eyes were flashing with a fighting spirit!

Gu Du Xing could not help but sigh, himself, and said in admiration, “Chu Yang, do you know that you have just changed?” Gu Du Xing said frankly. The Chu Yang right now was indeed different from the Chu Yang before.

And this change happened in just a moment.

The Chu Yang of the past made people feel that everything was in the palm of his hand. That might seem powerful and bold, but it also seem a little conceited.

But the current Chu Yang was very humble.

This kind of change was a change in his fundamental mindset. It was no different from a change of the soul.

Or it could be said that the Chu Yang had finally matured! Under the powerful pressure of Diwu Qing Rou, Chu Yang finally had a breakthrough of the mind.

Therefore, Gu Du Xing was in great admiration. He knew that the

mind was a product of worldly culmination. Having a breakthrough of the mind was easier said than done. One of such breakthrough was equivalent to breaking through ten grades in martial arts!

This tremendous advancement was essentially immeasurable!

While Chu Yang was currently in the losing position, Gu Du Xing had the feeling that, with this breakthrough, Chu Yang would still turn out okay even though he was temporarily being led by Diwu Qing Rou.

“Should we inform Ji Mo and the others to stop?” Gu Du Xing asked.

“No! Continue to execute as originally planned; make no changes!” Chu Yang’s gaze was full of thoughts as he spoke, “Diwu Qing Rou has turned a bad thing into a good thing... Can we change this good thing into a bad thing again?”

“Those who come out for training from the Middle Three Heavens clans are here. According to the information I got, almost all of them went to Heaven Reaching Tower.” Chu Yang said pensively, “This is also Diwu Qing Rou’s arrangement... It is also his hidden card...”

He suddenly turned and said with gleaming eyes, “Du Xing, we will also go to Heaven Reaching Tower!”

Chapter 268: Welcoming honored guests

“This might be somewhat difficult!” Gu Du Xing said in embarrassment, “If Diwu Qing Rou has placed the clans from Middle Three Heavens there, he would, of course, control the whole thing. Given our current disguise, we cannot go in there. Unless… we reveal my true identity.”

“That will not do.” Chu Yang flatly refused, “Your appearance would rouse Diwu Qing Rou’s suspicion. Plus, your two elder brothers are just waiting for you to show up so they could kill you. And you want to reveal yourself to them?”

Gu Du Xing’s eyes widened, “Then what should we do?”

“If Jun Lu Lu could come here a little bit earlier, that would be good.” Chu Yang sighed and frowned, “Let me think.”

“I can help you two get in.” A voice suddenly sounded, “Plus, no one would ever be suspicious.”

Gu Du Xing’s body stiffened. His hand held tightly onto his sword hilt.

Chu Yang’s gaze, however, remained unchanged, “It’s you?”

“It’s me!” A muffled unhappy voice spoke, and a person in blue suddenly appeared.

His body seemed to materialize as he appeared in front of the two. He glared and gritted his teeth, “Little king of bastards, you made that trap!”

“Can you blame me for that? If you did not come to steal, how would you step into my trap?” Chu Yang rolled his eyes and said, “What is your solution? Speak quickly. Time is precious to me right now. Save the unimportant stuff for later.”

The person in blue was utterly furious. How come this punk is not the least bit surprised?

He also did not know that after Chu Yang had a breakthrough of the mind, it was as if he had reached nirvana. While the person in blue's appearance was unexpected... there was no stopping it; there was only acceptance...

So Chu Yang chose to accept that fact in a blink of an eye!

If not, what else was he supposed to do?

However, this process of change in Chu Yang's mind was a little too quick so it caused the person in blue some annoyance.

"If it were not for the fact that I admire you for having an intellectual breakthrough under such great pressure, I would ignore your silly business." The person in blue glared, "I can help you, but I have one condition."

"What condition?" Chu Yang said casually.

"When you are done with your business, you must go back with me." The person in blue thought since he could not find the pure purple jade and the people from above would not come down, he should just bring Chu Yang back to avoid running back and forth.

"No problem. As long as I am done here, I will go with you whenever you want; I can expand my horizons a little." Chu Yang smiled with a squint, "Besides, if you force me, I can't fight back. Isn't that right?"

"While you can't fight back, you could still be uncooperative. And you can lie about something or another then..." The person in blue said only half a sentence and kept the other half to himself. The latter half was: I would be miserable...

"It's a deal then!" The person in blue said happily.

"It's a deal." Chu Yang nodded, "Mm, when things are done here, I will go with you. But you must help me with this matter."

"So do you have the pure purple jade essence pendant?" The person in blue could not help but ask.

Chu Yang looked at him with wide eyes, “What?”

The person in blue practically went berserk, “You better pray that you don’t have it! If you do, you will be really happy; really happy!” He ground his teeth as he spoke. With a swoosh, he flew out the window.

Heaven Reaching Tower was filled with guests.

While Heaven Reaching Tower was not the tallest building in Continent Center Citadel, it was the most ancient and took up the largest area! This place was not just an inn, it was also a gambling den, a brothel... In short, anything that could make quick money and was profitable, Heaven Reaching Tower had it there.

This place was no different from a massive money moving operation!

Even after the disciples of the Middle Three Heavens clans came, they only took up half of the guestrooms.

The owner of Heaven Reaching Tower was said to be a mysterious character. He never showed off his power, but the influential people of Great Zhao never dared to cause trouble at Heaven Reaching Tower.

No matter what hatred people might have, they must become honest the moment they entered Heaven Reaching Tower. Inside Heaven Reaching Tower, even the murderer of one’s father would stand there in total helplessness; one could not make any move there!

Doing so would lead to dire consequences!

There once was an eighth grade Revered Martial Artist who killed his mortal enemy at Heaven Reaching Tower. That Revered Martial Artist disappeared without a trace the very next day!

Even though he disappeared, Heaven Reaching Tower had its own way of letting Jiang Hu people know how this Revered Martial Artist was treated.

It was said that the owner of Heaven Reaching Tower condemned this Revered Martial Artist to death after he was captured. But the sentence was carried out over a period of three months! From the start to the very end of his life, there was no pause. He was killed over a period of three months!

How cruel it was! Just thinking about this was enough to give people goosebumps.

No one could imagine or would dare to imagine how this Revered Martial Artist held on for those three months. But everyone understood that this Revered Martial Artist had wanted to die on the very first day. However, death was some distant fantasy for him at that time.

It was said that the owner of Heaven Reaching Tower once said regretfully, “Ah, it’s only a Revered Martial Artist; there is not enough weight at all. If we could slowly kill a King level master, that would definitely be better.”

These words left the majority of Jiang Hu people quiet as clams!

The owner of Heaven Reaching Tower had the surname Du. His name was ordinary, even vulgar and funny. His name was Du Fa Cai! (TLN: fat wealth; fortune)

But no one dared to laugh at him.

Since Heaven Reaching Tower opened until now, this owner of Heaven Reaching Tower remained hidden inside. Everyone only knew that he came out once when Diwu Qing Rou came to Heaven Reaching Tower for the first time. This owner of Heaven Reaching Tower welcomed the famed figure by coming out and saying a few polite sentences.

It could be said that, in all of Lower Three Heavens, only Diwu Qing Rou was able to enjoy this special treatment.

So when the young masters of Middle Three Heavens all brought King level bodyguards along it was tantamount to more than a

dozen King level masters gathering at Heaven Reaching Tower. But no one dared to ask for Du Fa Cai's welcome.

But early this morning, Heaven Reaching Tower suddenly became busy!

The top floor of Heaven Reaching Tower had always been empty. Within moments, dozens of people busily went about cleaning. Even the curtains and carpets were completely changed. Everything was completely white. Even all the mattresses were replaced!

Even more unbelievable was the fact that the walls were also repainted. They all became as white as snow. More than ten martial masters went to the top and carefully used their precious energy to quickly dry the freshly painted walls.

Any furniture that could be replaced were replaced within moments.

A voice yelled out nonstop, "Quickly! Quickly! We don't have time. These honored guests like the color white. They like cleanliness... Quickly!"

"Xiao San Er, go out and keep watch. Hmm, have people watch at all three doors. Once the young masters appear, notify me immediately."

Time gradually passed and the renovation inside was completed. It was almost noon.

That person was still yelling and wiping his sweat. He said as he walked, "I will go out to the door and wait myself..."

Such a scene left the young masters of Middle Three Heavens puzzled. Everyone knew that some major character was definitely arriving soon!

Otherwise, Heaven Reaching Tower would not be in such an uproar.

“The fat guy that just came down is the owner of Heaven Reaching Tower, Du Fa Cai.” Mo Tian Yun stood next to the third floor balcony with his hands clasped as he watched with a calm and serious gaze.

Behind him was two King level masters from the Mo clan. A young master stood next to him. It was Luo Ke Wu of the Luo clan.

“Du Fa Cai has finally come out once again. I wonder who is receiving his welcome this time.” Luo Ke Wu mused, “In this world, who is capable of making Du Fa Cai that anxious?”

Nearby, a young man in blue slowly walked toward them and continued Luo Ke Wu’s thought, “Could it be Jun Xi Zhu is coming?”

“No.” The edge of Mo Tian Yun’s mouth lifted. He said with a somber gaze, “Gu Yan Yang, you are still as brainless as before. If Jun Xi Zhu was coming here, would it be so overt like this? Plus, such ostentatiousness is clearly for welcoming outsiders.”

Luo Ke Wu’s face darkened.

The Gu clan and the Mo clan were allies, and the Luo clan was their opponent. Mo Tian Yun saying that just now was clearly directed toward him. Plus, Mo Tian Yun hinted annoyance at Gu Yan Yang for interrupting him. Otherwise, he would have been able to directly mock Luo Ke Wu.

Because everyone knew, that Gu Yan Yang said what Luo Ke Wu was going to say, “Could it be that… Jun Xi Zhu is coming here?”

“We can just look and find out. What the f* are we guessing for?” Luo Ke Wu grunted, “Mo Tian Yun, you can’t guess either. What are you showing off for?”

These past few days at Heaven Reaching Tower, they could not use force so the young masters bickered with their mouths instead.

Mo Tian Yun was about to respond when it suddenly became quiet outside.

“They’re here!” Everyone had the same thought in their heads.

In front of everyone, a plop was heard at Heaven Reaching Tower’s door. A rug, white as snow, was rolled out. Such precious rug was rolled out onto muddy ground without a care. In fact, it stretched for more than a hundred feet.

As Mo Tian Yun and the rest stood quietly upstairs and watched, they immediately felt a strange aura.

At the end of the road, it suddenly became silent.

Then two figures slowly appeared around the corner. They walked toward the building as if they were strolling in an empty court. The two even comfortably chatted with each other about something. It could be seen that these two were used to this kind of scene.

These were two young men!

Two young men in clothing white as snow! There was not even a touch of dust!

Their white robes fluttered in the cold wind, but their faces looked tranquil as they leisurely walked. It was as if they were being carried there by the wind and could go away with the wind at any moment...

These two people both had slightly tall build with handsome appearances. Their eyes were bright like stars with slightly slanted sword brows. Their hair was black as ink giving them an extraordinarily elegant appearance. Both of them had a slightly thin appearance with similar heights. Walking together, they looked like a pair of striking men blown there by the wind.

Upon careful observation, the faces of these two had some resemblance. It was as if they were a pair of brothers.

Furthermore, these two also had a similar air. They were both indifferent and sharp without showing any sort of lofty attitude. However, in the eyes of these two youths was the look of a natural-

born superiority that was beyond anyone of this world!

Chapter 269: The heirs of Middle Three Heavens

The person on the left was slightly older with a sharper aura around his body. He wore a sword by his waist, but it did not look cumbersome at all. It was as if the sword was one with this young man's body. It was completely natural!

The person on the right was younger, but he was indifferent. His gaze remained casual as if he did not notice this world at all. There was an awe-inspiring air on him that did not cease to surge out.

An ancient sword scabbard hung diagonally behind his back. Only part of the sword hilt could be seen above his shoulder. And the tassel on that sword was also, surprisingly, white!

Just like that, two elegant white figures walked forward from the dirt and stepped onto the white rug without a care. Two trails of muddy footprints formed a prominent appearance behind them.

After walking for a few dozen feet, they suddenly paused on the white rug.

The two slightly looked up and gave Heaven Reaching Tower a distant gaze.

Du Fa Cai stuck out his stomach and ran toward them. He respectfully bowed. His hands tightly held onto his thigh forming a ninety degree bend. Given his plump belly, this action was extremely difficult! But, unbelievably, he performed this perfectly.

"Young masters Chu! Welcome! Welcome..." Du Fa Cai smiled with full flattery. At this moment, if there was a tail on his butt, it would probably be wagging like a fan.

"Big brother, this Heaven Reaching Tower is pretty well-prepared." This younger young master smiled softly as he looked at the white rug below them with a show of admiration.

“It’s acceptable.” The older young man coolly nodded and said, “The feeling of walking on it, I am somewhat satisfied.”

The edge of Du Fa Cai’s eyes twitched slightly. He sneered mentally: This priceless Snow Mink rug was rolled out to welcome them and it only gets “The feeling of walking on it, I am somewhat satisfied” from this young master.

“Two sirs, the inn has prepared the best guestroom for you. Plus, everything inside is brand new. Please come in and rest. It is snowy and cold outside…” The fat on Du Fa Cai’s face did not cease to jiggle as he smiled brightly.

“Hmm, okay. Lead the way.” The older young master clasped his hands behind his back and walked up. His fluttering white robe did not even seem to touch the ground.

When they reached the door, two rows of neatly dressed large men simultaneously bowed, “Welcome young masters!”

The two young masters happily nodded with a smile. When dealing with these lowly servants, their attitude was much warmer than that of other aristocrats.

In their spring-like smiles, everyone in the two rows of large men felt there was something extra in their hands. Looking down, each person saw two bank notes in their hands. Each one was… five hundred taels.

It was two… not one…

Only this little action was enough for the men in ceremony to love the two young masters from the bottom of their hearts.

One note would be just a casual reward. But two notes were a matter of respect. Being a pair, they also carried the hidden meaning of good wishes. The fact that everyone had two five hundred tael notes proved that, right from the start, these two young masters did not forget about lowly people like them. This spoke to their habits.

And such habits made it easy for people to respect and love them with sincerity from the bottom of their hearts.

These people were born royals!

Du Fa Cai carefully accommodated them fearing of any flaw. As he walked, his waist never straightened, and his head never looked up. A bright smile remained on his face like a blooming chrysanthemum.

The two young masters walked into Heaven Reaching Tower with him.

Mo Tian Yun stood in front of the window with a frown. He muttered to himself, “Who are these two people?”

The soft sound of footsteps rang out in the hall way as the two honored guests reached the fifth floor. They were still able to hear the voice of the younger person laughing and talking, “Boss Du, we really troubled you. You prepared everything so carefully.”

Du Fa Cai followed with a voice so sweet one could imagine his bright and smiley demeanor, “No, no. As long as the young masters are happy, this little person feels reassured. Haha…”

The edge of Mo Tian Yun’s eyes twitched slightly. Young masters, little person… Given Du Fa Cai’s position, he actually called himself a little person in front of these two people?

Mo Tian Yun walked out of his door and slowly walked into the common room of the fourth floor. He knew that all of the heirs must all be here at this time.

The moment he walked in, he saw that was indeed the case.

Whether they were opponents or allies, each young master’s group took a table as they chitchatted.

Two brothers Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue (TLN: Sun and moon respectively) took a table. Luo Ke Wu and Liu Sui Feng took one table. Dong clan’s Dong Wu Lei took a table to himself. As for a

young man lying like a puddle on a table, he was Ji Zhu, the young master of the Ji clan.

Each time he looked at this Ji Zhu, Mo Tian Yun felt as if he had just eaten a fly. This guy was his cousin; he was only three months younger than Mo Tian Yun. But only god knows the extent of this guy's laziness.

Ji Zhu had created a record: When everyone went to Cang Lang battlefront for training, this young master Ji's followers got injured and needed three months to recuperate. And since he did not bring any maids with him, it caused an incident. Young master Ji did not wash his clothes for three months.

He changed clothes each day and tossed them at the head of his bed. As a result, one time Mo Tian Yun went looking for him to only find this young master naked and tossing things all over his bed. He was searching for clothes to wear.

His method of find clothes was very unique. They were all already worn and had not been washed. This young master Ji would grab one and put it up to his nose for a sniff. Then he would grab another one and sniff... Comparing them to see which one smells least.

Seeing such a scene, Mo Tian Yun almost collapsed on the spot. Since then, he never looked for this cousin again. He swore an oath to never travel in a group with Ji Zhu ever again.

In the common room, there were more than ten big tables, but they were all occupied. Mo Tian Yun walked in and two martial experts of the Mo clan immediately stood up to clear a spot for him by taking over an entire table.

Luo Ke Wu yelled out, "Who dares to make a bet with me about the identity of those two young men? I am willing to bet ten thousand taels!"

Gu Yan Yang sneered and laughed, "Ten thousand taels? Are you

a beggar?”

Ji Zhu sat lazily with his face down on the table. He only raised his arm, “I will bet. If I lose, I will not bathe for a month.”

Luo Ke Wu said contemptuously, “Isn’t that your dream? I don’t think you will only do it if you lose! Isn’t that just too shameless?” Then he laughed loudly.

Mo Tian Yun smiled softly as he watched these people. There were many that he was seeing for the very first time. Plus, he could not differentiate whether they were friends of foes. These young masters from great clans had never gathered together like they did in this common room. Furthermore, they were not in some sort of earth-shattering battle.

This kind of phenomenon was rare even in Middle Three Heavens.

Everyone had a kind of strange feeling. The only exceptions were Dong Wu Lei and Ji Zhu who maintained the same old attitude. Everyone else was more or less reserved.

“What are you betting?” Mo Tian Yun tilted his head and looked at Luo Ke Wu.

“I am betting that these people belong to a clan of Upper Three Heavens! If not one of the nine great clans, then one of the big clans!” Luo Ke Wu said loudly.

“You are farting!” Mo Tian Yun said condescendingly, “No one here is blind. Who could not see that? Why would they want to bet with you? Aren’t you just scamming for money?”

Luo Ke Wu’s face reddened. Embarrassment turned into anger as he said, “Can you handle it?”

“Gibberish!” Mo Tian Yun grunted icily.

A pungent smell suddenly emitted. The young masters were all making weird faces as they stopped breathing.

Right after, Gu Yan Yang yelled angrily, “Bastard! Put your shoes back on!”

Everyone followed his gaze, they became angry and amused at the same time. As it turned out, Ji Zhu had taken off his shoes and was scratching his feet with a chopstick on the table...

This stench was emitting from his two feet that had not been washed for who knows how many days...

Gu Yan Yang’s table was next to his so they suffered the most.

“I am scratching my feet. What are you farting about?” Ji Zhu did not care about anyone and continued to scratch away. He essentially did not look like a young master of a great clan but more like a base thug.

After scratching for a while, he unexpectedly brought up the chopstick and sniffed it a few times. Then he sighed and said, “The aroma is getting stronger...”

Everyone suffocated. They felt their stomachs churning with nausea.

Dong Wu Lei quietly stood up. The moment he moved, he immediately grabbed Ji Zhu’s neck and punched his face. This young master did not say anything, but he was the first one to make a move.

Ji Zhu cried out painfully as he fought back.

The other young masters stood around in a circle as they cheered on with the scent of blood. The atmosphere was extremely lively.

“That’s enough!” Mo Tian Yun frowned and said in annoyance, “Ji Zhu, what kind of appearance is this? Right in front of everyone. Do you know what shame is?”

“If my second brother did not suddenly disappear, you think I would want to go with you people?” Ji Zhu grumpily stood up. He rolled his eyes and put on his shoes, “It’s not like I want to. It

just... itches too much. What can I do?"

"Alright! Let's talk about those two people from earlier." Mo Tian Yun frowned and said, "Some of us are strangers to each other. Some are far apart, and some are enemies. But I should remind you all of one thing. This trip to Lower Three Heavens is for training, and the purpose of training is Nine Tribulations Sword's master!"

The moment he brought up Nine Tribulations Sword, everyone became quiet once more.

"Those two people carried an arrogant air. They are clearly from great clans. Plus, from their auras, we can recognize that they are two swordsmen! While I cannot see their cultivation level... Being swordsmen at such a young age is not possible even in great clans of our Middle Three Heavens!"

"In such a critical time like this, two such people suddenly appeared..." At this moment, Mo Tian Yun had successfully guided everyone's thought, "I cannot believe that this has nothing to do with the appearance of Nine Tribulations Sword."

"However, if it is related to Nine Tribulations Sword master, they are our opponents. Plus, they are powerful opponents." Mo Tian Yun's words could not be denied by anyone, even the opposing clans.

"Therefore... you should not take them lightly." Mo Tian Yun said gravely, "I just want to remind you all of that."

Mo Tian Yun also understood why he felt a strong sense of danger the moment those two young men appeared! It was as if these two young men were his fated mortal enemies!

This kind of feeling was truly irrational, but its existence was extremely real!

Moreover, Mo Tian Yun felt this was even greater than the sense of danger created by his younger brother, Mo Tian Ji! Mo Tian Yun

always trusted his senses!

So the first thing that Mo Tian Yun did was make use of Nine Tribulations Sword to create an alliance with all of the young masters here in the shortest possible time.

Fighting against a common enemy, just in case!

Even though they were a divided alliance, they were still the descendants of great clans. Even if they did not say anything or do anything, as long as they stood on the same ground, they would be able to create a powerful deterrent!

And even though Mo Tian Yun did not say it, everyone had a sense of this particular point. These people were all elite members of great clans. While some might have pretended to be fools, and some might have acted like playboys on the surface, which one of them was really an idiot?

Even Ji Zhu, with his filthy character, was not looked down by anyone, including Mo Tian Yun.

“Mo Tian Yun, those two people... what kind of grudges do they have against you?” One person asked faintly. The question clearly carried the thought: It can’t be. The moment we saw these people, we wanted to be their ally. Such innate character is not something that could be taught. If they are from Middle Three Heavens, it would be impossible not to know of them. Lower Three Heavens definitely cannot have people of such caliber... It could only be Upper Three Heavens. But if it is Upper Three Heavens... What are you, Mo Tian Yun, getting anxious about?

The young man that just spoke took a table in the center. He was wearing white clothes with sharp sword brows. His indifferent gaze seemed to flash a strange ghostly light.

This made it seem as if his temperament could change at any time. One moment dark, one moment quiet, and another moment cruel...

In short, anyone who looked at him would have the feeling: This person has a bit of evil!

Mo Tian Yun was feeling great tension, but his countenance did not shift. He smiled and said, “Brother Ao, you and I have no grudges in the past and no hatred recently. Why are you being hateful toward me? What you are saying is a little hard to understand. I only wanted to remind people. Why does Brother Ao compare a gentleman’s heart with that of a villain?”

This person was the person Mo Tian Yun wanted to avoid the most among all of the youths of Middle Three Heavens’ great clans! Even Mo Tian Ji and Dong Wu Lei did not carry as much weight in Mo Tian Yun’s mind.

Evil Young Master, Ao Xie Yun! (TLN: One of the twelve. Chapter 66.)

Among the current young men of Middle Three Heavens, young master Ao was a character worthy of being a leader! Among the clans, people hated him to the bone. They only wanted to kill him to clear the way. Some people were jealous of him; some people were envious of him. They only hated the fact that they could not replace him. There were also people who avoided him the moment they saw him. But no one could say that they didn’t recognize his position.

This person was truly capable.

Even the brothers Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji were, at this point, being greatly suppressed by Ao Xie Yun!

“Comparing a gentleman’s heart with that of a villain. Haha. Gentleman…” Ao Xie Yun laughed faintly, “You even want to kill your own younger brother. You even want to harm your younger sister… Mo Tian Yun, are you really a gentleman?”

Chapter 270: Mo Tian Yun's counterattack

Ao Xie Yun just finished speaking, and the entire room became suspicious. Ji Zhu rolled his eyes once, but Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue's gazes flashed sharply. The young masters who were on good terms with Ao Xie Yun also showed a look of caution.

Ao Xie Yun's words were very strong. Moreover, since they came down to Lower Three Heavens, Mo Tian Yun was always trying to find a chance to gain equal grounds with Ao Xie Yun. Right now, the one thing that everyone could easily see was that, of course, Ao Xie Yun was overpowering Mo Tian Yun.

Furthermore, he made use of Mo Tian Yun's weakness!

Everyone was slightly anxious. If these two young masters were really going to turn against each other, all the great clans present here had to choose a side.

With the exception of some inconsequential people, everyone else had to make their choice.

This was too sudden!

Ao Xie Yun had the upper hand in terms of morals. The words that he spoke placed Mo Tian Yun at an absolute low point.

Mo Tian Yun stared at Ao Xie Yun without speaking for a long time. The atmosphere became stifling. After a while, Mo Tian Yun suddenly smiled and said, "Brother Ao, these words should not come out of your mouth."

"Why not?" Ao Xie Yun was not even looking at him. He was looking down as he turned a finely made ceramic cup of tea in his hand. The tea cup was filled, but no matter how he turned it or even flipped it over, not a drop fell out.

"You and I are both descendants of great clans." Mo Tian Yun sighed. His soft gaze became cruel and sharp; there was even a sense of oppression, "Brother Ao, you should understand what

tactics great clans like ours use to keep a foothold in Middle Three Heavens."

"Haha, is it using fratricidal tactics? Or is it using immoral means?" Ao Xie Yun's eyes flashed brightly as he mocked.

"That's right! But not completely." Contrary to what everyone expected, Mo Tian Yun nodded in agreement. The moment he admitted this, even Ao Xie Yun who was playing with the tea cup in his hand, slowly looked up at him.

"For each clan to rise, it has to go through tragedy." Mo Tian Yun slowly sat down opposite of Ao Xie Yun. Looking at him, Mo Tian Yun said, "If it is not your own tragedy, it is your enemies' tragedy."

"Yes." Ao Xie Yun said in a low voice.

"All of us here are talents of the great clans in Middle Three Heavens; we are also the future leaders of Middle Three Heavens. For our respective clans, each person here is extremely important. Even you, Ao Xie Yun, cannot deny this." Mo Tian Yun said slowly.

"Continue." Ao Xie Yun said gloomily.

"But, on a slightly harsher note, how did we get these positions? Mo Tian Yun said in a low voice, "Don't talk about some heavenly talent, and don't talk about some efforts we made. These are all false. In the end, we have our current positions because we have our powerful clans behind us!"

"Among us, the highest cultivation level is only ninth grade Revered Martial Master." Mo Tian Yun sneered, "Such cultivation level, in Middle Three Heavens, can easily be wiped out by one King level master! But how much of the clans' resources were used to build such cultivation level? What is there to be proud of?"

"If we were born into ordinary families, what would we be even with heavenly talents? We will just be ordinary people." Mo Tian Yun said, "Don't look harshly upon me for being impolite. In my

eyes, all of us, including Brother Ao and Brother Dong, are all the same. If we lose our clans, we would be nothing! Not even dogs!”

Everyone was silent!

Ao Xie Yun’s eyes flashed, but he did not respond. That was the truth; if he argued, it would seem petty.

“It is because of massive entities like the Ao clan that Evil Young Master exists! It is because of the Mo clan’s super strength that I, Mo Tian Yun, exist.” Mo Tian Yun resounded, “Our first and foremost duty is to preserve the clans’ interest and protect the clan. After that, it is protecting ourselves.”

“These are Middle Three Heavens clans!” Mo Tian Yun looked up and said gravely, “In a clan, the reason for its fall is not external enemies but infighting! Brothers fighting brothers to seize power is the most fearful reason for disaster.”

When he said this, everyone finally understood why he went roundabout in a circle. They could not help but feel a bit of admiration.

He took a big circle to counter Ao Xie Yun. First, he was able to make everyone think and sympathize. Second, he used these words to overpower Ao Xie Yun’s current moral high ground.

Most importantly, his reasoning was sound. Even if Ao Xie Yun wanted to argue back, he could not.

“Ao clan’s Ao Xie Yun has a firm position. Ji clan’s two brothers Ji Zhu and Ji Mo both do not have any desire for power so everything is peaceful. While the Luo clan is an opponent of the Mo clan, the two brothers have a very strong relationship. Don’t even mention the Dong clan. As long as nothing unexpected happens, there will be many years of peace.”

Mo tian Yun shifted his topic to the great clans of Middle Three Heavens, and all the young masters listened attentively.

When speaking about the descendants of the great clans, Mo Tian

Yun only referred to two brothers because everyone knew that, for each clan, only the eldest and the second young masters have the greatest power. All others were essentially negligible.

Only the second young master could replace the eldest young master. This was an indisputable law.

“While other clans have the same internal problems, my Mo clan’s problems are most urgent!” Mo Tian Yun smiled bitterly and said, “Everyone knows that I have a talented younger brother! His talent is in no way below mine, and it is not below anyone else’s. I am not boasting about my own brother; you all know this.”

Speaking of Mo Tian Ji’s ability, even young masters of opposing clans like Luo Ke Wu had to nod in agreement. He had suffered losses by the hands of Mo Tian Ji, how could he not know that Mo Tian Ji was powerful?

“If my younger brother can be comfortable with his current situation and his positions of second young master, he could work with me... Ao Xie Yun, even you would not be a match for us two brothers...” These words of Mo Tian Yun was a little awe-inspiring and cold.

Ao Xie Yun carefully thought over and weighed Mo Tian Ji and Mo Tian Yun. A while after, he sighed and said in a low voice, “Yes, if you two work as one, even I cannot hold against you. I would not be your rival. But you two are not in agreement; you are even enemies. It’s lucky that you are not united...”

“Yes, I, Mo Tian Yun, will not bow to anyone. Moreover, these past years, the entire clan has already recognized my status.” Mo Tian Yun laughed loudly, “But no one ever thought that there would be a genius younger brother with ambitions reaching the heavens. He is calculating with great desire.”

“Ao Xie Yun, if it were you, would you simply hand over your current position?” Mo Tian Yun coldly asked.

Ao Xie Yun remained silent for a long time before slowly saying, “I would not!”

“Yes, you would not! I especially could not! It is because my desire for power is much stronger than yours! This is my greatest weakness.” Mo Tian Yun laughed at himself.

“If the Mo clan only has me, then I could exist peacefully and not fear any of your clans.” Mo Tian Yun said sadly, “If there is only my younger brother, Mo Tian Ji, he would not be any less than you guys! Both of us brothers have the strength to make the clan more powerful. I am very confident that none of you would disagree with this point…”

Everyone solemnly nodded.

The two brothers, Mo Tian Yun and Mo Tian Ji, were both powerful. It could be said that they were talents of the generation.

“If Tian Ji and I belonged to two different clans, even if we were mortal enemies, we would not stop developing and growing in battle against each other. Or we could insightfully join forces and become friends. However, the tragedy is my talented brother and I exist in the same clan! And even worse is the fact that each clan can only have one leader.” Mo Tian Yun sneered, “Both my brother and I have the potential to become master the clan.”

“A few years ago, I realized that Tian Ji’s ability was not inferior to my own. And his ambition was also no less.” Mo Tian Yun quietly said, “When that happens… what would you do if it was you, Ao Xie Yun?”

Ao Xie Yun sighed! He slowly closed his eyes and thought. Then he said, “If I was in this situation, I would use earth-shattering means to nip that talent in the bud.”

“But that talent could not be suppressed. The more you try to, the more powerful he grows!” Mo Tian Yun smiled, “At the time, I was like you. I suppressed him and suppressed him! It was because

I recognized the danger to the clan. If I allowed him to grow, the Mo clan would eventually suffer from internal strife between two powerful people!”

“As soon as Mo Tian Ji is fully developed, us two brothers would fight without anyone conceding. The Mo clan would be finished! Everything will end in the fight between us. Even if there is to be a winner in the end, it would definitely be a tragic victory. The strength of the clan would suffer greatly. There would be no love left in it!”

“However, I failed in my attempt to suppress him!” Mo Tian Yun helplessly smiled, “Each time I repressed him he fought back. It has all led to this current situation.”

“When I wanted to use gentle tactics… another talent appeared in our clan! My younger sister, Mo Qing Wu.” Mo Tian Yun smiled sadly, “And those two talents have a very good relationship with each other. It is as if they are one person.”

“The appearance of my little sister cause the clan to split into three factions. If my little sister grows up, she would definitely join forces with her second brother.”

“In that case, the Mo clan would be done for. How could I allow our clan to fall like that?” Mo Tian Yun said, “And I cannot let go. So… I have to fight.”

Mo Tian Yun finally finished this big circle as he said softly, “Ao Xie Yun, you are scolding me for even wanting to kill my own little brother and harm my own little sister. Am I still a gentleman?”

“I am not a gentleman.” Mo Tian Yun said quietly, “But if I wanted to kill them, I could have quietly killed them over ten thousand times these past years!”

Mo Tian Yun finally formed a most aggressive counterattack!

Chapter 271: Chu clan's young masters?

"Now that Tian Ji is grown, I have to be ruthless. Killing him is very difficult. However, like I said before, I am capable of killing him ten thousand times over. I don't think you would deny that." Mo Tian Yun said solemnly, "I have such ability!"

"I have very conflicting feelings. I am sure you all can understand by now. I, Mo Tian Yun, might not be a good person or a gentleman, but I would never be as lowly as Brother Ao said."

"I am currently suppressing my younger brother and sister. I am not shameful to admit this." Mo Tian Yun's sharp gaze glanced over everyone. Suddenly, he asked in a grave tone, "But all of you eldest young masters here, who has never suppressed his rival? Well?"

Looking at his eyes, their faces slightly heated up.

In regards to Mo Tian Ji and Mo Qing Wu being ambushed by the Hei Mo clan in Lower Three Heavens, there were many speculations that it had to do with Mo Tian Yun. It was because of this that everyone's impression of Mo Tian Yun became very bad.

How could someone who ensnared his own brother and sister be trusted?

However, at this moment, everyone suddenly felt that they were also similar to Mo Tian Yun. For their clans, for their ambitions, and for their survival, they also suppressed other people in their own clans! And those people were also their blood relations, their brothers and sisters!

Is it not funny that we are ridiculing Mo Tian Yun for doing the same thing that we do?

"Mo Tian Yun, you are very eloquent." Ao Xie Yun smiled, "Your words are very reasonable, and I also agree with you. For the survival of the clan, it is nothing for one to betray his moral every

now and then. I can accept that."

"Your words have successfully brightened your image in everyone's mind. While it is tainted, you have the guts to admit it and to take responsibility. Very good." A trace of sarcasm appeared in Ao Xie Yun's dark gaze, "If I were not here, these words would probably win you many allies..."

"Too bad I am here today." Ao Xie Yun smiled coolly and said, "All of your words are true; some are even from your heart... But..."

"The people I suppressed are different from those you suppressed." Ao Xie Yun quietly said, "Before my brothers are grown, before they have the ability to fight against me, I would never suppress them!"

"It's different with you. Your younger sister is only nine years old. Plus, she is a girl. Your younger brother competes with you for power, but Mo Tian Ji is unlike you. While he competes for power with you, when it involves the interests of the clan, he would give way. You, on the other hand, are willing to cause damage to the clan in the interest of power."

"You were capable of killing him before he was fully grown, but don't forget that he was not against you then." Ao Xie Yun said slowly, "But you were guarded against him in every way. It was because of this that he developed the desire for power. It was because he essentially could not get anything or even have the chance to get anything."

"Great clans are all the same; it is the way of the world. You don't need to justify yourself since it was not for your own advantage."

"Even if we suppress others, we would not force them to death." Ao Xie Yun said, "Your fight, however, is a deadly one. Moreover, this fight was forced by you. This is the greatest difference between you and us."

Mo Tian Yun's face shifted between white and blue. Every word Ao Xie Yun said touched his weaknesses, but he could only grit his teeth helplessly and said, "Everyone here has his own understanding of his clan. Who does not have struggles? Who does not have understanding? Who does not have to do things that he doesn't want to? Who does not have ambition? Arguing about these things right now is meaningless."

"Yes, it is meaningless. But your paranoia makes other people uncomfortable." Ao Xie Yun sneered, "Like today, you should not have suggested that we deal with those two young people, but you did."

"So what?" Mo Tian Yun grunted.

"This does not suit your discreet character." Ao Xie Yun's dark eyes flashed, "In a situation like this one, you would normally wait for an opportunity before acting. You would never make a move first, and you would especially not be a leader..."

"You only want to take advantage when other people are losing. And you even want to take the credit for being a good person." Ao Xie Yun said bluntly, "Dogs can't change their shit-biting character; you should not have jumped up front. But earlier, you went first. While your words were reasonable, they also proved that you had hostile intentions toward those two people."

"People like them have always been the kind you would try to win over and curry favors from. You definitely would not initiate anything against them or offend them. Therefore, those two must have hostile intentions toward you, and you must have sensed that."

Ao Xie Yun slowly looked up. His dark gaze aimed straight at Mo Tian Yun as he let out an ironic laugh, "Mo Tian Yun, you would never ignore danger even if it is just a feeling... Thus, your intention was to have us unknowingly be your backing."

"You are making a preemptive move!" Ao Xie Yun said, "This is

part of your paranoid character! But why are you so paranoid today? Mo Tian Yun, what are you being paranoid about?”

Mo Tian Yun’s countenance paled, and he yelled, “Ao Xie Yun, what are you trying to say?”

“I am not trying to say anything.” Ao Xie Yun said casually, “Everyone knows that those two people are from Upper Three Heavens. If everyone makes a move against them, then… would they not take revenge? If it’s revenge… how would that be dealt?”

When he said this, all of the young masters’ faces became discolored.

“Perhaps they could beat the great clans to the point they can’t get back up again? Or even directly suppress them?” Ao Xie Yun said casually, “That way, most of the great clans in Middle Three Heavens would slowly fall… Mo Tian Yun, could it be that you want to dominate Middle Three Heavens?”

Mo Tian Yun’s countenance suddenly turned white, “You are speaking nonsense!”

However, everyone’s view of him was already beginning to change.

After hearing Ao Xie Yun speak, everyone immediately realized that this was definitely possible.

“Some people like to speculate things with a suspicious mind. But it is really sad that such a thing has become the way of this world.” Mo Tian Yun said coldly, “That is why good people in this world become mountains of white bones while despicable people rise up in power and wealth.”

He sneered and shook his head, “This is not interesting at all!”

In this battle of wits, Mo Tian Yun had failed.

He used his sense of danger to call everyone to arms with him. He hoped that he could deal with the crisis that was about to come.

However, Ao Xie Yun had used this sense of danger to break through his lies and pushed him further down.

Therefore, in the end, Mo Tian Yun could only sigh and say a few words with a dejected look to save a little bit of face.

“Reason can be spoken by anyone. The same reason is true when spoken by a gentleman; it is also true when spoken by a petty person.” Mo Tian Yun said casually, “Reason is reason. There is no differentiation.”

“Well said!” An agreeing voice sounded out. Then there was a soft sound of clapping as two young men dressed in snowy white outfits stepped forward.

The whole room became quiet once more. Everyone simultaneously turned to look at these two young men.

In front of the watchful eyes of everyone, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing walked forward and went into this common room.

Their current appearances were carefully disguised by Chu Yang. They were very different from what they were like before! Even their skin color, the shape of their faces, the shape of their eyes, and the positions of their facial features were completely different.

Currently, the two of them were total strangers who had just appeared in this world for the very first time.

After entering the common room, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing had used all of their power to control themselves, but they still could not maintain their composure.

In front of Gu Du Xing were mostly people he knew!

He was acquainted with almost all of the young masters here!

But from Chu Yang’s perspective, he saw something else.

There were also many people that he knew. Chu Yang realized that, with the exception of some people, everyone else had arrived!

Only a few decades later, the people here would stir Middle Three

Heavens! In fact, even Upper Three Heavens would also feel it!

He Mo (Black Devil) An Zhu (Dark Bamboo) Gu Du Ke (Lone Traveler), Du Sha (Poison Spirit) Tian Ji (Heavenly Secret) Li Xiong Tu (Strict Aggression), Mo Dao (Black Saber) Qian Hao (One Thousand Talents) Xie Gong Zi (Evil Young Master), Meng Luo (Dream Fall) Qiong Hua (Jade Flower) Tian Bu Ru (Heaven Cannot Compare)

The powerful young man sitting in the middle with that careless expression was Evil Young Master Ao Xie Yun. One of the twelve outstanding characters. And Lone Traveler Gu Du Xing was already by his side. Black Saber was making waves with Ask the Heavens Sword. The person standing in one of the corners was Tu clan's eldest young master, Tu Qian Hao. As for the rough looking young man with the beard sitting at the table behind Ao Xie Yun, he was Li Xiong Tu!

Black Devil and Dark Bamboo were not here. Chu Yang did not know who Poison Spirit was. Mo Tian Ji was not here. Jade Flower in Meng Luo (Dream Fall) Qiong Hua (Jade Flower) Tian Bu Ru (Heaven Cannot Compare) was the shy looking youth in another corner. Later on, everyone would think that Jade Flower was a female, but Chu Yang knew that this revered Jade Flower was Xie clan's young master, Xie Dan Qiong.

His famed hidden weapon was Dream Jade Flower.

Dream Fall and Heaven Cannot Compare seemed to not be here.

Even so, gathered here were Lone Traveler, Strict Aggression, One Thousand Talents, Evil Young Master, Jade Flower Xie Dan Qiong. There was even one hidden Poison Spirit.

Six people.

Among them, there was one person not inferior in any way. Mo clan's eldest young master, Mo Tian Yun.

Among these people, after Ji Zhu was killed by his cousin, Mo

Tian Yun, Mo Tian Yun was then killed by the hands of Mo Tian Ji. And Luo Ke Di's eldest brother, Luo Ke Wu, was also eventually killed by Mo Tian Ji's scheme in the battle between the two great clans...

And the two young masters of the Gu clan, Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue, was nowhere to be found; they disappeared from the fighting.

Right now, Black Devil and Dark Bamboo had started to rise, the remaining ten were also starting to show their strength!

In the previous life, the world belonged to you people, but, in this life, there is me! Chu Yang thought to himself.

"Everyone, in our first meeting, I greet you!" Chu Yang gently cupped his fist. His countenance was cheery and calm, but it was filled with a kind of noble modesty making everyone unable to be offended by it.

"This young master is?" A ray of suspicion flashed in Ao Xie Yun's eyes, "May I ask your name please?"

"My surname is Chu." Chu Yang's tone was crisp, "This is my eldest brother; he doesn't really like to talk."

"So it's young master Chu." Ao Xie Yun was shaken. Surname Chu? Upper Three Heavens' Chu clan? While the Chu Clan is not in the rank of the nine great clans of Upper Three Heavens, they are still a super clan!

These two young masters are actually people of the Chu clan?

Chapter 272: You want to try? I also want to try.

“We don’t dare. I am Chu Fei. (TLN: Non-Chu) This is my eldest brother, Chu Nan.” Chu Yang smiled warmly.

“Chu Nan.” Gu Du Xing immediately glared at him and yelled, “Shut up!”

But Ao Xie Yun and company already showed a look of mockery in their eyes: Chu Nan? Virgin? Hmm, this name is really meaningful. It really inspires people’s imagination. (TLN: His first name means south, but the combo sounds similar to the word virgin.)

“May I ask what the names of you young masters are?” Chu Yang shyly smiled with the innocence of youth and said, “Us two brothers really like to make friends.”

“I am Mo Tian Yun.” Mo Tian Yun smiled. Looking at his face, no one could imagine that he was the person who just mobilized everyone against these two people, but he also said, “It’s really shameful to say that I was worried just now. Haha. Now that you are here, I realized that I became a bad person for nothing.”

“Oh?” Chu Yang smiled and looked at him. A look of admiration showed on his face, “Young master Mo is truly frank. I like those kinds of people.”

Mo Tian Yun smiled softly. His countenance showed that he was speaking from sincerity, “Being in Jiang Hu, there are some things we have to be more concerned with. It has gradually become a bad habit… Young masters Chu, please don’t look and laugh at me…”

“How could we!” Chu Yang said sincerely, “Our father taught us countless times that we must be cautious to survive in Jiang Hu. Not only is Brother Mo cautious, you are also candid. This makes you a rare friend indeed.”

Mo Tian Yun, Ao Xie Yun and company all felt a little surprised.

No one knew for sure how long this young master Chu had been standing outside. Whether he heard a lot or a little, they were certain of one thing. He definitely heard; he might not have heard everything, but he heard the last part at least.

No matter what, he should not have been so warm toward Mo Tian Yun like that. What was this? This young master Chu seemed to speak without caring about societal standards.

“I am Ao Xie Yun.”

“I am Luo Ke Wu.”

“Remember it well. My name is Ji Zhu.” Ji Zhu’s self-introduction caused the solemn-looking Tu Qian Hao, who was standing in a corner, to laugh. What a clown...

The edge of Chu Yang’s mouth twitched. He thought that it was lucky that the punk Ji Mo was not here. Otherwise, with the two brothers in one place, it would be hard to determine who was crazier...

After a wave of introductions, the atmosphere in the room became livelier.

“This trip to Continent Center Citadel is truly exciting.” Chu Yang smiled subtly. Each of his actions showed the cultivation of a descendant from a privileged background.

“I heard that the people here are fighting for Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber?”

“These are just baseless rumors from the common people; it’s not credible at all.” Mo Tian Yun smiled, “Young master Chu comes down from Upper Three Heavens; you should know that, thousands of years ago, there were no such things as Ask the Heavens Sword Saint and Underworld Saber Saint.”

“Such lies can only fool mindless people. As for us, we just want

to watch the show and laugh.” Mo Tian Yun spoke very eloquently.

Just earlier, he was insulted by Ao Xie Yun without any way of fighting back. But now, surprisingly, his gaze and his countenance looked as if nothing had happened.

“Oh… it’s fake?” Chu Yang smiled and then changed the subject. He talked with everyone about things up in the heavens and down on earth.

Because he had the identity of a young master from a super clan in Upper Three Heavens, everyone was cautious not to offend him.

However, their conversation was not at all warm.

With the exception of Mo Tian Yun adding a few lines trying to cover his tracks, only the two brothers Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue were flattering these two young masters Chu.

In regards to this Gu Du Xing was somewhat feeling annoyed. When he was living in the clan, these two brothers did not like him. Whenever they had free time, they would find reasons to fix him; they even hated the fact that they could not kill him. Acting like this in front of so many people, do you have any sort of integrity?

As for the other people, they kept a fixed distance. They purposely tried not to get close, but did not want be offensive either. They kept a reasonable distance.

As for Dong Wu Lei, Xie Dan Qiong, and Tu Qian Hao, they only introduced themselves and did not speak further. They sat quietly in their spots and drank tea.

Li Xiong Tu’s voice was the loudest. He and Luo Ke Wu sat at the same table arguing as if there was no tomorrow.

Ji Zhu collapsed on the table playing dead. His whole body looked like it had no bones.

However, when Chu Yang suddenly changed topic, all of the

young masters simultaneously took notice.

These geniuses thought like that. If you want to talk about it, I don't want to hear. But if you intentionally try to hide it, I would be especially interested.

Furthermore, everyone knew well what Chu Yang's identity represented. This told them that he was even more well-informed than they were. Why did he change the subject? Could it be that there is some mystery within it?

"Young masters Chu... only two of you came?"

Ao Xie Yun's dark gaze flashed.

"Ah..." Chu Yang's eyes blinked, and he said, "Not exactly."

Ao Xie Yun understood and smiled, "No matter what you do, people always follow you around. It's really annoying. Haha."

"Yes, yes." Chu Yang acted as if he had found a kindred spirit, "Brother Ao really understands how people feel."

After laughing and joking around for a while, Chu Yang pulled Gu Du Xing away from Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue's encirclement. He said goodbye to everyone and returned to his room. Before leaving, a joyous look flashed on his face and quickly disappeared.

Ao Xie Yun waved his arm, and two martial experts from the Ao clan immediately appeared at the door.

"What do you think?" Ao Xie Yun asked.

He looked down on Mo Tian Yun, and he was Mo Tian Yun's foe. But in this moment, he was actually having a discussion with Mo Tian Yun. It was because, in this aspect, Mo Tian Yun had abilities that other people did not.

"These two people were clearly led here by Du Fa Cai." Mo Tian Yun said solemnly.

"Yes." Ao Xie Yun agreed.

“They are obviously here to check something...” Mo Tian Yun frowned.

“This has some implications.”

“When they left, they were very happy.” Mo Tian Yun snorted.

“Right.”

After only exchanging a few lines, the two mortal enemies had confirmed their suspicions and immediately stopped talking.

Ao Xie Yun immediately stood up and went out.

Mo Tian Yun also left with his two bodyguards.

The two saw each other as a tool to verify their suspicions. Once they had used each other, they immediately went their separate ways.

There was also a contemplative look on Xie Dan Qiong’s face. A little after Ao Xie Yun left, he also followed suit.

Soon, Ji Zhu, Luo Ke Wu, Dong Wu Lei, Tu Qian Hao, and Li Xiong Tu all left. In addition, each person had a reason. Fatigue, hunger, headache....

The common room, with only the two Gu brothers and some other people remained, had a very empty feel.

And these people were truly the ones that did not realize anything.

Like Chu Yang thought, some schemes could only be used on geniuses. Against ordinary people, or even slow ones, they were completely useless.

Afterward, Gu Du Xing went out with his fluttering white outfit.

A while after, Chu Yang left Heaven Reaching Tower in front of everyone’s watchful eyes.

But the young masters of the clans in Middle Three Heavens did not make any moves. It was not until the afternoon that Chu Yang

and Gu Du Xing came back one after another. Yet, no one moved.

The sky grew dark; the bodyguards of the great clans started to move out.

One after another, they left the inn in the darkness of night.

They all had only one purpose: Research.

Snow continued to fall over Continent Center Citadel. Outsiders arrived endlessly as their number grew. Diwu Qing Rou's Golden Horse Riders Department caught countless people each day.

"Those Middle Three Heavens clans still haven't made any move?" Diwu Qing Rou looked out his window. Outside, there were several slim and beautiful bamboos.

"There has not been any movement." Gao Sheng smiled and said, "If they know that this is false, how can there be any movement? They are just here to train since the timing is right; they would never be willing to join in this competition."

"Mm, it's good that there is no movement. As long as they don't participate, we still have control." Diwu Qing Rou slowly took two steps forward, "But the fact that King of Hell Chu has yet to make any move is beyond my expectation."

"Prime Minister, you mean to say?"

"He went through thousands of hardship to get here and cause trouble. The moment he caused such earth-shattering chaos, he was taken advantage of by me. If it were you, how would you feel?" Diwu Qing Rou said.

"Extremely angry." Gao Sheng said frankly.

"But King of Hell Chu has not made any move. Plus, he is also not stopping. He seems to not notice the fact that he is being used by me. This is truly out of the ordinary." Diwu Qing Rou frowned, "What would his next move be?"

"King of Hell Chu is not supposed to do nothing..." Diwu Qing

Rou muttered, “How would he counter my upper hand?”

“Prime Minister, our upper hand is certain. Even if King of Hell Chu is a genius, this is still Great Zhao, not Iron Cloud. Or, King of Hell Chu could be in tears at this very moment.” Gao Sheng reassured.

“No, perhaps other people would give up, but King of Hell Chu definitely would not.” Diwu Qing Rou said definitely.

Then, he suddenly frowned and said, “I heard that two VIPs arrived at Heaven Reaching Tower today? Plus, Du Fa Cai himself, actually came out and greeted them respectfully?”

“Yes. According to the information, they are two young masters from the Chu clan of Upper Three Heavens.” Gao Sheng replied.

“Chu clan? Chu?” Diwu Qing Rou frowned. This word Chu struck a nerve.

“Prime Minister, you suspect that it is... King of Hell Chu?” Gao Sheng asked cautiously.

“It’s hard to tell.” Diwu Qing Rou quietly thought for a while, and then let out a long sigh, “Young masters Chu... Young masters Chu... Even though the young masters of the great clans are not making any move, they are all gathered at Heaven Reaching Tower. If there is chaos at Heaven Reaching Tower that would be true chaos.”

“If they are young masters of Upper Three Heavens... they are truly valued guests!” Diwu Qing Rou slowly said, “If they are valued guests, I will come to greet them early tomorrow morning.”

“Prime Minister, you will come to greet them yourself?” Gao Sheng stammered in surprise.

“If they are indeed young masters from Upper Three Heavens, I have no plans to lower myself.” Diwu Qing Rou said softly. From his tone, it was not clear as to what he was inferring.

Chapter 273: Eternal splendor, sun and moon shine together

Tonight, Continent Center Citadel was still chaotic, but Ask the Heavens Sword was not seen, and Underworld Saber never appeared.

Even though they did not appear, the Jiang Hu crowd never stopped competing for them. By now, many descendants of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint and Underworld Saber Saint had died needlessly.

However, no one noticed that, in this night, many masked people in black were moving about mysteriously. They moved in the background, but their martial skill was powerful enough to scare people.

They came and went unseen. They stood in the middle of the city as they carefully watched the areas where Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber might potentially appear.

In this night, there was not a cloud for thousands of miles. While it was not a full moon, it was still very bright.

In an unknown corner, under the protection of the night, Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber secretly met.

Under the moon light, Dong Wu Shang, Luo Ke Di, Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong quietly sat on a large pine looking like four little squirrels in a meeting.

“You have made your decision?” Dong Wu Shang asked gravely.

“Hmm.” Ji Mo quietly nodded.

“If we do that, our clans would probably get pulled into it as well.” Dong Wu Shang said without a trace of emotion on his face.

“So what.” Ji Mo’s face no longer had the usual look of cynicism. In fact, it was even a little pensive, “With the appearance of Nine

Tribulations Sword, it would be a matter of time before Middle Three Heavens gets cleansed. If the Ji clan is to fall from this storm, it would not matter if it happens a little earlier. However, if the Ji clan could use this opportunity to take a step forward instead, I would be really excited."

Ji Mo was looking serious to this point when a look of mockery appeared on his face, "Moreover, in this training event, my beloved elder brother is the leader. Cough cough. I doubt that he would even open his eyes to look even after things are confirmed, and the saber and the sword are placed in front of his face..."

Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong's shoulders shook. Dong Wu Sheng almost laughed. He controlled himself and said, "That's right, your elder brother is the one of a kind in the history of Middle Three Heavens..."

"Such praises, I can only keep my eyes open and watch." Ji Mo sighed, "Even though I know you guys are speaking the truth, it is still difficult to take in."

"What I find strangest is... why your Ji clan allowed your elder brother take the rank of eldest young master. Even stranger is the fact that your lazy elder brother... how does he cultivate to such level... Even stranger still is why I would care..." Luo Ke Di frowned. His countenance looked as if he was discussing some academic issue.

"What you should really find strange is why your open mouth is like a waste pit. Even when it is closed, the stink still comes out!" Ji Mo glared.

Rui Bu Tong let out an "ah" and laughed. He rolled right off the tree and immediately crawled back up. He hit his head on the tree trunk, but still laughed silently with a pained look on his face.

Dong Wu Shang was truly helpless.

He was stuck with these punks. Having a serious discussion about

anything was simply impossible.

“Don’t worry. Your Dong clan will be fine. Your elder brother, Dong Wu Lei is someone with self-control. Plus... From what I know, your elder brother has superior strength. There is no need to worry...” Ji Mo comforted him.

“But that is not necessarily the case with my elder brother.” Luo Ke Di frowned and sighed, “That bastard Luo Ke Wu might seems cool, but, let me tell you, it is all fake. His temper is beyond your imagination. Once he goes crazy, there is nothing he would not do.”

“Aren’t you around?” Ji Mo looked contemptuously at Luo Ke Di, “At a key moment, couldn’t you alert him?”

“Alert him? What if that ruins big brother’s grand plan? Wouldn’t you all have my skin?” Luo Ke Di cried out.

“You can make your own decision!” Dong Wu Shang said, “But this time, Gu Du Xing’s Gu clan will definitely suffer a big loss. Mo Tian Yun would definitely place them in front of the fire. And those two brothers, Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue, are ambitious and narrow minded. They are also currently in a power struggle...”

“That is the Gu clan’s problem. It is for Second Brother Gu to worry about. We don’t have to bother with it.” The other three said in unison, “Besides, we have been really annoyed with Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue. If we can cause those two bastards to run into trouble... Gu Du Xing might get very happy and not shed a tear.”

“The truth is Gu Du Xing wants to chop off the heads of those two himself.”

“If that’s the case, let’s get ready.” Ji Mo looked at the sky and said, “Round moon, our opportunity is here.”

Dong Wu Shang nodded solemnly.

Luo Ke Di suddenly seemed to have thought of something. He

hugged his stomach and laughed silently. Even tears were coming out of his eyes.

“What are young thinking about?” Dong Wu Shang was truly annoyed. This punk looked like he had mental issues.

“I just thought of the names of you two Dong brothers… Mother… Ahwooh…” Luo Ke Di desperately held his stomach.

Dong Wu Shang immediately became curious, “What about our names?”

“You and your elder brother, Dong Wu Lei… Hahaha…” Luo Ke Di laughed with his mouth wide open. The other three could clearly see Luo Ke Di’s tongue shaking madly…

“What is it?” Ji Mo scratched his head.

“Listen to this… Dong Wu Lei, animal kind (TLN: another similar sounding thing). Ahwooh…” Luo Ke Di laughed uncontrollably, “As for Dong Wu Shang, it’s even more meaningful. Animal king… Ah, Dong Wu Shang, you, you… even animals place you on top…”

Before he could finish, Dong Wu Shang punched him. Luo Ke Di’s laughter immediately ceased, and his face turned black and blue as he fell of the tree.

Dong Wu Sheng’s face was filled with killing intentions as he turned and looked at Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong who really wanted to laugh but could not. He gritted his teeth and asked, “Is it very funny?”

“Not funny, not funny!” Ji Mo shook his head like a rattle drum, “I did not understand anything Luo Ke Di said.”

Rui Bu Tong nodded endlessly like a pecking chicken, “Yes, yes. I did not understand one thing.”

“Hmm!” Dong Wu Shang’s head was popping with green veins as he yelled, “Leave!”

Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong went down from the big tree with sweats

on their heads. They ran into the night. In a distance, Ji Mo could be heard laughing hysterically and saying, “Animal kind, animal king... Haha, mother*, second young master Luo is talented. A real scholar...”

Rui Bu Tong’s howling could also be heard, “Hahaha...”

Dong Wu Shang held his fist so tight that the cracking of his knuckles could be heard loudly, but Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong were long gone...

Dong Wu Shang jumped down and grabbed Luo Ke Di as he was trying to escape and gave him a mad beating!

“I was wrong! Fourth brother, I was wrong. Beloved fourth brother... I was wrong... Oh, oh, big fourth brother so magnanimous... Hahaha, ahwooh, it’s too funny...” Luo Ke Di howled in pain while begging for mercy, but he also laughed as well. At the moment, it was not clear whether he was enjoying himself or suffering. His whole body shook so much that one could not discern if he was laughing or getting beaten...

Dong Wu Shang enjoyed giving a merciless beating. Each punch was sincere to the bone...

The moonlight gradually rose to the top. There was a slight dent in its brightness, but it still shined in the air.

All of a sudden, from some place within Continent Center Citadel, a beam of light created a circle like the sun and shined blindingly in the night sky!

However, this beam was not too large; it was only the size of a fist. But it was extremely concentrated. In addition, because it was late at night like this, it got everyone’s attention.

Within moments, countless travelers discovered this strange phenomenon in the sky. They could not help but look up and attentively gaze at the sky.

Right after, a change appeared. Another beam shot straight into

the air. The sky suddenly became peaceful. It seemed as if there were one sun and two moons in the sky.

One waxing moon and one full moon!

In the quiet of the night, two piercing screams emitted from two different directions! Right after that, the two beams disappeared.

There was only one moon left in the sky.

There was complete silence.

But that strange scene was already imprinted in everyone's eyes. Most people were surprised, "What just happened?"

At the same time, two white figures suddenly appeared! Under the moonlight, the white figures seemed even more mystical like immortals flying down from heaven!

In midair, the two did not say a word. They suddenly separated into two different directions. Each one was carrying with him a sharp and terrifying sword aura as they moved like lightning for the two directions where the two light beams just appeared.

Swordsmen!

These two handsome young men with jade-like appearance were, surprisingly, swordsmen!

Their white figures flashed and they disappeared in a blink of an eye! Heaven and earth returned to its silence!

Also at that same time, dozens of even faster black figures shot toward those directions as well. In the night, the sounds of sleeves ripping through the air rang out endlessly.

Dozens of majestic golden crowns suddenly appeared in the night! All of the Jiang Hu people watched this scene and shivered!

This stage belonged to martial experts only!

At this point, ordinary people had to retreat whether they wanted to or not!

Dozens of King level masters!

Motherf*... what happened?

Chu Yang's figure was like a thunderbolt as it turned into a white streak in the air. He was showing a look of urgency and determination to achieve his goal.

But by the time he landed, three King level masters in black had already appeared.

While his speed was fast, it was still no match for King level masters.

Chu Yang glanced around before gradually changing back to his elegant demeanor. His fluttering white outfit shined brightly in front of the three people in black.

"The speed of the three seniors is truly fast." Chu Yang said gently with a little shyness of youth. He slowly spoke, "Even though I used all of my strength and had a head start, I still fell behind."

"Young master Chu is too kind." The three masked people in black did not dare to be impolite after hearing such a comment.

"Hmm, may I ask if the three seniors discovered anything upon arriving first?" Chu Yang asked earnestly.

"May I ask what young master Chu meant by discover?" A King level master rolled his eyes and asked back.

Chapter 274: The great clans react

“I thought that shiny thing seemed fun. Haha...” Chu Yang laughed frankly and said, “I have a little sister; she likes shiny things most. I want to buy it for her to play. She’s just a child; you seniors must find it laughable...”

“Little sister.” The three King level masters rolled their eyes. Motherf*, these young masters are definitely not ordinary. He can lie and his heart doesn’t skip a beat; it’s as if he is just eating breakfast.

They did not expect even this innocent looking youth had this kind of ability.

“That’s right, we also thought it looks fun. Haha...” The three King level masters were not stupid either. While they belonged to three different clans, they were magically of one mind at this moment.

“Hahaha...”

“Haha...”

Everyone tacitly understood each other’s hidden intentions and simply smiled.

The sound of wind was heard once more. More people landed. While their faces were covered, everyone knew that only those they knew were able to get there at such fast speed.

“Any discoveries?”

“Hmm.”

The three King level masters who arrived first on the scene did not bother with mannerisms toward the question of the newcomers as they did with young master from Upper Three Heavens Chu Yang. They only snorted and flew off.

“Show off!” Among the martial experts who came after, one spat

and cursed, “Seeing how you people did not fight with each other, it’s clear that you did not find anything!”

His words were exactly right. If they did discover something, the three King level masters that came first would probably have fought each other to the death.

“I will also leave first.” Chu Yang politely cupped his fist, smiled, and took two steps back. Then he jumped up to the air and disappeared without a trace.

“He is truly a young master of Upper Three Heavens. This kind of demeanor is truly beyond words.” One of the King level masters said in admiration.

Right away, everyone jumped, and the crowns in the air also disappeared in a blink of an eye.

Heaven Reaching Tower.

The young masters of Middle Three Heavens, with the exception of Ji Zhu who was snoring in his slumber, were all waiting.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

The martial experts who went out had returned. Each one urgently went into the room of his young master.

All of Heaven Reaching Tower immediately became quiet.

Everyone remained in their room as they anxiously discussed something.

“The light of the sun and the moon? The sun and the moon shining together?” Ao Xie Yun frowned and stood up. He paced back and forth muttering, “Perhaps it is not...”

The martial experts of the Ao clans remained quiet as they sat facing him. All of them were racking their brains trying to search through their memories.

“Ask the Heavens Sword Saint? This person definitely did not exist. As for Underworld Saber Saint, this is even more

nonsensical!" Ao Xie Yun frowned and said, "I always thought that this was a scheme by King of Hell Chu to deal with Diwu Qing Rou and delay Great Zhao's conquest. But with the sun and the moon shining together today... I have doubts..."

"I think this is just some people trying be make it look mystical." A King level master said, "After all, such a situation is too bizarre. How could only a saber and a sword create such a strange phenomenon?"

"Only a saber and a sword?" Ao Xie Yun sneered, "What about Nine Tribulations Sword then?"

Everyone immediately became silent.

"Investigate!" Ao Xie Yun said slowly, "For the time being, don't be hasty to make a move. But we have to notify the clan so they could examine all of the written records. It's best to find the rare volumes and search through them. See if they can find any phenomenon of the sun and moon shining together."

He slightly frowned and said, "I think I have seen something written about that. But I can't remember it well..." Ao Xie Yun sighed.

Under his leadership, three King level masters immediately gathered together. Using their spirit, they formed an Acoustic Spirit Orb.

This was the best way for relaying information; it was also the most advanced way in the Nine Heavens continents! If there were not three masters of King level and above, this could not be initiated!

But it could transmit important information the desired destination in the shortest of time! Plus, there was no error.

Such a method of information transmission could not be done by ordinary clans in Middle Three Heavens. They could use the strength of the entire clan and not be able to accomplish it even

once!

“Sun and moon shining together; there must be something behind this!” Mo Tian Yun said in a low voice. Right after he heard the report, he had already decided that thing was not so simple.

“Two young masters of Upper Three Heavens have come here in person. Plus, given such a phenomenon in heaven and earth, they are definitely not ordinary items!” Mo Tian Yun did not cease to pace back and forth in the room. A ray of suspicion flashed in his eyes, “Bastard… We have all been duped by Diwu Qing Rou?”

The line of thought of Mo Tian Yun was completely different from that of Ao Xie Yun.

The first thing Ao Xie Yun thought about was verification, but the first thought in Mo Tian Yun’s head was being duped by others.

“Don’t bother me.” Mo Tian Yun slumped down to his chair. With his chin resting on his fists, he fell into contemplation.

The most pride-worthy thing about Mo Tian Yun was the fact that he never forgets anything after seeing it just once. No matter what document, he just needed to look through it once, and he would remember it in his head clearly. Even after a very long time, he only needed to concentrate, he could remember it again.

He sat for a long time; his brows knitted tighter and tighter together. All of the clan’s documents he had read since he was young until now appeared in his mind. They were like a small stream flowing continuously.

Time slowly passed by.

“Get out! What sun and moon shine together? Gibberish!” Eldest young master Ji Zhu immediately hugged his blanket and went back to sleep after he heard the report. He only revealed a hairy leg as he yelled loudly, and the sound of rhythmic snoring rang out once more. The two King level masters helplessly looked at each

other and walked out.

“Sun and moon shine together?” Dong Wu Lei sat cross-legged on a futon in the middle of the room. He thought for a while and said, “Everyone think over this a bit; what is the meaning behind this?”

This was the reaction of the Black Saber clan. (TLN: Remember? The Dong clan is famous for using dark sabers.)

“Sun and moon shine together?” Luo Ke Wu got up from his bed with gleaming eyes, “The two of you, one stay close to Mo clan’s Mo Tian Yun, and the other follow the Ao clan’s Ao Xie Yun. If they move, we move! If they remain still, we remain still! Stay close and don’t let anything escape from your sight.”

This was the reaction of the Luo clan; it was possibly the reaction that required the least effort.

Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue looked at each other and frowned, “Why don’t we go over and ask Mo Tian Yun? If there is something good… Our Gu clan may not get to eat meat, but we can follow behind and get some broth.”

“All of the clans are reacting? They figured out why the two young masters of Upper Three Heavens come here?” Li Xiong Tu’s beard unfurled outward slightly as he growled, “Regardless of whether they are useless or useful, we must get them first before all else! The three of you will be in charge of this!… What? No problem. No matter what clan it is, rob from them and discuss it after!”

“Saber and sword shine together; light of sun and moon together…” Tu Qian Hao’s reaction had its own uniqueness, “We just need to watch closely and not act rashly. When the target appears, let them kill each other first. We should only take advantage when we can. If necessary, we will kill! No matter what, we cannot make a mistake…”

“Saber and sword, sun and moon. Hmm, I seem to remember

something about this. It was from a text of the clan. But which one?" Xie Dan Qiong's white face still carried a feminine shyness as before, but two rows of thin brows slowly came together.

"Hmm, saber and sword appeared at the same time; light of the sun and moon shine... No, that's not right. It's at night..." Xie Dan Qiong slowly recalled; his voice was so tiny it was barely audible, "More than ten thousand years ago... No... eight thousand years ago... no, that's not it. More than six thousand years ago..."

He frowned and suddenly slapped his own thigh, "Yes! That's it!"

"What is it? What does young master recall?" The two King level masters of the Xie clan jumped.

"More than six thousand years ago, there was a martial expert that rose and quickly disappeared." Xie Dan Qiong's phoenix eyes flashed sharply. His two hands never moved, but two dreamy jade flowers suddenly appeared. The slowly twirled in his rosy hands.

"This master excelled in both saber and sword and reached Saint level in both!" Xie Dan Qiong looked down and said, "This saber and sword madman was Dong Fang Cang Qiong!"

"Dong Fang Cang Qiong?" The two King level masters were in the middle of a daze when they suddenly called out like a flash of lightning.

"Dong Fang Cang Qiong was called a sword and saber madman; only he was deserving of that title." Xie Dan Qiong said softly, "Sun saber, moon sword; cut down immortals and kill saints; shine for eternity; reign supreme alone; the heavens in his hands, saber and sword madman!"

"According to legends, when Dong Fang Cang Qiong made his move, he shocked Upper Three Heavens because he was at Saint level in both saber and sword! It could be said that he was at the pinnacle. He only appeared for a short period of twenty years, but sun saber and moon sword turned Upper Three Heavens upside

down!”

“Legends said that whenever his saber and sword left their sheaths, a beam of sunlight and a beam of moonlight immediately appeared.” Xie Dan Qiong said softly, “Twenty years later, somehow, a martial expert of Heavenly Three Star Clan suddenly appeared and started killing in Upper Three Heavens. No one was able to fight back. Dong Fang Cang Qiong was the top person at the time so he had the duty to go and fight that martial master from the heavenly clan by himself! Since then, he was never heard from again. That martial master from the heavenly clan also stopped appearing since. Therefore, the phenomenon ‘saber and sword, sun and moon light, shining together’ also went away since...”

In Xie Dan Qiong’s hands, the two dreamy jade flowers spun quicker and quicker. He white face reddened, “These are not Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber; could they be the Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword of Saber and Sword Saint Dong Fang Cang Qiong?”

The bodies of the two King level masters from the Xie clan suddenly shook with a look of shock on their faces.

No one knew that Xie Dan Qiong kept quiet the fact that his encyclopedic knowledge was second to none in Nine Heavens!

“But truthfully... Given the strength of our Xie clan, getting this is wishful thinking.” Xie Dan Qiong’s gaze was calm as he spoke, “The only way is to achieve victory during chaos... From now on, we remain inactive!”

“Inactive?” The two King level master repeated in unison.

“That’s right. Inactive!” Xie Dan Qiong said softly, “Our clan’s strength is no match for the Dong can, Ji clan, Mo clan, Ao clan... But when these two weapons are identified, they would fight each other fiercely. You should know that even when tigers fight, there would definitely be injuries; let alone the fact that it is a fight between superpowers.”

“Given our strength, we would probably pay with our lives if we don’t have enough patience.”

Xie Dan Qiong said calmly, “We need to deal with thousands of changes with inactivity; it is only chance.”

Chapter 275: Beyond the Heavens Sect is not well

In another room, Ao Xie Yun suddenly came to, “Saber sword madman?”

Next to him, the eyes of the three King level masters also brightened with shock.

“Sun and moon shining together; saint in both saber and sword!” Ao Xie Yun took a deep breath, “If this is true, then... this is definitely no minor matter!”

Without waiting for the three King level masters to voice their opinions, he waved his arm and said, “But we still have to be cautious before this is verified! We definitely cannot let our intention be exposed!” He held back the excitement he was feeling and said, “That young master Chu is probably not being truthful. Given his character, he was probably trying to get information or even possibly bait us.”

“We must not make a wrong move.” Ao Xie Yun said cautiously, “You all must not get overexcited or become impulsive. As the situation progresses, you must be even more careful in all of your moves, your words, even your coughs! In your actions, even each walking step, you must think clearly! Understood?”

“If they are not Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword of saber sword madman, this is a conspiracy! And this conspiracy is aimed straight at the great clans of Middle Three Heavens. If that is the case, we absolutely cannot allow it to succeed!”

Ao Xie Yun slowly walked back and forth. His voice grew calmer, and he said in a low tone, “If they are indeed Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword from saber sword madman... this is going to be a battlefield! Once we get involved, we will not be able to get out even if we want to. We may even involve the clan in Middle Three

Heavens and cause everything to be destroyed within moments! But this is a rare chance that only comes every few thousand years!”

“Be careful, be careful! To the... extreme!” Ao Xie Yun took a deep breath. A sharp light flashed in his eyes, “Whether this is real or fake, it is a game of chess! And we still don’t know who is behind it. Such an opponent is truly worthy of all of my efforts!”

Mo Tian Yun came to from his contemplation. He frowned and said in a low but determined voice, “If it is true that the sun and moon shined together, they are Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword from saber sword madman. Back then, saber sword madman fought with Heavenly Three Star clan and never returned! His two extraordinary heavenly weapons also disappeared without a trace...”

“According to legends, if the two heavenly weapons, Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword, were to come together, they would create a worldly phenomenon. Separately, each blade is ordinary. When the two heavenly weapons meet, the secret of Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword would be revealed, and they would be invincible! It was because of Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword that saber sword madman was able to reach Saint level in both sword and saber!”

“If we can get Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword, my position in the Mo clan would not be shaken by ten thousand Mo Tian Ji! Plus, the Mo clan could champion over Middle Three Heavens and go up to Upper Three Heavens to fight for the position of one of the nine great clans!”

The more he thought about it, the more excited Mo Tian Yun became.

“However, we must be careful and not do anything sloppily.” Mo Tian Yun muttered. A look of determination gradually appeared in his calm gaze, “If there is going to be a fight, our opponent is none

other than the Black Saber clan, the Ao clan... The rest are of no consequence!”

In any case, he was different from Ao Xie Yun.

At the Ao clan, Ao Xie Yun was already identified as the successor. His position was fortified so he still managed to be clearheaded in front of such a tempting opportunity. He carefully calculated all pros and cons and thought about how to deal with them.

Within moments, he thought about success and failure and how they would happen. He also thought about how to go about them.

However, Mo Tian Yun might currently be the eldest young master, his position was not solidified. He had a younger brother Mo Tian Ji who was not inferior to him in strength or intelligence who was silently watching and could replace him at any moment...

On this ground, the two were completely different.

Other great clans were also having their own discussions, but the timeframes were all very short!

After all, these heirs already made up their minds.

However, the two people who should have made the decisions first, Ao Xie Yun and Mo Tian Yun, were actually the ones who contemplated for the longest time.

Mo Tian Yun thought over and over again, but could not be certain of the situation. Ao Xie Yun thought and thought, but was also unable to make a decision...

Nonetheless, there was one thing that the two felt the same about: Once the fighting starts, the two great clans at the frontline of this competition were theirs. No matter what, in the end, it would be their two clans.

Each young master of the great clans had his own ulterior motive!

Ah, there was one person without one: The eldest young master of the Ji clan, Ji Zhu! This young master was currently sleeping and snoring; he did not pay any mind to the King level master from his clan who was frowning and feeling very anxious...

Not long after Chu returned, Gu Du Xing entered through the window.

“Well?” Gu Du Xing asked.

“Almost done.” Chu Yang said, “But the situation is far from the point of madness. It seems that another appearance has to be made.”

“Okay.” Gu Du Xing said, “But only one can make an appearance next time. The two cannot appear together; it would cause too much of a commotion. It would best to make an appearance in the name of Ask the Heavens Sword or Underworld Saber.”

“Of course.” Chu Yang smiled mysteriously.

“This next location is also the ultimate one; did you pick out one yet?”

“I am still thinking. It comes down to the royal palace or the imperial tomb!” Chu Yang gasped, “Or... Golden Horse Riders Department’s headquarter?”

“Royal palace, imperial tomb... Golden Horse Riders Department?” Gu Du Xing took a deep breath.

The heart of boss Chu was a little too vicious... Gu Du Xing could imagine that if they were successful at those places... Great Zhao would be in more than just ordinary chaos.

It would definitely lead to a great disaster for the entire nation!

*****

It was also this very same night that Wu Yun Liang led over three hundred remaining people of Beyond the Heavens Sect to Iron Cloud Citadel!

Wu Yun Liang had went there many times and had many secret conversations with Tie Bu Tian, but each time, Tie Bu Tian's attitude was reserved and distant.

At the time, Tie Bu Tian was still a prince!

However, in this trip to Iron Cloud, it was late at night, and Tie Bu Tian was now an emperor of a nation. Unexpectedly, he came to welcome them himself. This gave Wu Yun Liang full face and made the people of Beyond the Heavens Sect feel great glory.

After some pleasantries and greetings, they were brought into the citadel. Tie Bu Tian looked around for a while and finally asked Wu Yun Liang in a low voice, "Sect master Wu, many I ask where the honorable senior Meng might be?"

Wu Yun Liang smiled and said, "Junior martial brother left Lower Three Heavens and entered Middle Three Heavens already."

Tie Bu Tian sighed and said regrettably, "It seems that senior Meng does not want to stay."

"Yes. He said that by remaining in Lower Three Heavens he would become Diwu Qing Rou's means to deal with his disciple..." Wu Yun Liang sighed softly, "Junior brother is prideful and loves his two disciples to the bone. How could he allow himself to drag them down? So he decided to leave!"

Tie Bu Tian sighed.

He was feeling a little bit of a loss. He had planned to meet Chu Yang's master and junior martial brother to see what kind of master was able to train such an extraordinary disciple. He never thought that Meng Chao Ran had already left.

He had left so easily without the least bit of hesitation.

"May I ask, Your Majesty, what do you have plan for our Beyond the Heavens Sect now that we are here?" Wu Yun Liang inquired.

He did not plan to ask, but Tie Bu Tian's surprising courtesy

made Wu Yun Liang pop this question.

Tie Bu Tian's countenance became calm once again and he said casually, "Beyond the Heavens would, of course, remains Beyond the Heavens Sect. Its strength would not be dispersed, it would not be integrated with any other sect; it is its own self. What does sect master Wu think?"

"Oh... but, but..."

Wu Yun Liang was a little dumbfounded. He had planned to have Beyond the Heavens Sect join in with Bu Tian Pavilion. After all, Chu Yang and Wu Qian Qian were at Bu Tian Pavilion. It could be said that those two were in positions of great power. Bu Tian Pavilion and Beyond the Heavens sect could be said to have close ties...

However, the words that Tie Bu Tian just spoke had shattered his fantasy. Furthermore, the fact that Tie Bu Tian's countenance suddenly became cold also told him that there was no need to discuss this matter any further!

Thinking about this, Wu Yun Liang laughed to himself: Tie Bu Tian did not come to welcome me. He clearly came to welcome Meng Chao Ran! He respects King of Hell Chu. As for me, the master of Beyond the Heavens Sect... cough, cough, I am definitely not worth mentioning...

After the people of Beyond the Heavens Sect were properly settled, Tie Bu Tian left some of his officials to entertain them and returned to his palace.

A while after, Wu Qian Qian was escorted there by Bu Tian Pavilion.

"This will not do!" Wu Qian Qian firmly shook her head, "Chu Yang had said that anyone may join Bu Tian Pavilion, but Beyond the Heavens Sect may not!"

"Why?" Wu Yun Liang was somewhat surprised. Just a few

people joining would have been fine. He never thought that Chu Yang had completely blocked this option.

“If Beyond the Heavens Sect wants to continue to exist in Iron Cloud and flourish, it cannot enter into politics; it also cannot enter Bu Tian Pavilion!” Wu Qian Qian said, “These were Chu Yang’s words. He knew that if you brought people here, you would have them enter Bu Tian Pavilion or some other position of power. He told me to tell you not to think about that anymore!”

“Chu Yang once said that if you do that, Beyond the Heavens Sect would be fine before Iron Cloud is out of danger. But once Iron Cloud is no longer in crisis, Beyond the Heavens Sect would be destroyed by the hands of Tie Bu Tian!”

“No ruler would allow his officials to join forces with martial sects! Any wise ruler would not let this happen!”

“If Beyond the Heavens Sect is not destroyed because it is used by Diwu Qing Rou, but is destroyed by the blade of the one it has sworn allegiance to, that would be the greatest tragedy!”

“Those were Chu Yang’s words.” Wu Qian Qian said, “I think his words make a lot of sense!”

Wu Yun Liang looked dejected for a long time before saying, “Is that so?”

Chapter 276: The black robe is still here, you are still here

“Yes, Chu Yang also told me to tell you that no matter what the reason you expelled him from Beyond the Heavens Sect was, he is now no longer a person of Beyond the Heavens Sect.” Wu Qian Qian reluctantly said, “Therefore, when you calculate Beyond the Heavens Sect’s strength, you must... must not include him. Otherwise, you will lose.”

“Ahh.” Wu Yun Liang sighed. He was no longer able to tell what he was feeling.

“Chu Yang also said...” Wu Qian Qian lowered her head.

“What else did he say?” Wu Yun Liang frowned and let out a sad laugh.

“He said... if you still want me to remain at Bu Tian Pavilion, it is best that you expel me from Beyond the Heavens Sect!” Wu Qian Qian bit her lip and said painfully, “That way, you can truly... guarantee Beyond the Heavens Sect’s escape.”

Wu Yun Liang sighed.

He became dumbfounded. Before coming here, this possibility did occur to him. But the situation had progressed so fortuitously that he had started lying to himself.

He thought that everything could be done.

His initial intention was to find a way to survive somewhere in a crack between Great Zhao and Iron Cloud; to be able to struggle for a living under the bullying of all the major sects. However, the fight for survival was now too successful. His initial goal was successful before they ever reached the end of the line.

Therefore, he was a little demanding. If the royal court and Jiang Hu prospered together by helping each other, would Beyond the

Heavens Sect not become the number one sect within a few years?

However, at this moment, he received a harsh blow from reality!

“Eldest martial brother, you should not forget that Beyond the Heavens Sect belongs to Jiang Hu.” Meng Chao Ran’s words resounded in his mind, “If you want Beyond the Heavens Sect to join the royal court, the only possible result is the sect would be wiped out with only a few people remaining!”

“The royal court is the royal court, Jiang Hu is Jiang Hu, and a sect is a sect. They cannot exist together; they cannot join each other. Even clans and sects in Jiang Hu are different, never mind Jiang Hu and the royal court.”

“Alright!” Wu Yun Liang’s appearance aged a few years in the blink of an eye. He turned away and said, “Then I will do as you want. You are expelled from Beyond the Heavens Sect.”

Wu Qian Qian took a deep breath. After being shaken for a while, she suddenly felt hopeless and sad.

Chu Yang never said that he was no longer a person of Beyond the Heavens Sect. He also never said that Wu Yun Liang had to expel Wu Qian Qian from the sect.

These things were all from Wu Qian Qian.

When she made this decision, Wu Qian Qian was certain that she was going to sacrifice her youth, her life to... wear the black robe that represented King of Hell Chu!

Perhaps your legend will not be made here. Perhaps you will not be here in the future. Wu Qian Qian thought to herself. Perhaps I will not be part of your future, but I am willing to stay and guard this place in your stead. I will create a legend. The black robe is here; King of Hell Chu is here; you are still here.

You know how I feel, but you cannot return it. I never said how I feel clearly because of my own pride! While I am a Jiang Hu girl and am far behind you in all of your accomplishments, I still have

my own pride and the modesty of a woman! So I did not say anything because I did not want to receive a straightforward rejection. I also did not want to make it difficult for you. However, being here, even with the heartache, even against all odds... I am willing to keep it guarded in my heart and never tell anyone.

Wu Qian Qian quietly told herself. In a moment of silence, she had made a promise to remain steadfast for the rest of her life.

Wu Yun Liang sighed. He did not know what happened, but he could clearly sense that his beautiful daughter, in this moment of silence, was suppressing a breaking heart.

“I will leave now.”

Wu Qian Qian turned and put on a baggy black robe that covered her lanky body. She looked up and walked out. At this moment, whether it was her movement or the air about her, she was carrying herself in a no less awe-inspiring manner than King of Hell Chu! It was a kind of cold and heartless aura!

However, no one knew that behind the cloak that reigned terror was a shattered heart...

Outside, the martial experts of Tie Bu Tian immediately appeared. They surrounded King of Hell Chu, the terror of Iron Cloud, and left in protective formation.

“Eldest martial brother.” Kong Jing Feng walked out from behind a screen, “Qian Qian has truly matured.”

“Yes, matured.” Wu Yun Liang sighed, “So mature that a father like me could not recognize her at all.”

When Wu Qian Qian got back, Tie Bu Tian was already waiting at Bu Tian Pavilion.

“Your Majesty? Why are you here so late?” Wu Qian Qian asked in surprise.

“I cannot sleep. There is something I want to discuss with you.”

Tie Bu Tian let out a sigh. His brows could not conceal his distress.

“What happened?” Wu Qian Qian suddenly became alert. She knew that if Tie Bu Tian showed such a countenance, it was definitely no ordinary matter.

“Bu Tian Pavilion will have to be mobilized. Use all efforts to make a big move. And you, King of Hell Chu will also have to make a few appearances.” Tie Bu Tian said solemnly.

“Hmm, did he run into trouble at Great Zhao?” Wu Qian Qian said, “Diwu Qing Rou is not easy to deal with after all.”

“Yes. Minister Chu was successful in causing chaos at Continent Center! But he also gave Diwu Qing Rou an opportunity. What we have to do right now is prove one thing: King of Hell Chu is still in Iron Cloud.” Tie Bu Tian looked at the black robe on Wu Qian Qian’s body.

“King of Hell Chu is still in Iron Cloud; he never left!” Wu Qian Qian said gravely, “As for the Bu Tian Pavilion’s business, the intelligence should have come to me first. How did it get to Your Majesty? This… is Chen Yu Tong failing at his duties!”

Under Wu Qian Qian’s gaze, Tie Bu Tian suffered a rare moment of awkwardness. He held a serious face and coughed dryly a few times before say, “It’s because I ordered hall leader Chen to come to me first with any news about Great Zhao!”

“But this is not consistent with the way things are done in our Bu Tian Pavilion!” Wu Qian Qian said bluntly, “I ask Your Majesty to withdraw this decision!”

Tie Bu Tian’s mouth opened wide as he looked at her for a long time. Finally, with a conflicted look, he said, “Okay.”

“As for Bu Tian Pavilion’s move, I will arrange it tonight.” Wu Qian Qian said casually, “If there is nothing else, please go back, Your Majesty.”

This was the right that Chu Yang left for Bu Tian Pavilion.

Whatever he left, she could not allow it to be lost. That was why Wu Qian Qian was showing such a firm stance right now.

Not one compromise! Even if it was with... the emperor!

This was Wu Qian Qian's greatest pride!

But this firm stance suddenly gave Tie Bu Tian a strange feeling in his heart.

Tie Bu Tian looked at the fierce mask on Wu Qian Qian's face in amazement. Then he looked at the black robe on her body with a strange gaze. It was as if there was a longing and reminiscing, as if...

Wu Qian Qian was shocked. Looking at Tie Bu Tian's gaze, Wu Qian Qian could not help but think of a few things.

She thought of how this emperor still does not have a queen or concubines and could not help but feel guarded. Could it be that he has feelings for me?

Wu Qian Qian gently took two steps back and said coldly, "Your Majesty, this is Bu Tian Pavilion. Please... be mindful!"

Tie Bu Tian immediately panicked. He coughed continually. His shameful look carried a touch of astonishment.

Intentions toward you? How could this be?

"In that case, cough, cough... I will leave now!"

"Take care, Your Majesty."

Watching Tie Bu Tian leave under the protection of the shadow guards, Wu Qian Qian's gaze immediately turned sad. Chu Yang, you bastard! You left me here. If the emperor... Hmm, if that is the case, I would sooner die than let him have what he wants.

My heart is buried deep because of you!

Wu Qian Qian's confused gaze gradually regained composure. Her gaze became as cold as ice as she swung her arm and yelled out

in a deep voice, “Order hall leader Chen to come here!”

Within moments, Chen Yu Tong appeared outside of King of Hell Chu’s room at the speed of light.

He was about to knock when the door suddenly opened. King of Hell Chu in his black robe and mask appeared like a ghost.

“Hall leader Chen! Your courage has grown these days!” King of Hell Chu said in a cynical tone, and Chen Yu Tong got so scared his soul almost escaped him.

“This subordinate does not dare!”

“Haha, not dare? Is there anything that hall leader Chen does not dare to do?” Wu Qian Qian laughed darkly, “Before I could even see our own Bu Tian Pavilion’s intelligence, the emperor already received it.”

Chen Yu Tong immediately dropped down on his knees, “Minister, this… this was His Majesty’s secret order! I… I dared not go against it!”

“I don’t care what difficulties you have!” Wu Qian Qian was slightly heartless as she said, “You have to take responsibility for your action! Hall leader Chen, do you think the people of Heavenly Secret Hall should be punished? Or should you take the punishment by yourself?”

“I volunteer to take the penalty myself.” Chen Yu Tong’s whole body trembled.

Minister Chu’s action becoming harder and harder to predict. If Heavenly Secret Hall was going to be punished because of him, everyone would know that he caused it. He already went through that once; if it happened one more time… he would probably lose his position soon.

“Two hundred paddles!” Wu Qian Qian said casually, “Go get the punishment yourself. If you are one short, you can go ahead and retire!”

“Get out!” Wu Qian Qian yelled, “If something like that happens again, you better hold on to your head!”

Chen Yu Tong fled in fear.

Guards in all directions were as silent as clams.

Wu Qian Qian remained silent for a moment then said, “Give my order for hall leader Cheng to prepare for action!”

“Yes!”

While no one was looking, Wu Qian Qian, this weak girl, had slowly matured. However, behind that maturity process was a shattered dream and a broken heart...

Chapter 277: Two powers collide (1)

On the way back to the palace, Tie Bu Tian frowned. Sitting in his carriage, his expression was surprisingly… shocked.

I only wanted to be the first to know how he is doing in Great Zhao; whether he is in any danger or not, and whether his plans are going smoothly. Facing such great pressure, whether he could handle it… That's all.

However, Wu Qian Qian reacted so fiercely earlier. It's too much like…

"Both are pitiful people." Tie Bu Tian let out a sigh. In an unwitting moment, he spoke these words.

"What is His Majesty's order?" The two shadow guards asked at the same time, "Both are pitiful people? Who?"

"It's nothing." From within the carriage came Tie Bu Tian's quiet and embarrassed voice. The two shadow guards replied and disappeared.

In the carriage, Tie Bu Tian reached up his hand and touched his burning face. As he thought of what he said, he could not help but internally laugh at himself; that just could not be helped.

Pitiful? Who is more pitiful?

At least Wu Qian Qian still has the black robe and the position of King of Hell Chu. But me… I don't have anything.

Does being born into an imperial family means I have to be alone?

Tie Bu Tian sighed. Does anyone know that this emperor absolutely does not want to sit on this throne? All men and women's greatest dream is the golden throne. But does anyone know that my greatest dream is to be like you people? To wake up at sunrise and go to bed at sunset, be a normal person and go

through my days peacefully.

Tie Bu Tian wearily closed his eyes. His body gently swayed with the carriage as he slowly felt his heart's loneliness like a hundred thousand feet tall block of ice.

The path of a ruler was a lonely one.

And I, Tie Bu Tian, must definitely be the loneliest of all! Because...

*****

In the middle of the night!

Diwu Qing Rou's ugly face was somewhat scary, "Sun and moon shined together? You verified this?"

"It's verified!" Jing Meng Hun's countenance was also not easy to look at. The moment he saw sun and moon shining together and dozens of bright crowns suddenly appearing in the air, it was as if he saw the sky collapsing.

"Sun and moon shine together, in the past ten thousand years, there is only one thing that could have happened. And it involves a saber and a sword." Diwu Qing Rou took a deep breath and said, "Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword! Truly devious! King of Hell Chu, you have planned well!"

Jing Meng Hun was a little shocked.

When Diwu Qing Rou said these words, he was clearly grinding his teeth!

To be able to make Diwu Qing Rou have such an ugly expression, it was truly an incredible even. To be able to make Diwu Qing Rou grind his teeth, it was especially hard to imagine...

"All connected, all connected." Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said slowly, "This is King of Hell Chu's countermeasure. I never thought that King of Hell Chu would react so fast and so deviously like this!"

“React? Devious?” Jing Meng Hun was puzzled. Even if the competition becomes fiercer, we can still follow your plan and deal with it. What is there to be afraid of?

“You don’t understand. The scariest thing is not how they are competing… It is scary in the location King of Hell Chu will choose to have this competition detonate!” Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said, “There are two locations King of Hell Chu could pick. One is the royal palace, and two is Golden Horse Riders Department’s headquarter! The royal palace would be best; there might be some chaos for a while, but it is still acceptable. But if it explodes at Golden Horse Riders Department’s headquarter… all of our efforts will go down the drain, and all of Continent Center will also become a big mess. In fact, there is likely to be a loss to Golden Horse Riders Department personnel…”

“You should know that such a saber and sword will attract the great clans of Middle Three Heavens.” Diwu Qing Rou frowned, “And these people, even if they were lying in front of our door with their last breath, we still don’t have the ability to recruit them. We can only treat them and send them on their way… Given our position, it is not the least bit beneficial…”

“Tomorrow, I will go to Heaven Reaching Tower myself. Besides meeting the two Chu young masters, I will have to test the reactions of the great clans a bit. I hope… I hope that the worst case scenario will not occur…”

A look of worry appeared in Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes as he spoke slowly.

Early the next morning, Chu Yang had just left his bed when he heard a knock on the door. The manager of Heaven Reaching tower, Du Fa Cai, came to visit.

“Young master Chu, haha, did you sleep well?” Du Fa Cai smiled warmly.

“Not bad.” Chu Yang washed his face as he spoke casually, “I

have troubled you. Manager Du, how do you know that I like this kind of Purple Orchid Fragrance most? I really cannot figure that out."

Du Fa Cai said even more respectfully, "Young master is very classy; I had to run to a few places and finally managed to get Purple Orchid Fragrance from the royal palace. I am happy that it suits young master."

Chu Yang wiped his face with a towel and said, "It's still early in the morning; does manager Du have some urgent business?"

"Yes." Du Fa Cai said respectfully, "It is the Prime Minister of Great Zhao. Diwu Qing Rou sent people to bring over a card. He wants to meet with you two young masters this morning. This little person is passing the message on his behalf."

"Great Zhao's Prime Minister... Diwu Qing Rou?" Chu Yang closed his eyes and showed a look of contemplation. His tone also showed a trace of suspicion.

"This Prime Minister Diwu is not an ordinary character!" Du Fa Cai kindly cautioned him, "With the strength of one person, he surprisingly brought Great Zhao to its current powerful state..."

Then he went on to talk about the subject nonstop.

"It seems that this Prime Minister Diwu left a big impression on manager Du..." Chu Yang smiled carelessly, "If that is the case, how could I not give manager Du face?"

He immediately received the card, and Du Fa Cai backed out.

Diwu Qing Rou's card? Chu Yang immediately looked at the gold plated card and could not help but feel absurd. He smiled and opened it. The only thing written on there was: Peace to Brother Chu; ceremoniously, Qing Rou.

The words were like flying dragons and dancing phoenixes. They were strong and disciplined looking fortified like a mountain. There was even a sense of awe-inspiring power!

These words were analogous to words from an extremely close old friend who had not been seen for many years.

“With these words, Diwu Qing Rou is probably intending to lower my status.” Chu Yang smiled and put the card to the side. He thought to himself: It seems that Diwu Qing Rou is still suspicious that I am King of Hell Chu!

In any case, this punk still has the guts to come here... he has some courage. Chu Yang thought and suddenly shuddered. It’s not just a little courage... Perhaps Diwu Qing Rou, himself, is also a martial expert? This possibility cannot be eliminated...

Chu Yang had originally planned to have Gu Du Xing receive Diwu Qing Rou if he came, but he had changed his mind at this moment.

If Diwu Qing Rou wants to come, why should I hide?

Diwu Qing Rou is already suspicious of my identity. If I avoid meeting him, would that not make him more suspicious?

If that is the case, I will play one round with the current number one genius!

A meaningful smile flashed in Chu Yang’s eyes. This person is my greatest opponent in Lower Three Heavens. If I don’t meet him, there will probably be regrets later no matter who wins and who loses.

“Diwu Qing Rou is coming here?” Gu Du Xing ran over from the next room in shock.

“Mm.”

“Should I deal with him or should you?”

“Let me!” Chu Yang said, “But you should also not leave to avoid complications.”

Gu Du Xing nodded. A sword intention flashed in his eyes, “Well... I can kill him with one slash...”

“Definitely not!” Chu Yang said in terror, “Who is Diwu Qing Rou? If he dares to come here, how could he not be certain of his safety? I guarantee that if we make a move, not only will we not be able to kill him, we will also have to pay with our lives!”

Gu Du Xing said casually, “I was just joking.”

Chu Yang sighed. How could he not have seen that Gu Du Xing was internally flashing with killing aura? He said seriously, “You absolutely cannot make a move! Got it?”

“Yes!” Gu Du Xing said reluctantly.

“Your hostility also cannot be shown!” Chu Yang prompted.

“Yes.”

“Your air…”

“Yes.”

“Your sword aura…”

“Don’t you feel troublesome?”

Chu Yang did not say anything…

That morning, as the sun gradually shined over the land, Diwu Qing Rou leisurely sat on a simple carriage to go to Heaven Reaching Tower.

Accompanying him were only two people.

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian! With these two King level masters on his side, Diwu Qin Rou believed that even if Heaven Reaching Tower was a bay of dragons or a cave of tigers, it would not keep him from leisurely coming and leaving.

“Prime Minister, young masters Chu have been waiting for you for a while.” Du Fa Cai came forward and said.

“Mm, I have troubled manager Du.” Diwu Qing Rou smiled, “Did young masters Chu say anything?”

Du Fa Cai was startled, “Young master Chu did not say anything.

But from his expression... it seemed that he is too accustomed to this."

"Too accustomed?" Diwu Qing Rou laughed and said, "Manager Du, I have to bother you to lead the way."

When Diwu Qing Rou walked up to the last floor, he suddenly sensed something and could not help but look up.

A vast field of white snow appeared in front of him.

Two youths in snow white outfits quietly stood at the top of the stairs to greet him. There were only two people, but Diwu Qing Rou suddenly felt an awe-inspiring air all around.

At the same time, a faint flash of sword aura moved in the air. It was not a killing aura or a pressure. It was a kind of spirit that swordsmen emitted during an unguarded moment.

Such spirit, even peak level swordsmen could not completely hide.

The fact that they were able to cover up to this point was enough to show that these two young swordsmen were using all of their efforts. And this kind of attitude was a show of friendliness.

It seemed that these two young masters Chu were a little bit curious about this visit of Diwu Qing Rou, but they were not the least bit hostile.

"Prime Minister Diwu coming here in person? I, Chu Fei, welcome you." At the top of the stairs, the young man smiled brightly and warmly and performed ceremony without any arrogance or flattery.

He did not show flatter, arrogance or modesty. It was as if it was just another ordinary welcoming of a guest, and he was the sincere welcoming host.

"I do not dare. I have taken the liberty to come and visit. Being greeted by the two young masters Chu like this is, I feel ashamed."

Diwu Qing Rou smiled warmly, “Since you two young masters have come to Continent Center, I should use wine to wash the dust off for you. It’s a pity that duties have made me busy, I was not able to until now. I have made the two young masters look down on me.”

Chapter 278: Two powers collide (2)

Chu Yang smiled lightly and conveniently said that he did not dare as he looked intently back. He could only see that Diwu Qing Rou was a middle aged man of about forty years old. He had dragon brows and phoenix eyes with a long three-part beard that fluttered in the wind. His hair was as black as ink. It seemed as if there was a mysterious veil that covered his body, and it could not be seen through by ordinary people. But people only needed to see him once to feel that he was extraordinary to his bones, that he was not a person of this world!

Diwu Qing Rou's current appearance was more like that of a recluse in the mountain. If a person was to look at his outer appearance, they would not be able to imagine that this tranquil and relaxed person was the prime minister of a nation! This was none other than the number one figure that held control of millions of soldiers in his hand!

He could change the weather with a flip of his hand. Even his enemies could only struggle in the palm of his hands! This was Diwu Qing Rou.

However, he was now a person filled with peace; his face was elegant and kind. It was as if he was an idealist filled with love who, when faced with the suffering of world, sighed in heartache.

"Prime Minister, you are too kind. Please come in!" Chu Yang made way and gestured his arm in welcome.

"Young masters Chu, please." Diwu Qing Rou smiled politely and replied.

When Diwu Qing Rou came up from the stairs, Chu Yang walked shoulder to shoulder with him as they went forward.

"This is..." Diwu Qing Rou smiled and looked at Gu Du Xing. Gu Du Xing's fierce gaze also stared back. His sword aura flooded

everywhere!

He looked at Diwu Qing Rou... like he was looking at a corpse!

This was the kind of gaze that could kill all and suppress the world! There was no hesitation! Anyone facing his sword would be a dead person!

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian showed their powerful aura, and their four eyes looked at Gu Du Xing. The indifferent attitude of their opponent made the two King level masters unable to maintain their patience.

This was contempt!

Whether it was Diwu Qing Rou's position or the majesty of the two King level masters, they could not allow such contempt to exist in front of them!

The three auras suddenly slammed into each other!

Gu Du Xing's countenance paled momentarily, and his body backed up by half a step. But he immediately stood firm once more and his gaze became even colder. His sword aura flooded out!

"This is my big brother, Chu Nan." Chu Yang coughed with embarrassment and said, "Please don't mind him. My brother does not like to talk. He cultivates..." Chu Yang glanced at Gu Du Xing with a questioning gaze. Gu Du Xing nodded without saying a word.

"He cultivates... the heartless sword way." Chu Yang's voice was slightly lowered.

"Oh..." Diwu Qing Rou, Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian simultaneously understood. No wonder this person's face was as icy as a corpse. He was cultivating the heartless sword way. He could not be blamed for this.

Thinking so, they immediately pulled back their auras. But Gu Du Xing did not. His sword aura went everywhere. Both sides of

the wall unexpectedly showed dozens of deep sword slashes!

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian looked at each other in shock! How old was their opponent? It was surprising that he had achieved this much! A Revered level swordsman who even used his own body as a sword to emit sword aura!

Such a person was definitely a heavenly talent in sword art!

However, while cultivating heartless sword at such a young age might leave him unrivaled, it was tantamount to him having no youth. In terms of human life, this was regretful...

This kind of flaw would grow to become more of a psychological demon as the person's cultivation grows. Thinking about this, Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Fa glanced over at each other with a look of schadenfreude.

"I can see that your brother is cultivating heartless sword way." Jing Meng Hun was a ninth grade King level master, but, facing this second grade Revered Sword Artist, he did not expect that his opponent's fighting and sword aura to rise without stopping!

It was no matter that his own aura was like a roaring ocean, his opponent's sword aura remained unwavering and icy as it advanced forward. It broke forth without any hesitations!

Jing Meng Hun had the feeling that the fighting style of this young swordsman was definitely berserk. Even if his whole body turned into minced meat, he would still pierce people as long as he had his sword in his hand.

Facing this young Revered Sword Artist, Jing Meng Hun could not believe that he felt like he was going to sweat. Such heartless sharpness, if he could cultivate to third grade Sword King, a ninth grade King level master like Jing Meng Hun would probably have to run away.

This was related to how potent his strength was. It had to do with the special characteristic of heartless sword way! The

moment the sword moved, there was no holding back! Given Jing Meng Hun's cultivation level, he could totally kill a third grade Sword King. But his opponent's berserk offensive would also create an unrecoverable injury!

An injury to the spirit created by a sword, once formed, would stop the person from advancing for the rest of his life!

Jing Meng Hun would absolutely not do such a thing. So he asked Chu Yang out of curiosity, "I wonder if young master Chu also cultivates with the sword?"

His tone hid an air of interrogation that made it somewhat difficult for people to hear. This was because he had held power for a long time and always talked to his subordinates like so. It had become a way of talking down to people; in fact, it was not really meant to be disrespectful.

But after hearing it, Diwu Qing Rou could not avoid frowning.

"You are?" Chu Yang eyed Jing Meng Hun suspiciously.

"My surname is Jing; I am the Prime Minister's subordinate and also his guard." Jing Meng Hun said calmly.

"Oh..." Chu Yang sighed and said with a soft smile, "Brother Jing is right. I also cultivate with the sword. But it is not heartless sword way; it is..." He thought a little as if he was trying to determine whether he should say it.

Diwu Qing Rou's careless gaze flashed with a though: Is this young master Chu too good to be true?

Then he heard Chu Yang say, "... It's the earthly sword way!"

After answering the question, he slowly looked up and said leisurely with a warm smile, "Brother Jing, this is the first time we meet so I have answered your question out of respect for Diwu Qing Rou..."

Diwu Qing Rou was just suspicious of his good temperament

when his ugly side immediately showed itself.

Chu Yang's gaze on Jing Meng Hun gradually grew cold, but a gentle smiled remained on his face just as before. He said slowly, "But whenever this young master is talking with someone, I dislike another person jumping in. If it happens one more time... This young master would not care if you are a King level master or an Emperor level master... This young master definitely won't care if you are the leader of Golden Horse Riders Department or Silver Donkey Riders Department; you will have to pay a price. When the master is talking, his servants should not cut in! Understood?"

At the final statement, his eyes suddenly flashed like a sword. Looking at Jing Meng Hun, he was filled with the majestic aura of a person at the position of power even though he was only a youth!

Gloriously standing at the top, his gaze was arrogant and fierce. He looked at the King level leader like he was an ant!

He was originally calling himself, I. But now he was saying young master this and that with the air of a top young master of Upper Three Heavens. And like that, everything showed!

I am mad!

My cultivation is not equal to yours, but I dare to scold you in your face! Point right at your nose; are you angry? I dare you!

You dared to talk down to me? I will squish you from high above with my condescension!

Within moments, Jing Meng Hu's face turned purple. His eyes looked like they were going to shoot out fire, and his chest was going to explode from anger! He took a deep breath and tried to maintain his composure. He lowered his head as he unconsciously tightened his fists!

However, he did not dare to move. His opponent was... a young master of Upper Three Heavens! Given the strength of an Upper Three Heavens clan, killing a King level master like him was as

easy as flipping their hands; they would not have to waste much effort at all!

Furthermore, he came here today with Diwu Qing Rou for an important mission. If Diwu Qing Rou did not give an order, how could he dare destroy Diwu Qing Rou's plan?

"Let's let this go." Diwu Qing Rou's expression remained as calm as before without showing any dissatisfaction, "Meng Hun, you should not speak anymore."

Right after he finished giving off steam, Chu Yang turned toward Diwu Qing Rou and said warmly, "I was too hot-tempered. I could not hold back and gave your servant a lesson in your stead. Haha, I hope the Prime Minister does not mind. Haha, it has been my flaw since I was young. I really don't like the kind of servants that are disrespectful and don't know their place. I must look bad in front of the Prime Minister."

Diwu Qing Rou said casually, "It's not a problem. Young master Chu might have been a little hot-tempered, but you are right. However, this King level leader Jing, is not my servant. He is my friend of many years. We are like brothers..."

Like brothers!

When Jing Meng Hun heard these words, his heart suddenly felt warm. The grievance that he just had to bear suddenly almost disappeared altogether!

"Oh?" Chu Yang's pupiled constricted, and he smiled kindly, "Perhaps... I just scolded the Prime Minister's friend?"

Before these two even sat down, they already had a virtual battle of wits! One person carefully probed, and the other poured all efforts into dealing with the probing!

"Young master Chu is a valued guest from Upper Three Heavens. If we were to bother you with little things like this, it's..." Diwu Qing Rou smiled casually and said, "...somewhat ungracious."

“Without rules, there would be no standards!” Chu Yang smiled warmly and said, “If the Prime Minister wants to interact with people like me, it would be best that you teach your subordinates to be more obedient!”

Then he laughed and said, “But since the Prime Minister has come here today, you are my guests. Please. I already learned of the Prime Minister’s arrival early this morning so I prepared good tea. We should not bother with formalities.”

He immediately bigheartedly led Diwu Qing Rou into his room.

In the collision of two powers, King of Hell Chu won round one! Diwu Qing Rou had to fall behind, but it was a bit unfair. It was because… his opponent was not reasonable at all!

All of Diwu Qing Rou’s actions were perfect. His opponent seemed reasonable at first, but he became moody unexpectedly. He became unreasonable and changed his attitude as he pleased. This kind of personality truly made Diwu Qing Rou a little aggrieved!

However, his opponent was currently with the power to be irrational. This was the reason why Diwu Qing Rou had to suck on this bitter pill as if it was sweet; he could not speak up even though he was suffering.

Chapter 279: Two powers collide (3)

The reason was that Jing Meng Hun inserted a few words. Given Jing Meng Hun's position in Diwu Qing Rou's organization, he definitely had the right to chime into the conversation. Not only that, he even had the right to make his own decision!

Was being the top leader of Golden Horse Riders Department ordinary?

However, now that he jumped in, Chu Yang grabbed that and insulted him!

He did it with a domineering and arrogant attitude, and did not use any reason.

He mercilessly destroyed Diwu Qing Rou's majesty!

Diwu Qing Rou came to investigate. So if Chu Yang was timid, Diwu Qing Rou would see right through his true identity. Therefore, Chu Yang could not be so.

On the contrary, he was a young master of Upper Three Heavens! What nobility? What transcendent status?

Diwu Qing Rou, you are a prime minister of a secular state. The fact that I welcome you is already giving you too much face! I don't care if you are a number one leader or number one dog; in my eyes, you are nothing!

If I want to turn from you, then I will! Whatever I want, that's how it will be!

I will use your subordinate's flaw to destroy your position! I might be impolite; what can you do to me?

This time, Chu Yang intentionally caused trouble and made himself look extremely arrogant. But with his demeanor and his temperament, he revealed the perfect attitude of a young master of a super clan from Upper Three Heavens!

Jing Meng Hun was furious, and Diwu Qing Rou was annoyed. But minister Chu was also feeling a little anxious.

After all, he was facing Diwu Qing Rou!

Who could have guessed, what an anomaly like Diwu Qing Rou could see?

Entering the room, the two sides sat down in their respective positions.

But the harmony from earlier was completely shattered by King of Hell Chu!

“Please, this is Pure Purple Tea I picked from Heavenly Purple Mountain. Even in Upper Three Heavens, it is the only one!” Chu Yang hospitably brought out the tea, but there were only two spots on this tea table.

One was for the owner, and the other was for a guest.

It was very clear that this young master Chu did not prepare any place for subordinates so there was no mentioning of them enjoying his good tea...

While Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian were angry, they could only stand behind Diwu Qing Rou and wait on him.

“Good tea!” Diwu Qing Rou took one sip, closed his eyes and carefully tasted. After a while, he opened his eyes and said with a sigh, “It has been so many years since I was able to drink this tea. I truly miss it. This cup of tea made me think of my youth. Haha, I am thinking about old times again.”

“Oh? You drank this tea before?” Chu Yang frowned.

Diwu Qing Rou’s background was still unknown. Some people said he was an orphan; some people said he was a descendant of a great clan; some people said he appeared mysteriously... But no one was ever able to verify any of these claims!

Diwu Qing Rou’s background was much more mysterious

compared to that of King of Hell Chu.

When he heard these words, Chu Yang immediately became guarded. Could it be that Diwu Qing Rou came from Upper Three Heavens?

“Haha.” Diwu Qing Rou laughed meaningfully and said, “Elder master Chu, senior Chu, is he well?”

Chu Yang said seriously, “Thanks to heaven’s blessings, elder master is as healthy as before! He is still breaking through in his cultivation.”

“It is true that good people are blessed.” Diwu Qing Rou took in the steamy aroma of the tea and showed a look of nostalgia. He said slowly, “That year, ancestor Chu, senior Chu Bi Xiao, traversed Upper Three Heavens with only a great sword. Many lives were ended by that sword. He fame soared and his majesty reigned. Younger generations still remember him and admire him to no end...”

“I think the Prime Minister remembers wrong. Our ancestor did not use a sword.” Chu Yang frowned; he was slightly unhappy, “Prime Minister, this cannot be said carelessly...”

“Haha.” Diwu Qing Rou’s gaze flashed and he said, “Perhaps I remember wrong?”

“Humph.” Chu Yang grunted coldly and said, “Prime Minister, I am feeling good today. If it was someone else from the Chu Yang, they probably would not like you joking around like that.”

If Chu Yang wanted to pretend to be the young master of the Chu clan, how could he not ask the person in blue about the Chu clan?

Not to mention anything else, that day alone, the person in blue had to be tortured with answering all of Chu Yang’s questions. So Diwu Qing Rou’s questioning would not have any results. Minister Chu even carefully asked about the outhouse and practically made the person in blue collapse!

But Diwu Qing Rou's focus was, of course, not this point.

"Ah, so much time has passed, and I have forgotten things somewhat. There is just one thing that still remains in my mind." Diwu Qing Rou sighed sadly and said, "Back then, I met Brother Fei Ling a few times. I know about Brother Fei Ling's life-long regret. But I can only feel sad for him. I wonder if it is solved..."

"It's a sea full of people; how could they search." Chu Yang sighed sadly, "This emotional ailment of Uncle Fei Ling... I worry that it would be difficult to heal it..."

As he was talking, Chu Yang showed the attitude of not be able to hide his problem; it was a look that showed even the Chu clan of Upper Three Heavens had internal problems...

However, he internally shuddered: This person even knows that the Chu clan misplaced a child?

Diwu Qing Rou's expression slightly softened.

"Young master Chu, in this trip to Lower Three Heavens, is there something important?" Diwu Qing Rou asked.

"Something important... Haha, the important thing has already been said by the Prime Minister. We came because of this." Chu Yang complained, "In fact, we want to go out and play so we followed our fourth uncle..."

"Oh, fourth master Chu is currently in Continent Center?" Diwu Qing Rou was slightly surprised.

"Huh huh." Chu Yang grunted without confirming or denying.

Diwu Qing Rou laughed and said, "So that's it."

"But when we got here, we discovered something interesting." Chu Yang seemed very excited, "Prime Minister, you are not an outsider so I will be frank."

"What is it?"

"I am very interested in this saber and sword!" Chu Yang's gaze

was as sharp as that of a hawk, “I must get them! Prime Minister is the leader here; I hope you will be able to assist us!”

Pausing a little, young master Chu seemed as if he made up his mind and said, “If the Prime Minister helps us obtain the saber and sword, I, Chu Fei, will help the Prime Minister with one thing. You should understand.”

Diwu Qing Rou’s head almost exploded.

I still have not verified your identity, and you are already making a request? And the saber and sword that I am currently dealing with at that?

“Young master Chu, I am much older than you. I have a different explanation for this matter.” Diwu Qing Rou said sincerely, “As far as I know, this is a conspiracy by King of Hell Chu.”

“I don’t care if it is pubic hair or wool. I want the saber and sword!” Chu Yang grunted, “Prime Minister, even if I, Chu Fei, am stupid, I can still tell if the saber and sword are real or fake.”

“I don’t mean anything by it. I just worry that young master Chu would be punished when you get back to your clan.” Diwu Qing Rou said calmly with a very sweet tone.

Chu Yang immediately recognized that he was somewhat hot-tempered and sat back in his seat. He smiled without and sincerity and said, “If the Prime Minister will not assist us, it is still not a problem. Us brothers will take our chances and play a little.”

Diwu Qing Rou’s expression faltered, and he said, “I will send people to investigate.”

“Oh, you don’t have to bother if it is too much trouble.” Chu Yang leaned his body back and said, “I have a few methods for getting them.”

Diwu Qing Rou had a kind of helpless feeling.

This young master Chu in front of him turned out to be

unexpectedly thorough. Could it be that he is a real young master of the Chu clan? But how is it that a young master of the Chu clan shows up here?

In the exchange that just passed between them, this young master Chu spoke as if there was nothing out of the ordinary as Diwu Qing Rou tried to force something out by talking about the Chu clan's martial arts, problems, and major characters. Plus, he even checked with the rules of Nine Heavens! But his opponent replied fluently. Plus, for each issue, he seemed to counterattack sharply.

There were even times when this young master Chu spoke freely while Diwu Qing Rou was struggling to keep it together.

"In any case, I came here today because I have something I would like to ask young master Chu about." Diwu Qing Rou said, "Young master Chu is at a high position; you naturally can see further. Please give me your wisdom." Diwu Qing Rou suddenly lowered himself.

"What is it?"

"At the present, three countries stand at the top, Iron Cloud, Great Zhao and Limitless Nation! In the periphery, small countries are everywhere. In young master Chu's opinion, what should be done with such chaos? Among the nations, who are the heroes? Who will dominate?" Diwu Qing Rou sighed and said, "Because of this, my mind remains restless..."

"Oh... this..." Chu Yang acted as if he was put into a difficult situation. He looked at Diwu Qing Rou with a bit of surprise. This kind of attitude clearly hinted: I have never thought of the issue you are asking me about.

"Huh? What does young master Chu think?" Diwu Qing Rou asked humbly.

"This, ah, cough cough cough..." Young master Chu rolled his

eyes and thought for a while. Then he laughed and leaned back saying, “No matter who wins and who loses, it has nothing to do with me. Don’t you agree?”

The meaning behind this was very clear: I can’t answer your question. And I never thought about it. So I simply answered with another question. After all, I am not involved with this. You can go ahead and ask whoever you want.

Diwu Qing Rou was surprised.

No matter how the question was answer, he would be able to sense the feelings within. This was, after all, King of Hell Chu’s life goal! If this was indeed King of Hell Chu, one statement against his own belief would be seen through by Diwu Qing Rou.

No one was capable of desecrating his own ideals!

For a person, his ideals are as important to him as his first love! A man who has been jilted by his love could curse all women in the world. But who would have the heart to think of the love of dreams as a whore?

Even if that was the truth, he could not bring himself to say it! Just thinking about it a little was enough to break one’s heart!

The person who had an injury to the heart was himself!

However, he never expected that his opponent came out unscathed.

“The Prime Minister is asking so many questions; let me ask you something.” Chu Yang asked, “From what you are saying, you are well-versed with Upper Three Heavens, and you know the Chu clan like the back of your hand. Could it be that you are from Upper Three Heavens?”

Diwu Qing Rou did not say anything, but he gazed deeply at Chu Yang in an odd manner.

Chu Yang felt unsettled, but he still remained vigilant and asked,

“May I ask, what Upper Three Heavens clan does the Prime Minister come from?”

Diwu Qing Rou continued to look at him strangely for a long time before saying enigmatically, “After talking for so long, is young master Chu still unable to see my origin?”

Chapter 280: Detonation

Chu Yang looked blankly. He immediately scratched his head and said with the naiveté of a youth, “I really don’t have any impression. Why? Should I know?” Implication: Are you some big shot?

Diwu Qing Rou smiled strangely and shook his head. He said, “You should not know. You should not know.”

Chu Yang was shocked. Could this person belong to an extremely famous sect in Upper Three Heavens? Could it be that they were at such level that the Chu clan would not know them?

But… what kind of rationale was this?

Diwu Qing Rou continued to maintain his mysterious demeanor as he stood up and said slowly, “Yes… Young master, I am very happy to have met you today. If you have no other commands, I will take my leave.”

At this moment, dozens of thoughts flashed through Chu Yang’s mind.

Could it be a flaw that I don’t know his identity? Can’t be.

If not, could it be that Diwu Qing Rou wants to use this retreat to advance in the situation?

He thought quickly, but his countenance did not change. He smiled and stood up, “Please leave leisurely. I will not send you back.”

He acted as if he did not care whether the other person was leaving or not.

Diwu Qing Rou laughed and said, “I will not bother you with these complicated matters anymore.” He looked as Chu Yang as if to say: When you leave, I will send you. I wish you a good trip…

Chu Yang replied warmly, “Please leave well.”

Diwu Qing Rou, Jing Meng Hun, and Yin Wu Fa smiled as they left the room and walked down the stairs.

Chu Yang warmly saw them off at the top of the stairs. There, he watched Diwu Qing Rou leave.

In this second match, King of Hell Chu fell behind!

It was because he did not know for sure what Diwu Qing Rou meant with those last words. Did he see through Chu Yang's flaw or not?

No matter how broad Chu Yang's mind was, a shadow of doubt would haunt him from now on.

Diwu Qing Rou walked down one flight of the stairs, and Chu Yang was about to return to his room. At that very moment, Diwu Qing Rou suddenly turned and watched as Chu Yang turned. He called out in a deep voice, "Chu Yang!"

Chu Yang acted as if he did not hear anything and took a step before turning back. He looked in Diwu Qing Rou's direction and hesitantly asked, "Prime Minister?"

Diwu Qing Rou's hawk-like gaze went up the steps and straight at Chu Yang's face. Chu Yang unexpectedly felt a burning sensation on his face as if there was an invisible fire!

"Oh, nothing. I saw wrong." The four eyes looked at each other. One pair carried an innocent surprise with a trace of indifference while Diwu Qing Rou's were searching for something. A long while after, Diwu Qing Rou laughed and walked down.

With an "oh," Chu Yang did not bother and went back to his room.

Back in the room, he sat down. After a long time, cold sweat suddenly poured out from all over his body. Within moments, his white outfit was soaked.

Since the moment Diwu Qing Rou arrived until the time he left,

Chu Yang still was not able to ascertain whether he won or lost! In the end, was he successful with his cover or did Diwu Qing Rou see through his true identity? Chu Yang could not believe that he could not be certain of this.

Since his rebirth, this was something that had never happened before!

Furthermore, Diwu Qing Rou still had the upper hand! While Chu Yang had some success, in the grand scheme of things, victory was Diwu Qing Rou's hand.

Chu Yang essentially did not see through Diwu Qing Rou's mind.

Diwu Qing Rou's yell right before he departed had an unexpected effect of upsetting Chu Yang's spirit and scared him momentarily. If it were not for the fact that his spirit had been through two lifetimes and was much more fortified than that of ordinary people, he would have involuntarily replied at the critical moment...

"That was truly dangerous!" Gu Du Xing said to Chu Yang.

Chu Yang slightly nodded. The two looked at each other and could see the terror in each other's eyes. Diwu Qing Rou's aura definitely could not be dealt with by ordinary people.

Diwu Qing Rou finally frowned when he got to the bottom of the stairs.

Given his intelligence, he still could not verify whether this young master Chu Fei was King of Hell Chu or not. The moment they met, his opponent managed to destroy his majesty. The kind of arrogance that belonged to descendants of great clans was thoroughly demonstrated by his opponent.

After that, his offensive mode was lost. Some things looked as if he had the upper hand, but, in reality, Diwu Qing Rou could not see through anything.

And that yell had made it clear to Diwu Qing Rou that he had

lost.

If he was able to verify the truth, that yell would have been unnecessary! If it was Chu Fei, he did not need to call him. If it was Chu Yang, he especially did not need to call him! But he did call.

This was his last resort.

Diwu Qing Rou sighed. This youth, whether he was Chu Fei or Chu Yang, was someone to fearful of! This was unquestioned.

He was about to go to the rooms of the Middle Three Heavens young masters when he suddenly sensed something. He turned to see a person in blue softly walking in. He stepped on the stairs, but it seemed as soft as clouds flying in the wind.

Diwu Qing Rou turned, and the other immediately sensed this and turned as well.

Four eyes looked at each other, and the atmosphere thickened. A power pressure flooded out from that person in blue.

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian were terrified, and hastily activated their energy to defend against it. However, they discovered that they unexpectedly could not activate their energy. It was as if their lives were now being controlled by someone else. They were completely without control. Their souls practically left their bodies.

Right after, Diwu Qing Rou removed his gaze, and turned to walk away. On the steps, that person in blue also quietly disappeared.

It was as if it was merely a passing glance, and nothing happened.

“Martial expert!” Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian glanced at each other. Both could feel cold sweats running down their backs. They were both of the same thought that perhaps this person was the bodyguard of those two young men. A person of the Chu clan.

It was not until noon when Diwu Qign Rou left Heaven Reaching Tower.

After leaving Chu Yang's room, he went to look for three people: Ao Xie Yun, Mo Tian Yun, and Dong Wu Lei.

The reactions of the three made Diwu Qing Rou very pensive.

On the way back, he did not even speak. He just frowned and contemplated.

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian were both a little surprised. While the attitude of these eldest young masters of Middle Three Heavens were somewhat unclear, their purpose for today was to verify whether young master Chu was King of Hell Chu or not.

In the eyes of these two people, this young master Chu Fei was definitely not King of Hell Chu! This was already a certainty!

No matter from what aspect, his portrayal was flawless!

If this was not a descendant of the Chu clan, how could he know so much inside information of the Chu clan? Even Jing Meng Hun, who was scolded by Chu Yang, was not at all suspicious of his identity.

"Prime Minister, what do you think?" Jing Meng Hun carefully asked. They were now on the road and were not too far from the minister's manor. There were very few people walking on the road.

"What do you think?" Diwu Qing Rou looked at him.

"This Chu Fei should not be King of Hell Chu!" Jing Meng Hun said decidedly. Yin Wu Tian quietly nodded in agreement with this idea.

"This is not certain." Diwu Qing Rou slowly shook his head, "We cannot be certain right now. But... I still think that he is King of Hell Chu in disguise!"

Jing Meng Hun and Yin Wu Tian was a little startled. Things were already so certain, why was Diwu Qing Rou still thinking about it? If King of Hell Chu was indeed a young master from a

super clan of Upper Three Heavens, then what could they do?

If they continue to fight and annoy the Chu clan, then what would happen?

“Just quietly watch as things progress! Even after King of Hell Chu makes his move, I can still break it.” Diwu Qing Rou was, of course, also feeling worried.

Before he left, he was eighty percent sure that he would be able to determine whether this Chu Fei was King of Hell Chu.

But from the time they saw each other to the time he left, this certainty dropped by sixty percent. He did not dare to make judgement. Then he saw the person in blue, Diwu Qing Rou’s certainty dropped by half.

And the half that he had, Diwu Qing Rou was also not certain of. Must a person from Upper Three Heavens know Diwu Qing Rou’s identity? In other words, even Diwu Qing Rou felt uncertain.

However, not knowing his identity was still cause for a little suspicion.

As for the rest, they were essentially Diwu Qing Rou’s sixth sense. While young master Chu Fei did not show any antagonistic intentions toward him, Diwu Qing Rou’s intuition almost stubbornly insisted that this was indeed King of Hell Chu!

This kind of feeling was slightly irrational!

But he acknowledged it!

“Starting tonight, begin influencing the people we captured!” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly, “King level leader Yin will be in charge of this!”

“King level leader Jing, you must carefully monitor all movements tonight!” There was a look of deep exhaustion in Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes, “Tonight… if those saber and sword don’t appear, then there is nothing. But once they appear, there would probably

be a terrifying storm of blood!”

Jing Meng Hun solemnly complied.

Time quickly passed, and night came in a blink of an eye.

With the coming of the night, the group of Middle Three Heavens young masters opened their eyes wide and watched all directions carefully.

On top of Heaven Reaching Tower, a few people with fluttering sleeves stood motionless as they watched the light of the oil lamps in the darkness.

Inside Continent Center Citadel, there were people standing in wait on top of every tall structure. Moreover, these spots were all taken by King level masters!

But tonight was quiet. Even the fighting between Jiang Hu people greatly lessened.

Ask the Heavens Sword did not appear; Underworld Saber did not appear. Of course, Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword were even more elusive.

Another day passed.

Late this afternoon, someone suddenly discovered Ask the Heavens Sword, but it only caused chaos for a short five minutes. The person with Ask the Heavens Sword successfully broke free and disappeared. All of the King level masters’ efforts were in vain!

The next night, some discovered and chased after Ask the Heavens Sword. After a fight, he escaped once again.

In a few days, such situation happened more than twenty times. It was said that that the people holding Ask the Heavens Sword and Underworld Saber were filled with injuries and exhausted...

More than a dozen King level masters acted like wild dogs as they ran to and fro. Everyone was filled with anger and on the verge of exploding...

Finally, on the fifth day, also a full-moon night, a period of pandemonium began!

When the moon was high in the sky, in Continent Center Citadel, two beams of light, seemingly very far from each other, shot straight up. Sun and moon shined together once more!

The entirety of Continent Center Citadel was like a massive vault of explosives that detonated!

Chapter 281: Chaos in Continent Center

The full moon rose above everyone's head and shined mysteriously. Its glorious splendor enveloped the sky and shined down on the earth.

The martial masters had concentrated for days so they were a little fatigued. Everyone was starting to guess that these two were hiding in a mouse hole. The entire citadel was frantically searching for them and they could not be found.

But at this moment, a person suddenly stared at the sky with a gaping mouth. He pointed up and hoarsely screamed!

On top of their heads were now two bright moons! One sun!

While the two new arrivals were not as radiant as true moon or sun, they were indeed present!

Sun and moon shined together!

Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword appeared!

Everyone flew up at once. More than forty crowns shined in the air majestically! Near and far, King level masters gathered increasing their strength!

Two directions, one in the east side of the citadel and one in the middle of the citadel!

Then, the sun signifying Sunlight Saber started to move...

"Ahwooh..." A howl sounded out and the martial masters shot up toward that direction.

The moon signifying Moonlight Saber flashed a little and immediately disappeared. It was as if the owner of Moonlight Sword discovered the strange phenomenon and sheathed his sword.

However, Sunlight Saber still remained. For some reason, this time, Moonlight Sword disappeared, but the sun of Sunlight Saber

still existed as before.

But no one bothered to think about this issue right now! Still existing? Just perfect for us to come and take it!

On the ground, the owner of Sunlight Saber ran in terror.

Some distance away a group of martial masters followed in the sky with a fanatical light shining in their eyes. If Sunlight Saber was appearing now, there was no hope of escaping... The matter at hand was seeing which of the dozens of King level leaders had the strength to take the top position.

There were many people and even more martial experts! But there was only one Sunlight Saber!

Many people were starting to think about enemies, allies, and those who were capable of taking it from them.

All of a sudden, there was a swoosh. Two white streaks came up from behind them!

“Everyone! Master Chu wants this saber!” A voice yelled out as if to announce his right to this saber.

“Master Chu? F*! Who do you think you are?” All the King level masters were angry. In any case, everyone had their face covered so no one would be recognized. In such a situation, who cared about what was Middle Three Heavens and Upper Three Heavens?

Seeing the two white streaks very close to Sunlight Saber, all of the martial masters increased their speed and chased with their lives.

A distance away, in the air, Jing Meng Hun sighed helplessly.

Sure enough! It was just as the Prime Minister predicted!

Sunlight Saber was clearing moving in the direction of the royal palace! Furthermore, it was getting very close to it!

The royal palace of Great Zhao represented the imperial power of Great Zhao! It was also the gathering place of Diwu Qing Rou’s

greatest opposition. In these recent years, the emperor's forces were suppressed by Diwu Qing Rou, but he could not and would not eliminate them completely!

The royal palace was their last stand!

There were many martial experts at the royal palace of Great Zhao! It was far better guarded than the royal palace of Iron Cloud!

However... what was considered many was only mediocre.

For dealing with ordinary Jiang Hu people, they were many. But compared to dozens of King level masters of Middle Three Heavens, they were not many anymore. They were more like... a herd of pigs!

Of course the reaction of Great Zhao royal palace was extremely fast. First, there was a rain of arrows. Then, dozens of figures jumped out and yelled, "Hooligans, you dare to attack on the royal palace. Kill them without mercy!"

Right away, many people jumped up to the wall outside of the royal palace.

The saber flashed brightly with the majesty of the moon. It whistled sharply through the air as it went into the rain of arrows. Bam, bam, bam. The sounds rang out, and the bodies of guards flew into the air. The figure carried the saber and howled with excitement, "Ahwooh... Dog aunt! Dog aunt!"

He entered the palace without a care!

A white streak followed closely behind like a flash! Everyone was very familiar with it. This was the young master of the Chu clan from Upper Three Heavens, Chu Fei!

However, Chu Yang fell into laughter from Ji Mo's dog aunt cry and almost fell down to the ground. Until now, he still did not know what the phrase "dog aunt" from Ji Mo's mouth meant...

In the royal palace, the sounds of warning rang out from all

directions!

“Halt! Halt!” The leader of the royal palace guards roared, “Stop him! Shoot!” He could already see many people rushing in from a distance.

Jing Meng Hun sighed and closed his eyes.

He thought: It is probably better if you don’t say anything. With these words, the royal palace will probably turn into a ruin...

Of course, after the scream of the royal palace guard, a group of King level masters arrogantly jumped onto the royal palace’s beautiful wall without any hesitations.

Right after, there was a boom. The wall surrounding the royal palace collapsed!

These people were all King level masters of Middle Three Heavens. Given such an urgent situation like this, they only needed to be one step behind and the security of the clan could be affected for thousands of years. How could they have any mind to pay attention to some royal palace of Lower Three Heavens?

Naturally, they jumped on it like it was flat ground and rushed in screaming and yelling!

Within moments, they collided. The royal palace guards’ blood flew all over the air!

After that, yet another dozen of King level master came like meteors. They rushed into the royal palace without a care. Right behind them was the great army of Jiang Hu. They poured in like a roaring sea!

Right away, shrill screams was heard from inside. The alarm bells rang out frantically. The sound of collapsing walls in the palace, the sound of fighting, the sound of blades coming into contact... They all mixed into a great pandemonium.

Dust and smoke rose up everywhere!

Jing Meng Hun stood in a distance with his head dropped sadly. It was done! This chaos could not be stopped!

Until now, Diwu Qing Rou still maintained that this was King of Hell Chu's scheme! In fact, after the great clans of Middle Three Heavens verified that they were Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword, Diwu Qing Rou still maintained that this was King of Hell Chu's schemed!

But it could not be stopped.

It was the same as that day when Chu Yang discovered that Diwu Qing Rou used his scheme to gather manpower, and he could not do anything. Right now, Diwu Qing Rou knew King of Hell Chu's scheme, but he could only stand by and watch.

He did not know where King of Hell Chu was and where the sword and saber were going to hit next.

He knew things were going to happen that way, but he was helpless to stop them! For a person who was used to having total control like Diwu Qing Rou, this was true torment.

Seven days ago, King of Hell Chu had to suffer the same. Right now, things were reversed, and it was finally Diwu Qing Rou's turn to taste this feeling.

In these few days, Diwu Qing Rou continued to calculate where King of Hell Chu would detonate this great chaos. After thinking for a long time, he confirmed that the two places would be the royal palace and Golden Horse Riders Department.

Because of this, Diwu Qing Rou gave orders to Jing Meng Hun to move all of Golden Horse Riders Department in the time span of three days and nights. Whatever they could take, they took. Whatever they could bring, they brought. All of the martial experts left.

Golden Horse Riders Department was currently holding only a few of the Jiang Hu people they just caught. The others were also

moved.

Diwu Qing Rou also wanted to move these people, but they did not have enough time. Plus, there were some among them who were still rebellious and unwilling to comply. If they brought those people, there would be a chance of mishap during transport. This would be too costly.

Diwu Qing Rou could not take such a risk. Therefore, he have to leave those people behind.

Currently, Jing Meng Hun watched the royal palace in chaos and finally let out a sigh of relief. At least the royal palace was in chaos, and Golden Horse Riders Department did not run into trouble. This dark cloud had a silver lining.

It was not that Diwu Qing Rou failed to warn the royal palace to be on guard. He might have been one to not care about the emperor, but he was still a person of Great Zhao!

He even sent people to assist the royal family in getting out of the royal palace.

However, Diwu Qing Rou's good will was completely tossed aside by the emperor. Plus, at that time, the emperor even sneered and said, "Diwu Qing Rou, do you think I am an idiot? Attack the palace? Huh, as long as you, Diwu Qing Rou don't attack the palace, is there anyone else in the world that would cause trouble?"

When he heard the news from his messenger, Diwu Qing Rou let out a long sigh. He abandoned his effort with the royal palace.

He knew that King of Hell Chu would make his move. And he was certain!

If there was trouble at Golden Horse Riders Department, all Golden Horse Riders were martial experts. They could retreat quickly. So if trouble occurred, the damage would not be too great. However, the royal palace could not be moved! The people in the

royal palace were also very weak!

Moreover, the royal palace was the heart of the nation!

Since King of Hell Chu had initiated the chaos, he would not be King of Hell Chu if he left the royal palace untouched!

But the royal family did not trust Diwu Qing Rou. They refused his good will, and Diwu Qing Rou could only give up on his efforts!

In reality, he only did it as an insincere gesture.

In the royal palace, fires broke out everywhere!

The blazing fire turned part of the horizon red. Soldiers gathered from all directions to stop the chaos.

Master Chu moved like the wind all over the royal palace in his white outfit. Instead of coming to take Sunlight Saber, he was actually assisting Ji Mo.

Whenever the owner of Sunlight Saber was in danger, young master Chu would fly down and fight fiercely. And whenever, he joined in, the King level masters could not do anything against him.

In front of everyone, who would dare to kill a young master of Upper Three Heavens' Chu clan? Wasn't this a death wish? There were countless witnesses here.

Young master Chu was so imposing, wherever he went, he was unhindered. During the chaos of the fight, the owner of Sunlight Saber would howl strangely, "Dog aunt..." And ran away.

Another chase began...

"It's too dark! I can't see sh*t. Motherf*, wouldn't it be better if we have a few more fires?" Young master Chu yelled.

The King level masters immediately discovered that finding people in the dark was too difficult. Even though young master Chu had a rude mouth, his words were right. No one knew who started it, but everyone raced to set fires...

One King level somehow found the oil reserve of the royal palace and tossed out one barrel after another. Whether they had oil or not, they all burned...

Poof... poof... poof...

Boom... boom... boom...

This was truly... Someone wrote a poem about it: Fireworks end the night; light on fishing boats only enough to put one to sleep; Continent Center Citadel in chaos; midnight fire greets passengers.

Chapter 282: Evil move

In the royal palace, fire lit the sky like it was day time. Clouds of smoke rose up. To say it bluntly, it could be seen from hundreds of miles away!

In Continent Center Citadel, the scene was like that of a falling nation!

The eldest young master of the Ji clan, Ji Zhu, was dragged out of bed by a King level master. With his eyes barely opened, he hazily ran to the royal palace. With King level masters to open the way, his path was naturally smooth. He was in the process of unwillingly joining in the competition. In any case, he would have something to talk about. At this very moment, he suddenly heard: “Ahwooh... dog aunt!”

“Motherf*!” Ji Zhu was stunned for a moment before he cursed angrily. He spat and turned to leave.

“Eldest young master! Eldest young master!” Three King level masters were completely clueless as they hastily chased after him. Each one was extremely annoyed. This eldest young master was not the least bit aggressive.

They could not believe that he just took one look and left. Was he not able to see that all the other clans were fighting each other?

“The Ji clan will leave this competition.” Ji Zhu viciously glared and roared, “Anyone who doesn’t listen can crawl back by himself.”

Then he started back; along the way he cursed under his breath, “Motherf*! Motherf*! Motherf*...”

Right when he left the royal palace, he ran into Luo Ke Wu who asked, “Where are you going?”

“I’m going back to sleep. Is that okay with you?” Ji Zhu glared angrily.

Luo Ke Wu said in annoyance, “Going back to sleep? You are still going to sleep at this moment?”

“Move! Good dogs don’t get in the way!” Young master Ji Zhu’s state of mind was truly very bad. He thought of himself as being played...

“Who are you scolding?” Luo Ke Wu glared. He was about to give chase when the King level masters of his clan held him back, and he only had the chance to put in, “Ji Zhu! Just you remember mother*! I will remember this!”

“This idiot!” Eldest young master Ji Zhu spat contemptuously and left.

Behind him, eldest young master Luo Ke Wu’s group hastily rushed into the burning scene...

Boom. No one knew who did it, but the main hall of the royal palace collapsed...

Ji Mo’s strength was no longer with him.

In reality, he had been exhausted long before. Being able to hang on as he was chased by dozens of King level masters was not easy.

Unfortunately, the person he was waiting for had not come yet! So he had to hang on!

In the thick of the fire and smoke, Ji Mo searched around as he ran. He was immediately overjoyed.

Hahaha, he’s here!

Not too far in front of him, he saw a heroic looking Mo Tian Yun running this way with his clan. On the other side was Ao Xie Yun, also rushing over with the King level masters of the Ao clan.

There were also some King level masters flying over like meteors. Enemies were in all directions. It was indeed a heaven-sent opportunity!

“Spare me! Spare me! I don’t need this saber anymore...” Ji Mo

suddenly cried out pitifully and jumped out.

Upon arriving, Mo Tian Yun, Ao Xie Yun, Dong Wu Lei, and Xie Dan Qiong's groups immediately looked in this direction with desires burning in their eyes.

"You can have it!" Before anyone could respond, Ji Mo tossed the saber from his hand, and turned to run away.

But who was paying attention to him at this time? Everyone's mind and gaze were taken by the alluring saber already.

Under the light of the burning flames, Sunlight Saber shined blindingly. It was as if its light was burning in the heart of everyone as they rushed after it.

It was unclear whether it was intentional that Sunlight Saber flew straight in Mo Tian Yun's direction!

"Presumptuous!"

"My saber!"

"Motherf*! Get the saber for me!" These words came out of Li Xiong Tu's mouth as the eldest young master screamed and gave chase at the same time. His voice was so passionate that it was practically changed.

"Kill..."

Mo Tian Yun was ecstatic. Ao Xie Yun was shocked. Xie Dan Qiong was surprised. Dong Wu Lei gripped tightly onto his saber. Luo Ke Wu howled as he rushed up...

A King level master of Mo clan flew up to grab the saber as it flew in his direction.

Mo Tian Yun had already carefully prepared. The moment he had the possession of the saber, he would immediately leave this place and stop training. He would return directly to Middle Three Heavens instead!

Mo Tian Yun never imagined that he would be able to obtain the

saber at this very moment. As long as Sunlight Saber was in his hand, he essentially held half the secret of become a Martial Saint.

As for the other half, he could scheme, exchange, form alliances... In short, there were many means.

“Stop!”

“Stop him!”

Sounds of people ripping through the air rang out. Countless hidden weapons flew in the direction of the Mo clan. Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh, swish, swish, swish... Hidden weapons appeared over the heads of the Mo clan people a torrential downpour!

It was raining hidden weapons!

The three King level masters jumped out. A fierce cyclone of energy formed around their bodies within moments! In this critical time, the reaction of the three King level masters was extremely fast and extremely accurate.

Blades flashed as they sent the hidden weapons to the side. One person risked his own life and jumped into the hidden weapons with only his energy field protecting him as he went straight for Sunlight Saber!

Just then, an unimaginable thing happened!

The flying saber suddenly stopped!

It hung in midair!

Then it immediately flew back!

“Motherf*! The saber is tied to a thread!” Mo Tian Yun spat out a curse which was rarely heard from him. His handsome face became nasty as he yelled, “Bastard! Son of a b*!”

This kind of failure when success was so close at hand made eldest young master Mo want to spit out blood!

Right then, something flashed. The Sunlight Saber that was

flying back suddenly made a pop noise and dropped down from the air.

Ao Xie Yun was holding a few coins in his hand. Just then, he had used one coin to cut off the thread on the saber.

Currently, the saber was dropping slowly, and its position was, surprisingly, right in between the Ao clan and the Mo clan!

The martial experts of the Ao clan and the Mo clan rushed in like wolves and tigers!

Just then, there was a sudden pop. At the place where Sunlight Saber was dropping, something exploded. A black mist carrying a light fragrance softly flooded out. Within moments, it covered an area of thirty square feet.

The moment the black mist rose up, Sunlight Saber fell to the ground with a clank.

Right in the middle of the black mist.

A mocking voice said, “You should all be careful. This is Bone Dissolving Spirit Dispersing Fragrance. Once it touches you, your bones will turn into black liquid. Don’t blame me for not informing you.”

All the martial experts simultaneously paused! That King level master from the Mo clan was the quickest. One of his hands was already in the black mist. He hastily pulled back, but his hand had become black. At the tip of his fingers, black liquid dropped down nonstop.

The pain was unbearable; he could not help but scream out.

“Petty creature!” Mo Tian Yun and Ao Xie Yun roared angrily as they turned and glared at him.

A young man in black with a shy smile appeared. He stood outside the circle with two subordinates in black standing behind him.

“Oh, I am so sorry. I already said it; why did you put your hand in there?” This young man in black looked like he was extremely regretful, “This, this… that arm is about to become black liquid. What to do? This is a King level master after all.”

This looked gentle and weak at first glance. Plus, he even seemed shy and meek. But his when he made his move, it was unexpectedly cruel! And he was without mercy!

“Take out the antidote!” Mo Tian Yun angrily screamed. The right arm of the Mo King level master was swollen and the black liquid was flowing faster and faster from the tips of his fingers.

With the strength of a King level master, he surprisingly did not have any way to fight this kind of poison!

And right now, the saber was surrounded by this poison!

“Oh, I also want to take out the antidote. But I want that saber.” The young man in black looked sadly at Mo Tian Yun, “I am very weak. Brother Mo, could you give me a hand?”

Mo Tian Yun was furious.

There was an extremely conflicting look in his eyes.

If Sunlight Saber was in their hand, it would be the time for the Mo clan to rise. But the King level master injured was also an important person in his Mo clan!

If he did not save him, would people not be disheartened?

“Brothe Mo… Could it be that this lame saber is more important than the life of a precious King level master from your clan?” The young man in black asked innocently.

Mo Tian Yun’s face twitched; his countenance changed dozens of times within a short moment.

Currently, Chu Yang was secretly watching that youth in black. Seeing his dark demeanor and natural attitude of this person, Chu Yang came to the conclusion: This person is one of the future

twelve top people in Middle Three Heavens, Poison Spirit!

He looked at Sunlight Saber on the ground. At this point, the black mist was thinning. In terms of distance, the Mo clan was still the closest to it! It was almost as if they only had to reach out to have the saber in their hand!

Mo Tian Yun's expression changed nonstop. He suddenly glared and yelled, "Uncle Cheng Gui! Your nephew will have to apologize to you today! For the future of the clan, I order you to take Sunlight Saber out!"

That King level master was King level leader of the Mo clan, Mo Cheng Gui!

In term of ranking, he was Mo Tian Yun's uncle!

Ao Xie Yun immediately become guarded. Mo Tian Yun was so heartless that he did not show any love at this moment. For the clan and for benefits, he did not care if it was his uncle. He tossed the man aside without even blinking!

Mo Cheng Gui's eyes were filled with sadness. He knew that their opponent used poison only for the purpose of forcing the Mo clan to help. And if Mo Tian Yun already denied the request of their opponent, then his fate was already decided.

He gritted his teeth and screamed. Then he immediately jumped into the black mist. Right after, Sunlight Saber flew out from within the mist. With his whole body in the black mist, he cried out pitifully, "Eldest young master, the people in the family will depend on your care!"

Chapter 283: A sword like thunder

Before he finished speaking, Mo Cheng Gui's eyes already became two black holes. His mouth full of teeth looked like it was rotting. His whole body quickly turned into a black puddle.

This Bone Dissolving Spirit Dispersing Fragrance was too cruel!

He let out a loud cry, and with the last bit of his strength directed toward his left hand, he palmed his own forehead. Blood splattered everywhere. But before it even fell to the ground, it turned into white mist. His whole body dropped.

They had just started competing, and the Mo clan had already lost a King level master!

Mo Tian Yun jumped and caught Sunlight Saber in the air with a white piece of animal skin in his hand. Without even blinking, he yelled, "Move out!"

As for his uncle body that was now a puddle, he surprisingly did not even bother to give one glance!

Ao Xie Yun yelled, "Stop the Mo clan people!"

Xie Dan Qiong, Li Xiong Tu, and company all yelled out. The cruel evil spirit youth ground his teeth and waved his arm. The two men behind him pulled out their blades.

All the great clans simultaneously attacked the Mo clan people.

"Gu Yan Yang! Gu Yan Yue! Help me block them!" Mo Tian Yun yelled loudly as tried to get out, "The secret inside Sunlight Saber, I promise to share a part of it with your Gu clan! I swear to god if I go against my promise, let me be discarded by the world!"

In front of everyone, Mo Tian Yun did not hesitate to swear an oath for the sake of obtaining Sunlight Saber.

Yan Yang and his brother were assured!

Such an oath, along with the fact that the two houses were allies,

meant helping each other for such a good thing like this. If they were to gain this, the two of them would first deal with Gu Du Xing and then divide their power equally!

Gu Du Xing was a heavenly talent; having him around would eventually lead to trouble for them.

The two brothers immediately became invigorated and yelled out, “Stop them!” Then they rushed up.

The two King level masters of the Gu clan looked dispirited. You two idiots will let Mo Tian Yun use the Gu clan until there is nothing.

The fight between King level masters erupted immediately without any warning.

Furthermore, it was not one or two of them, but more than a dozen!

The royal palace of Great Zhao truly became royal in this moment. In the air, about sixty crowns shined! They were moving! They were moving in a frenzy!

In the history of Lower Three Heavens, was there any royal palace of any nation that had such a grand scene?

Only Great Zhao!

Only Great Zhao!

Great Zhao Nation, would surely be an eternal legend in the history of Lower Three Heavens after this battle!

While the royal family of Great Zhao could barely even cry... Could they not see this as a kind of honor?

After this ended, and the two nations stopped fighting, a famous writer turned tonight’s event into a poem:

With a full moon in a cold night, stars were resting.

Dark saber caused chaos, and Kings gathered in Continent

Center.

Bodies piled as high as a mountain, and blood flowed like a river.

One punch pierced the sky; one slash cut off a bull's head.

Revered Martial Artists were not equal to dogs; they became a pile of chopped meat.

Monkeys everywhere with two nations at war.

Attack then defend; fate reversed.

Great Zhao's fortune fell; Diwu was too gentle (TLN: Qing Rou).

The rise and fall throughout the ages; all in King of Hell Chu's hand...

Speaking of the royal palace, it was currently extraordinarily exciting. Ji Mo completed his mission and was exhausted from his escape. He ran to a hidden corner and clapped. Rui Bu Tong appeared from out of nowhere and quickly carried Ji Mo away.

Umm, at this moment, the two officially left Lower Three Heavens.

Chu Yang hid in the dark as he watched the two left with an emotional gaze.

Thank you, my brothers! Without you, I would definitely fail this fight miserably...

See you in Middle Three Heavens! At that time... we will be side by side!

What was called Sunlight Saber had been tossed out. Chu Yang expeditiously changed out of his white outfit into a masked black one. His face mask even had a beard sticking out. It gave the illusion that this person was not young.

Now was the most opportunistic time! He could not let this chance pass him by!

Could Mo Tian Yun die here? Could he give Gu Du Xing a great

present today? Chu Yang was anxious to try!

In the open, the King level masters of the Gu clan were under control. Only the King level masters of the Mo clan were able to move, but they were still completely blocked.

The King level masters of twenty something clans were gathered here. How could the Mo clan have a chance to get away?

Mo Tian Yun did not cease to manipulate, delegate, and sneak attack, but he still could not escape even with all his tactics. Because the last person to block him was too familiar with his tricks; it was Ao Xie Yun!

Two rivals came face to face with each other. Mo Tian Yun immediately shut up. Whatever he said would have been useless. Ao Xie Yun would never trust him!

So he did not need to waste his breath.

“Mo Tian Yun, leave Sunlight Saber!” Ao Xie Yun said casually. While his tone was not loud, it sounded like an order from above!

“If you were me, would you leave it?” Mo Tian Yun grunted.

“How many King level masters does your clan have?” Ao Xie Yun sneered, “In front of everyone, no one dares to kill heirs like me and you. This is the truth. But the martial experts of your clans are a different story! They would die needlessly! Once they are all dead, do you think you can still keep Sunlight Saber?”

“I would have to give it a try to find out.” Mo Tian Yun said coldly, “Ao Xie Yun, do you think these people are your allies? Among them, how many people want to take Sunlight Saber? Even if you get it, would you not have to fight?”

“Why don’t you leave the burden to me then?” Ao Xie Yun smiled.

“Hmm! You don’t deserve it!” Mo Tian Yun glared condescendingly. Leave the burden to you? If it is not the most

extreme situation where mountains flatten and water dries, who would leave the burden to you?

All of a sudden, there was a scream.

One of the King level masters of the Gu clan suddenly fell down. A bright red flower bloomed in the middle of his chest.

Xie Dan Qiong was watching the progression of the fight on the outside. But his face was pale, and he was hyperventilating. Earlier, two Gu clan King level masters were cornering one King level master. Seeing that if this area falls, the Mo clan could escape with the Gu clan, Xie Dan Qiong used all of his strength to shoot out his hidden weapon!

Jade Flower!

Jade Flower comes out, many flowers die!

With Xie Dan Qiong's current strength, he could only make one move! But one move was enough to destroy one King level master.

The remaining King level master of the Gu clan went berserk. He roared and left his post of protecting the two young masters. He cursed wildly and flew in Xie Dan Qiong's direction!

Two King level masters of the Xie clan simultaneously jumped up and blocked the attacker in midair!

At this time, Ao Xie Yun, Li Xiong Tu, and Xie Dan Qiong did not feel any danger and turned their heads up to watch.

Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue were yelling loudly, "Kill him! Kill him!"

A fierce sword blade suddenly appeared. It was as if this sword carried endless desolation! Millions of cold rays flashed in the cold night!

A black figure in a black mask showing a fluttering tuff of beard suddenly shot out from the burning fire. Just this one person carried an iciness that could not be blocked!

He came out of the fiery radiance that reached the sky!

Anyone could see that this one sword in his hand was like a dragon flying through the wind!

He shot into the crowd!

With this sword move, even a ninth grade King level master would get the chills! Everyone had the sense that this sword definitely was not of this world!

This was a sword of the heavens! A sword of demons!

A sword of hell!

Even if a great mountain was blocking its way, this sword was capable of shattering that mountain!

Everyone was terrified!

The fighting King level masters unconscious dodged their bodies.

Millions of rays of cold light rushed forward with a heavenly air!

It went unimpeded past thirteen King level masters!

Then there was a red flash. The cold light shined fiercely in the air like a lightning bolt. It made an arch as it shot through the air like a shooting star and disappeared without a trace!

This sword, from the moment it arrived to the moment it left, appeared for such a short time that it was not enough to blink an eye!

The sword's brilliance was gone, but the iciness still remained on everyone's body! Such a sword move, who was capable of making it? Who was capable of blocking it?

Among the martial experts here, the strongest were ninth grade King level masters. But right now, even the ninth grade King level masters were soaked in cold sweat! They closed their eyes with thoughts of this sword move; each person was filled with a kind of helpless feeling. If the target of this one sword move was any of

them… they would not have been able to avoid it!

They could only greet it!

“Oh no!” Ao Xie Yun yelled loudly, “Who was hit?”

Everyone immediately came to. This sword appeared abruptly; it was definitely not without a target. But who among them was its target?

All the King level masters turned to look at their young masters in fear. After looking, they finally let out a sigh of relief: So lucky, my young master is fine!

But at this moment…

“Young masters! Young masters… young masters, what’s wrong with you?” A pitiful voice cried out.

Everyone was shocked as they turned toward the voice. They only saw the remaining King level master of the Gu clan raising his arms and looking toward the sky. He screamed out tragically, “Oh heavens! How can this be?”

In front of him, the two brothers, Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue, stood stunned. In their eyes was a look of disbelief…

In the middle of their throats, blood was spraying out like a fountain.

This one sword move killed two people, the two young masters of the Gu clan! The two heirs of the Gu clan! The only two!

After this sword move, it could be said that the Gu clan’s family line had ended!

Mo Tian Yun watched the King level master of the Gu clan howling in pain and could not help but be shaken. A look of fear appeared in his eyes!

Those young masters stood stunned like empty vessels!

This sword move came like thunder! Everyone only had a chance

to see a masked person in black. They did not even have the chance to look at his figure. The only impression they had was the tuff of beard that moved under the mask that covered his face.

But where would they go to find the culprit?

Chu Yang had already left the royal palace!

After that sword move, he immediately left this place! No matter what kind of chaos occurred, they were not of any concern to him!

This sword move was “one spot of cold light radiates over a vast area!”

Nine Tribulations Sword’s Nine Tribulations Transcending the Nine Heavens Technique’s first move!

Chapter 284: You fight, I take

It was not that Chu Yang did not want to kill Mo Tian Yun. Mo Tian Yun had two King level protectors on his side. And this entire sword move depended on his spirit. If it was blocked, his effort would have been in vain. Given Chu Yang's current martial strength, he was not powerful enough to kill Mo Tian Yun in front of King level masters!

Furthermore, if he missed, he would be in danger! There were dozens of King level masters here, and Chu Yang only had enough strength for one move! If he were to be kept back... then he would be finished!

Chu Yang naturally made the choice that he was one hundred percent certain about! When the King level masters protecting the two Gu brothers moved from them, they were the most appropriate target in the situation at hand.

He was not certain that he could kill Mo Tian Yun so he decide to give Gu Du Xing a big present first!

He killed Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue.

A sword move like thunder!

One successful sword move!

He immediately retreated after his success!

For a long time after he left, this place was still in silence. The fires that burned on all sides was now the only noisy thing...

The two brothers, Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue, could not say a word. Guzzling sounds came from their throats as they looked on in disbelief. Then their heads slowly fell back and dropped to the ground. Their terror-filled eyes looked straight up at the sky.

Disbelief!

They were still in disbelief the moment they died. They could not

believe that this place, a place that was definitely not dangerous to them, was the place that a killer appeared out of the blue and took their lives!

Are they not fighting to get Sunlight Saber? Should the top targets not be Mo Tian Yun and Ao Xie Yun instead? Why is... this so? Why is this so?

The two bodies fell down, and eternal darkness would drown all of their questions!

That King level master of the Gu clan stood stupefied. Suddenly, he was feeling such suffering as the stuff of nightmares! The Gu clan sent out four people: Two young masters and two King level masters!

But in a blink of an eye, one King level master was killed by Xie Dan Qiong. And right after that King level master lost his life, the two young masters were also killed.

He was the lone survivor!

Mo Tian Yun and Ao Xie Yun looked at each other and saw fear in each other's eyes.

This one sword move was terrifying; it gave them the chills. They also thought if they did not have their bodyguards by their sides and had to deal with that one sword move like the Gu brothers, what would become of them?

Just imagining so was enough send chills down their spines.

The King level master of the Gu clan angrily stomped his foot. All of a suddenly, he bent down and stacked the three bodies on top of each other. Then he lifted them on top of his shoulder. After that, he glanced at Xie Dan Qiong with a fiery gaze. Without saying a word, he walked out!

And left!

He carried his brother's body and the bodies of the young

masters back home! He had to quickly inform the clan! Upon returning, there was only death for him, but he had to go back!

At some intangible point, the culprit of this whole incident became Xie Dan Qiong. Xie Dan Qiong killed one King level master and lured the remaining King level master away! If one was to say that this assassination did not have anything to do with Xie Dan Qiong, even Ao Xie Yun and Mo Tian Yun would not believe it!

This was clearly premeditated!

When I lure the martial expert away, you make the move!

Moreover, Gu Yan Yang had been crazily pursuing Xie Dan Qiong's fiancée these days. How could the proud Xie Dan Qiong not be furious?

He had every reason to kill Gu Yan Yang.

While this whole incident seemed unrelated, the more unrelated things looked, the more related they were.

Xie Dan Qiong watched this King level master leave with a pensive countenance. He knew that he would have to shoulder this wrongful blame. Even though he wanted to kill Gu Yan Yang and he had killed one of the Gu clan's King level master because of this anger... he really would not kill Gu Yan Yang.

However, he did not say anything. Instead, he immediately turned to look at Mo Tian Yun and said in a solemn voice, "Mo Tian Yun, Brother Mo, I need Sunlight Saber!"

His cold and low voice was unexpectedly filled with killing intent! His unspoken threat was clear: If you don't give it to me, I will kill you! I dared to kill Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue, I will not mind killing you, Mo Tian Yun!

If you will not hear me, let Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue be your lesson!

Xie Dan Qiong knew that he was wrongfully accused, but he

currently did not any way to defend himself. Surprisingly, not only he did not explain, he used this misunderstanding to further himself!

Aren't you people assuming that the assassin is one of my people? Fine, I am not admitting, but I am not denying either! I want the saber!

Mo Tian Yun's face paled.

Perhaps Xie Dan Qiong dares to let that assassin attack me? I must keep on guard. He immediately glanced, and the two King level masters of the Mo clan immediately moved to block his back.

"Xie Dan Qiong, you are crazy! During the training, you are not allowed to kill descendants of the clans. Have you forgotten this rule?" Mo Tian Yun's pupils contracted.

"Brother Mo, we are all sensible people." Xie Dan Qiong said coldly, "Are you going to hand it over or not?"

"Insolent!" The two King level masters of the Mo clan roared, "Young master Xie, given our young master's position, your Xie clan dares to make a move against him?"

"Brother Ao!" Xie Dan Qiong raised his brows and said without paying any attention to those two King level masters, "Brother Ao, as long as you agree to not get involved, I will share the secret inside the saber with you."

"Brother Xie, as long as you agree to not get involved, I will share the secret inside the saber with you." Ao Xie Yun smiled, "What do you think?"

"Hahaha, Brother Ao sure knows how to joke." Xie Dan Qiong's expression was icy as he laughed loudly.

"As you as you all stand by and and let me get the saber, I promise each one of you will get the secret inside the saber." Tu Qian Hao walked up and smiled.

“Get lost, all of you! This saber belongs to me, Li Xiong Tu!” With loud yell, Li Xiong Tu’s bearded face rushed in. He grabbed the animal skin bag from Mo Tian Yun’s hand.

Mo Tian Yun angrily roared, and activated energy in his hand. A brilliant chain of many colors shot out from inside his sleeve. It ripped through the air with the power of an army and went straight toward Li Xiong Tu.

The two King level masters of the Mo clan simultaneously moved. The two King level masters of the Li clans also roared like thunder and rushed in. Xie Dan Qiong of the Xie clan raised his arm and jumped in.

Ao Xie Yun sighed and then yelled, “Get it!” The three martial experts of the Ao clan also shot up from the back.

Tu Qian Hao laughed loudly and said, “Exciting! Too exciting!” With a wave of his arm, the Tu clan also joined the fight. The remaining clans also joined in one by one. They fought while barely knowing who their opponents were.

The young Poisonous Spirit stood far outside the fight. He watched the crowd with eyes like that of a snake.

The sounds of horse hooves shook the ground. Great Zhao’s army had arrived. There was immediately sounds of fighting outside. The Jiang Hu people outside and the army clashed.

A yell like thunder rang out, “Everyone inside stop! Otherwise, you will be killed!”

The two King level masters who stood behind Poison Spirit laughed and walked outside. They said arrogantly, “Nineteen clans of Middle Three Heavens are going about their business, anyone who gets in the way will be killed without mercy!”

The commanding general was caught by surprise. He looked at dozens of the shining crowns in the air and could not speak for a long time.

At this moment, there appeared yet another crown in the sky of Continent Center Citadel. This person yelled loudly, “Prime Minister Diwu orders the army to retreat immediately. Everything here will be the Prime Minister’s responsibility! Prime Minister Diwu will bear the consequences!”

This was the fourth King level leader of Golden Horse Riders Department, Yin Wu Tian!

Given such a guarantee, the people inside fought even more chaotically.

Mo Tian Yun grew more and more manic. He could see that he could not hold on to the precious saber. All of a sudden, he threw the saber in the air and yelled, “Take it if you are skilled enough!”

Ao Xie Yun immediately frowned.

This Sunlight Saber spun in the air as it flew up! This time, Mo Tian Yun used all of his effort to toss the saber and unexpectedly tossed it more than a hundred feet in the air.

Everyone simultaneously halted.

Sunlight Saber was starting to fall back down.

More than forty figures jumped up. In the air, they flew and fought each other at the same time. It was extremely chaotic! They could see that the saber was almost down, but they were still without a winner...

One King level master roared and palmed the air. Sunlight Saber immediately flew up high.

Because of that, the saber fell down and flew up again. Then it fell down, and flew up...

Under it, more than fifty King level masters continued to fight and compete.

A painful scream rang out. A King level master flew out like a ball. Li Xiong Tu angrily yelled, “Motherf*! Who made that

underhanded move?”

However, the sound of people cursing and insulting each other did not stop. His words were quickly drowned in everything else.

With the saber out of his hands, Mo Tian Yun immediately backed out to the side and panted. He signaled the two King level masters of the Mo clan, and they also temporarily backed out from the fight. Standing on the side, Mo Tian Yun’s eyes flashed as he watched the battle.

At that same time, Dong Wu Lei and Xie Dan Qiong also brought their people out.

Who did not know Mo Tian Yun’s intention? This guy clearly wanted to wait for a cheap bargain. But everyone else also wanted a bargain...

Ao Xie Yun frowned and yelled, “Everyone stop! Listen to what I have to say first! Fighting like this is not the way! I have a solution to avoid unnecessary fighting!”

All the young masters heard this and simultaneously gave order to stop the fighting. Everyone created a large circle with Sunlight Saber dropping in the middle. With a clang, the saber tip stabbed the ground. Then there was a swoosh, and the saber pierced through a few thick layers of rock. In fact, even the handle was nowhere to be seen. On the ground, there was only a hole.

The young masters took a deep breath: A truly sharp saber!

Their eyes burned with desire: Without even mentioning about the secret inside the saber, the blade is already a rare item!

“There are right now nineteen clans here.” Ao Xie Yun took a step up and said, I calculated carefully, and found that there are a total of seven alliances here! Each clan here have their own allies! I suggest that each alliance nominate one person for a competition. Whoever wins will get Sunlight Saber! What does everyone think?”

“Bull! Ao Xie Yun have surely prepared a martial expert already. You only say such a thing because you are certain of your victory. Is that what fairness is? Is there such a thing as fairness in this world?” Mo Tian Yun yelled loudly, “This is clearly a scheme of yours!”

Mo Tian Yun was angry and anxious. A King level master died for nothing. Plus, he got Sunlight Saber and had to throw it out. He wanted to wait for an opportunistic moment and make his move, but Ao Xie Yun saw through his plan...

Could it be that a King level master just died needlessly like that?

Chapter 285: He died; I killed him!

These words of Mo Tian Yun were perfectly timed. Most people were unified with the same thought. If Ao Xie Yun suggested that, he was definitely going to win. Otherwise, why would he make such a suggestion?

Everyone was against it.

“I don’t think that works!” Lei Xiong Tu yelled and rolled his eyes, “I don’t think all the alliances need to send out a representative. Let the young masters of each clan go up and fight for themselves! The last one standing will get Sunlight Saber. What do you think?”

These were all eldest young masters of great clans, direct heirs! Everyone was arrogant thinking that they were extraordinary. Was there anyone who would admit that he was any less than the others?

The moment Li Xiong Tu said this, there was an immediate response from everyone.

“Good!”

Ao Xie Yun smiled helplessly and said, “Okay. But we have to do this fast, and no one can take this saber. No one can guarantee that this saber will still be around after tonight... Why don’t we just fight right now, right here!”

“Brother Ao is right.” Tu Qian Hao agreed right away. Li Xiong Tu walked out and said in front of the soldiers who were surrounding the perimeter, “You people, quickly clear up this place. Ask your emperor and empress to leave. We need to make use of this place!”

Everyone’s eyes widened when they heard this.

Make use of this place? Motherf*, this is the royal palace of a nation...

But the young masters had decided on it. So what if it was the royal palace? If they say they would use it, then they would use it!

In all of history, was there ever anyone gutsy enough to use the royal palace? Haha, these big brothers had started a new legend.

The commanding general immediately turned red; he was on the verge of exploding from anger. In all of history, it was the authority that made use of the commoners; since when was the royal palace used by others?

Furious, he was about to order an attack without any regards!

“General Xiao, do as this young master says!” A soft voice rang out. Diwu Qing Rou was slowly approaching on a horse, “Escort His Majesty and his people out.”

Then he cupped his fist toward Ao Xie Yun and said with a smile, “This time, our Great Zhao will concede once! You can temporarily use the royal palace. But next time, you young masters will owe me an answer!”

Li Xiong Tu snorted coldly. His beard stood on ends as he spoke casually, “If we don’t answer to you, then what?”

Diwu Qing Rou’s eyes narrowed, and he replied, “Then... even the great clans of Middle Three Heavens... will have to give me an answer!”

His calm voice unexpectedly carried a kind of powerful fury.

Seeing that Li Xiong Tu wanted to lawlessly fight with Diwu Qing Rou, Ao Xie Yun hastily made peace, “The Prime Minister is too serious. We could not help but borrow the royal palace this time. After this issue is solved, we will answer to the Prime Minister no matter what.”

Then he glared at Li Xiong Tu and scolded in a low voice, “Idiot! Once we make a big deal out of this, the saber will belong to Great Zhao!”

“Uh… oh… oh…” Li Xiong Tu nodded like a pecking chicken. The moment he thought of this, he immediately cupped his fist and said fluidly, “The Prime Minister is truly farsighted, heroic, majestic, ah ah… handsome, talented, unequalled… ah…” Ao Xie Yun could only cover his ears and walk back.

This punk just cursed at the person; now, he was praising without any embarrassment. There was not one bit of sincerity in it…

Diwu Qing Rou was so accomplished but he was still infuriated by this punk. His face did not stop twitching. He waved his sleeve and said, “So be it.”

Turning back, he yelled, “General Xiao, you are still not following the orders given. What are you waiting for?”

Then he turned and left immediately.

If he kept staying here, Diwu Qing Rou guessed that if he was not teased to death by King of Hell Chu, he would be teased to death by this punk, Li Xiong Tu…

On one side, Great Zhao was pulling out; on the other, the negotiation officially began. All of the royal palace had essentially turned into a ruin since the fire started.

Even if they were to put out the fire at this point, there would only be broken walls and shattered tiles.

The fire might as well be left alone to brighten the place for them.

General Xiao waved his arm and angrily retreated with his army.

“Now, nineteen young masters must fight!” Ao Xie Yun held a bunch of papers in his hand and said, “Everyone must pull their lot. At every other round, there will be one person exempted from the fight. At a certain point, you must stop and not kill your opponent. In addition, after one round ends, another will start fifteen minutes after.”

“In other words, there will be nine winners after the first round; the remaining nine (TLN: plus one) are qualified to compete! After the second round, there will be five winners. Three after the third round. The fourth round will decide who the saber will belong to.” Mo Tian Yun said with a cold voice.

At that moment, a shy voice sounded, “May I ask, Brother Ao and Brother Mo, in this competition… can we use poison?”

When he heard these words, Mo Tian Yun looked as if he was bitten by a poisonous snake. He looked back ferociously. If a gaze could kill, Mo Tian Yun had already ripped this person apart.

The person who just spoke was none other than Poisonous Spirit!

“Little Poison… Ou Du Xiao!” Ao Xie Yun was having a headache, “Are there any antidotes for your poisons?”

“Of course.” Ou Du Xiao winked.

“Bastard!” Mo Tian Yun yelled, “You could have given him the antidote for that Bone Dissolving Spirit Dispersing Fragrance?”

“I really don’t have that…” Ou Du Xiao said shyly, “And if I could… Umm, he has to get a treatment every ten days…”

“Your grandma!” Li Xiong Tu and Tu Qian Hao cursed simultaneously. Once they get hit with this poison, would they have to become Ou Du Xiao’s slave to avoid turning into black liquid?

“If you neutralize the poison, you can join.” Ao Xie Yun decided and said, “Everyone draw lots. The last one will be mine.”

And like that, nineteen clans started drawing lots for the competition under Ao Xie Yun’s leadership.

Perhaps even Ao Xie Yun did not expect that, with the exception of some unwarranted clans, this lot drawing would determine the future ranking of the great clans of Middle Three Heavens…

They would be the same as the result of the competition!

When the fight for Sunlight Saber was in full swing in the palace, Chu Yang already returned to Heaven Reaching Tower, washed and changed his clothes. With a steaming cup of tea in front of him and a book in his hand, he sat relaxed beyond words.

A little bit later, Gu Du Xing finally also returned.

“How is it on your side?” Chu Yang asked.

“Your side is already done? So quickly?” Gu Du Xing asked in surprise.

“They are still fighting for the precious saber. But my side is essentially done.” Chu Yang said casually, “The royal palace is done. I saw it with my own eyes. A few concubines and ministers probably got cremated there... Umm, after tonight, the number of dead people in the royal palace should reach thirty thousand. A little small...”

“Cough cough...” Gu Du Xing choked, “A little small? You are still not satisfied?”

“Yes, I am a little unsatisfied. It’s because the Middle Three Heavens clans did not clash with the military.” Chu Yang felt disappointed and said, “If they fought with each other, that would be most beautiful.”

“If they really fought... then who would need King of Hell Chu?” Gu Du Xing sneered.

“It’s uneventful on my side. Dong Wu Shang is still making preparations.” Gu Du Xing said, “Dong Wu Shang wants to use Moonlight Sword to blow up Golden Horse Rides Department’s headquarter.”

“That is one way to go.” Chu Yang rubbed his chin and laughed, “Remember, we must use this opportunity to free all of the people Diwu Qing Rou captured. If we cannot free all of them, we should at least free most of them! Otherwise, this scheme of ours would still be a failure.”

“Rest assured.” Gu Du Xing grinned and said excitedly, “I will tell you a piece of good news. When I was talking with Dong Wu Shang, I suddenly had an epiphany in the way of the blades. I will probably become a third grade Revered Sword Artist soon!”

“That is good news.” Chu Yang exclaimed, “I also have a piece of good news for you.”

“What is it?” Gu Du Xing asked. He still had not recovered from his excitement.

“Cough cough, Gu Yan Yang is dead.” Chu Yang let out two dry coughs and said, “I killed him!”

Gu Du Xing was immediately stunned.

“Gu Yan Yang is dead? You killed him?” After a long while, Gu Du Xing looked at Chu Yang with a confused gaze. There was a trace of frustration and sadness within it. There was also a trace of satisfaction.

“I killed him!” Chu Yang nodded affirmatively, “What are you thinking?”

“I am thinking... about how my foster father would be able to deal with this.” Gu Du Xing sat down completely absent-minded, “There is nothing regrettable about Gu Yan Yang getting killed. With the things that he did, I already wanted to kill him a long time ago, but I could not. Now... ahh! I am very conflicted... If Sister Xiao Miao learns of this, she will be very sad...”

“Umm, there is one more thing.” Chu Yang said softly.

“What is it?” Gu Du Xing let out a pained laughed.

“Gu Yan Yue is also dead...” Chu Yang looked up at him, “I killed him!”

“I... you... this...” Gu Du Xing stood straight up and hyperventilated, “You... you really... dared!”

Gu Du Xing was like a horse on aphrodisiac; he ran around the

room while muttering, “What should I do now? What should I do now? What should I do now?...”

Chu Yang said sympathetically, “What should you do now??”

Gu Du Xing collapsed on his seat. His thoughts suddenly became fuzzy. They died? The two people who always looked down on me since I was a child. The two people who framed me many times when I grew up and constantly pushed me toward death... have died?

They died just like that?

“With the two of them dead, I can only be happy! But I am worried... about how my foster father will cope with this! Those two were both his sons! They might have been unaccomplished, but they were his flesh and blood...” Gu Du Xing sat with his hands holding his head and an expression of pain on his face.

“Killing the two of them is a gift from me to you!” Chu Yang said casually.

“A gift...” Gu Du Xing said in shock.

“It is also a gift from me to your foster father and the Gu clan...” Chu Yang smiled and said, “You should be the leader of the clan. Compare to those two, you are far better. At least, the Gu clan’s future prospects will be guaranteed. Gu Miao Ling will also be freed earlier.”

Gu Du Xing was dumbfounded, “What you are saying... I already know, but the issue is...”

“What issue is there?” Chu Yang spread out his palm, “They are already dead... can their heads grow back?”

Gu Du Xing was completely speechless. With a person like this, what else could he say?

Chapter 286: Truly a good saber…

“There is another piece of good news…” Chu Yang was like a god, “No one knew that I killed them.”

“Nonsense!” Gu Du Xing rolled his eyes.

“So you should prepare to avenge your brothers’ death.” Chu Yang said, “If things go as I expected, your Gu clan will be going head to head with the Xie clan.”

“The Xie clan?” Gu Du Xing scratched his head, “What does this have to do with the Xie clan?”

“Xie Dan Qiong killed one of your King level masters. And I made my move right after. We worked together seamlessly to kill three out of four people your Gu clan sent out for training!” Chu Yang laughed.

Gu Du Xing finally understood; he said, “So the Xie young master, Xie Dan Qiong, will have to take this dirty water basin in your stead…”

“Exactly.” Chu Yang clapped and said excitedly, “Xie Dan Qiong is a good person; people who do good deeds will go down in history; we should just do our work silently…”

“Can you do things quietly?” Gu Du Xing sighed. He looked at Chu Yang with a helpless and gratified gaze.

Chu Yang might have sounded relaxed, but how could Gu Du Xing not know what dangerous risks Chu Yang had to take?

Chu Yang’s cultivation was only Sword Great Master!

One Great Master killed two key characters in front of the watchful eyes of some forty or fifty King level masters and escaped with his whole body intact…

Gu Du Xing never even thought about what methods Chu Yang used to accomplish this. He was having cold sweats just thinking a

little about this event!

What was Chu Yang's current status? To say frankly, Chu Yang's safety was directly linked to the outcome of the war between two nations! Not even one wrong move was allowed; not even one flaw could appear!

On a more serious note, a cold could affect Chu Yang's thinking and create serious issues in a blink of an eye...

Given such a situation, Chu Yang dared to take a chance and killed Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue.

Why?

For his brother! For me!

Because Chu Yang knows that my unfortunate childhood was greatly contributed by Gu Yan Yang and his brother! Because Chu Yang knows that those two never abandoned the idea of killing me! Because Chu Yang knows that with those two still around, I would never be able to rise up in the Gu clan!

Because those two are the true heirs of the clan!

If those two lived up to their expectations, Gu Du Xing would not say anything. But the issue was that those two were too weak to build a foundation. In addition, they were jealous of other people's talents and used dark, insidious schemes to get what they wanted.

So why did Chu Yang make his move? It was all because of Gu Du Xing.

Gu Du Xing never said thank you nor did he need to. But this gratitude, he would remember well!

Although this matter was not dealt with in an open manner, this one move would eternally remove great trouble for Gu Du Xing!

If it was up to Gu Du Xing, he would probably never be able to make a move against them because of the kindness of his foster father.

They did not talk for the whole night.

It was not until the next morning that the competition ended! Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing stood outside of the royal palace and watched in their fluttering white outfits.

It was not known how fierce last night's fighting was, but the entire royal palace was thick with smoke. It seemed to have become a ruin! Frankly, this was not an exaggeration; not even one room was left intact!

This royal palace was completely shattered.

The one with the greatest harvest was probably Chu Yang. Because after he entered the royal palace last night, he helped Ji Mo a few times. When he saw there were no longer any issues, he immediately turned toward the treasury.

Such an opportunity, how could Minister Chu let it pass by?

The guards at the treasury were long gone. Chu Yang had Nine Tribulations Sword in hand; how sharp was it? He directly made a large hole and walked right in. Chu Yang was in a rush this time and did not have a chance to absorb these things, but he did have Nine Tribulations space...

He raised his arm, "Take this for me!"

"Take this for me!"

After a few dozen times of calling out like that, the treasury was emptied...

Then he walked out.

Otherwise, how could he have shot out from the burning fire when he killed Gu Yan Yang and his brother? The young masters of the nineteen great clans and the King level masters also did not know that... The place where the fire was burning fiercest was the treasury of the royal palace...

It was nearly noon...

From within the royal palace, three dejected silhouettes walked out. It was the Luo clan's Luo Ke Wu. He was walking and cursing; his two eyes were purple like a panda in a circus.

From afar, his shouting could be heard, "Motherf*, too low! Too low! That bastard Xie Dan Qiong; I can't believe he played me! If not for..."

Behind him, another young master with disheveled hair was grinding his teeth, "Motherf*, how am I so unlucky. I just went up, and I met with little poison. His grandmother, what could I do..."

After that, Tu Qian Hao walked out with a ferocious look. He did not even bother with a grunt and arrogantly left.

"What a fart; putting up air! You think you're something?" Luo Ke Wu spat and instigated. He was already annoyed and was looking for an opponent to dump his anger on.

Tu Qian Hao ferociously turned around. He glared Luo Ke Wu as if he wanted to eat him alive. Luo Ke Wu also did not back up. He puffed up his chest and said, "Tu Qian Hao! You are not happy?"

Tu Qian Hao angrily spat and said, "If it is not out of respect for your older sister, I..." He turned and walked away...

Luo Ke Wu angrily chase after him and yelled out, "You and my older sister are not married yet! Motherf*, you already see yourself as my brother-in-law! Motherf*, you dare to talk like you are above me...?"

At this point, Luo Ke Wu suddenly exploded, "Stop right there! Today, I have to ask you. Do you want to marry my older sister or my aunt? Stop... stop..."

Tu Qian Hao did not bother to pay attention and walked further and further.

The edge of Chu Yang's mouth twitched. These two brothers-in-law... are truly...

“I finally understand why Luo Ke Di’s personality is like that…” Chu Yang rubbed his chin and said with a deep gaze.

“I also understand.” Gu Du Xing looked at Luo Ke Wu and nodded. He let out a long sigh and said, “If the upper beam is not straight, the lower one will be slant.”

“Perhaps the true cause is not here…” Chu Yang’s gaze seemed to be deep in thought.

“That makes a lot of sense.” Gu Du Xing frowned and nodded sincerely, “Perhaps it is his father!”

The next person to come out was none other than Ou Du Xiao. This future Poison Spirit was currently extremely pitiful. His left eye was black, and his right eye was red. His clothes were torn showing a pair of snow-white thighs. As he walked, his round butt was playing peek-a-boo with a faint trace of beauty.

As he hobbled, he lamented, “I am really unlucky to run into a mutant that is not afraid of poison… Ao Xie Yun…”

With a plop, Li Xiong Tu rolled out with a swollen face. Two King level masters of the Li clan followed close behind; they grabbed him and asked, “Young master, are you okay?”

“Motherf*! I told you so many times; call me Hero Li!” Li Xiong Tu glared at them. Then he turned back and yelled, “Mo Tian Yun! I will not forget this! Let’s go…”

Two more people left the game. After that Jade Flower from the exceptional twelve, Xie Dan Qiong also walked out in annoyance. His face was still white and handsome as before, but the clothes on his body were more pitiful than those of a beggar. He did not say a word and hastily left.

All those who came out had one thing in common. They could clearly see the two young masters Chu, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing, in clothes as white as snow, but no one went over to greet them.

Each one of them was prideful. They were all of the same

mentality: You people are from Upper Three Heavens; we are from Middle Three Heavens. We are of two different worlds. We walk different paths.

Plus things were so embarrassing like this; they did not want to walk over. They were already losing face in Middle Three Heavens; they did not want to lose face in Upper Three Heavens as well...

Waiting for a long time, they did not see anyone else coming out. Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing were losing their patience. Then they saw three people walked out from within.

Mo Tian Yun and two King level masters of the Mo clan walked out with grave faces. They were looking gloomy as if they had failed.

“Let’s go!” Mo Tian Yun grunted. He was about to leave this place when he saw Chu Yang.

Mo Tian Yun took one glance at the surrounding and unexpectedly headed over with an enthusiastic expression, “Two young masters Chu, this...”

“It’s nothing. We just wanted to see whether that saber is real or fake.”

Chu Yang smiled and said, “Young master Mo, you...?” He saw an eye-catching imprint of five fingers on Mo Tian Yun’s face.

“Cough cough. I am not as talented as others; Ao Xie Yun... Ah...” Mo Tian Yun sighed with a look of disappointment. Then he immediately blinked and said, “That saber... is in Ao Xie Yun’s hands.”

Of course Mo Tan Yun knew that the reason why the two young masters Chu of Upper Three Heavens came here. The moment he saw them, he immediately stabbed Ao Xie Yun in the back.

If I can’t have it, Ao Xie Yun will not have it easily either.

Chu Yang nodded with understanding. Then he said

comfortingly, “Brother Mo, you don’t need to be so angry. Even though you can’t get this saber… isn’t there still a sword?”

How could Chu Yang not know of Mo Tian Yun’s sinister intentions?

Standing on the side, Gu Du Xing was feeling somewhat contemptuous. So many people left earlier, but no one said anything. The moment Mo Tian Yun came out, he was already an informant…

Mo Tian Yun’s eyes brightened the moment he heard what Chu Yang said. He laughed loudly and said, “Young master Chu, I will take my leave first.”

“Please feel free, Brother Mo.” Chu Yang said intimately and bid him goodbye.

Finally, from within the smoke and fire, Ao Xie Yun and the three King level masters of the Ao clan came out talking and laughing. Slanting over his should was a slender animal skin wrap. It was indeed the Sunlight Saber that got all of Jiang Hu fighting.

It seemed that the saber had fallen into the hands of the Ao clan!

Glancing at Chu Yang, Ao Xie Yun’s countenance seemed to change slightly. He immediately went over and greeted, “Brother Chu?”

Chu Yang smiled and said politely, “Brother Ao, can I look at the saber a little?”

The moment he spoke, the three King level masters of the Ao clan were immediately on guard. They cautiously watched Chu Yang as the atmosphere thickened.

“Why not.” Ao Xie Yun readily took the saber from his shoulder and handed it over.

If the other person was asking openly, he would not snatch it! If he asked for a little look, then he would look a little! Ao Xie Yun

understood this.

Chu Yang took the saber and swung it back and forth. Then he looked a little and praised, “Truly a good saber…”

Chapter 287: Getting out in time

On the blade, there was a mark of the sun. Of course Chu Yang was very familiar with this because it was him who carved it.

But at this moment, Chu Yang acted as if he discovered a new continent. He looked at it lovingly, unwilling to let go. He closed his eyes in elation and remained quiet for a long time.

After a while, he finally handed the saber back and said, “Thank you for trusting me, Brother Ao!”

Ao Xie Yun replied, “No need for formality, Brother Chu. I just grabbed this saber. If you want to, you can take it and study it for a few days.”

Chu Yang laughed loudly and repeatedly denied it. He thought to himself: If I were to really take it away, you would probably fight to death with me!

Ao Xie Yun finally took back the saber and smiled, “As for the secret within this saber, I just studied it a bit just now. But I have not discovered anything. Does Brother Chu have any pointers?”

“I really don’t.” Chu Yang said frankly, “But I have heard that this Sunlight Saber would only show all of its power when it is in the same place as Moonlight Sword. However…the legend is so old so it cannot be verified.”

Ao Xie Yun’s eyes suddenly flashed as he said meaningfully, “Brother Chu is right.”

Thus, the three people walked back side by side.

On the way, they saw flags fluttering. Diwu Qing Rou had made his grand arrival.

Things had ended here so Diwu Qing Rou would naturally have to come and take a look.

With a loud cry, the entire envoy came to an immediate halt. The

soldiers parted to the sides to reveal a horse-drawn carriage in the middle.

The curtain opened, and Diwu Qing Rou could be seen sitting in the carriage with a casual expression.

Seeing Ao Xie Yun with Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing, all looking tall with masked expressions on their faces, Diwu Qing Rou frowned.

“So it is young master Ao and the two young masters Chu.” Diwu Qing Rou sat unmoved in his carriage as he spoke coolly.

Chu Yang was internally shaken.

Diwu Qing Rou had mixed up the greeting’s order. If he had accepted Chu Yang’s identity, he would have said, “So it is the two young masters Chu and young master Ao.”

But he has placed Ao Xie Yun before me.

What does this mean?

Chu Yang’s expression remained unchanged, but he had already come to an immediate decision: There is no longer a need to wait for the fight for Moonlight Sword to break out. The two young masters Chu must disappear right after they leave Diwu Qing Rou’s sight!

Otherwise, it would be too late!

“Prime Minister Diwu.” The three smiled and greeted back.

“It seems that Sunlight Saber has been taken by the Ao clan.” Diwu Qing Rou smiled and said, “Congratulations, young master Ao.”

“We just got lucky.” Ao Xie Yun said humbly, “We’ll still have to see if we can unlock the secret within... As the Prime Minister knows, this is not simple.”

“Haha, I believe that young master Ao is capable of this.” Diwu Qing Rou laughed loudly ad he stared at the saber in Ao Xie Yun’s hand.

Diwu Qing Rou had extreme hatred for the Sunlight Saber that caused this great storm, but he was also a little curious about it.

“Please take a look, Prime Minister.” Ao Xie Yun smiled and readily handed the saber over. Yun Wu Tian stepped forward and received the saber. Then he handed it to Diwu Qing Rou.

Diwu Qing Rou swung his arm. The sound was barely audible when a great saber of one of the guards next to the carriage was immediately cut into two pieces.

“This is truly a good saber!” Diwu Qing Rou praised. He immediately saw the mark of the sun on the saber and his eyes narrowed. He thought for a while before letting Yin Wu Tian return the saber.

“Three young masters, please go on. I have to go to the royal palace and see to the mess. When I have time, I will definitely come to see young master Ao.” Diwu Qing Rou smiled, “Two young masters Chu, when will you be going back?”

“We will go back when it is time to go back.” Chu Yang smiled lightly, “But for the time being, we will still have to bother the Prime Minister for a little bit.”

“Haha… young master Chu is too polite.” Diwu Qing Rou smiled and said, “Whenever young master Chu is free, I will look forward to drinking and talking with you.”

“Definitely.” Chu Yang smiled.

“I will take my leave first.”

Then, the group of five made way for Diwu Qing Rou’s caravan as it headed forward.

Chu Yang was still walking with Ao Xie Yun and Gu Du Xing as if there was nothing, but he had a faint feeling that there was an intense gaze on his back that did not go away for a very long time.

This kind of feeling made King of Hell Chu’s hair stand on ends.

Chu Yang did not want to stop, and Ao Xie Yun was also afraid of mishaps along the way so the five walked at the speed of light back to Heaven Reaching Tower. After a fond farewell, Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing went back to their room.

“We have to disappear right away!” Chu Yang said gravely upon closing the door.

“He has discovered us?” Gu Du Xing asked.

“Not necessarily discovered. If he has discovered us, he would have captured us right away.” Chu Yang said, “However, in these past few days, Diwu Qing Rou have been using his channels to investigate our identity…”

“Then Heaven Reaching Tower is probably surrounded by Diwu Qing Rou’s spies.” Gu Du Xing said, “How do we get out?”

“We’ll leave the same way we came in.” Chu Yang walked toward the window and gently lifted the curtain to look outside.

He could see numerous people from various places staring intently in this direction. However, these people seemed very ordinary with a special kind of hostile aura that was especially strong.

“If I were Diwu Qing Rou…” Chu Yang smiled and said softly, “… If I still can’t verify my opponents’ identity, I would temporarily spy on them and wait for the news. Moreover, my opponents must think that they have fooled me, and I have to wait for verification. Umm, if my opponents want to leave, they would definitely leave at night.”

Gu Du Xing said in a low voice, “So we don’t need to wait until night fall?”

“Exactly, we have to leave right now.” Chu Yang said casually.

“Do you need to write a letter to Diwu Qing Rou?” Gu Du Xing pondered, “In any case, young master Chu has to leave. Writing a letter to cause a blow against him doesn’t seem like a bad idea.”

“It’s better not to write anything.” Chu Yang took two steps and said, “The fact that we are able to leave and still boast about it, this could cause him be furious; it would be damaging to the next of our plan. In addition, even if Diwu Qing Rou is sure that we are fake, he would not dare to assume that King of Hell Chu came here himself... this... oh?”

Chu Yang got to this point when his eyes lit up all of a sudden. He quickly shut his mouth and clapped his hands together. He said, “That’s right! I have to write a letter to Diwu Qing Rou!”

Gu Du Xing was dizzy. Didn’t you just say that you don’t need to write a letter to Diwu Qing Rou; why are you in favor of the idea now?

“Diwu Qing Rou knows that I am like him. He surely does not know that I like to boast whenever I have the upper hand. Therefore, it would not be suitable for me to act like a petty villain! So he would also notice that if I am the real King of Chu, I would not have to leave a letter like that. But I am intentionally leaving a letter... What do you think he would think?”

Gu Du Xing smiled and said, “Of course he would be even more suspicious.”

“What I want is for him to be even more suspicious!” Chu Yang laughed.

Gu Du Xing packed up while Chu Yang raised his brush and wrote a warm letter. Then he put it into an envelope. Outside the envelope, he wrote the following: Dear Prime Minister Diwu; Chu Yang thanks you.

He immediately tossed the brush aside and laughed loudly.

Pulling Gu Du Xing in front of a mirror, they carefully disguised themselves.

Within moments, Chu Yang had rolled up the blanket on the bed. He placed it on a chair then placed it facing the curtain. He even

set it up to look like someone who was sitting in contemplation from behind the curtain.

Then, the two went out the door.

Diwu Qing Rou arrived at the royal palace to see a miserable scene. His face was gloomy, and he could not say a word for a very long time.

“Is His Majesty okay?” Diwu Qing Rou said in a low voice.

“His Majesty is fine. But I am worried that His Majesty’s feeling toward you, after this incident, will be…” Next to him, Han Bu Chu said worriedly, “I am worried that he is even more discontent.”

“It’s nothing.” Diwu Qing Rou said casually, “Let’s go in the royal palace and see if there is anything still usable.”

At this very moment, on another road, a group of soldiers hastily ran forward. A plump eunuch sat on horseback arrived arrogantly. With the voice of a mating duck who was just poked with a stick, he said, “His Majesty decreed that we tally all material at the royal palace…”

Diwu Qing Rou looked at this plump eunuch for a while with a calm gaze then said, “If His Majesty sent you here, then we will just leave some soldiers to guard; let’s leave it to them.”

Yin Wu Tian gave the plump eunuch a cold look and spat, “It’s good to be a eunuch! Sitting comfortably on horseback, you don’t have to worry about getting beaten!”

“Poof…” Han Bu Chu choked with laughter.

This eunuch, named Lu Ren Jia, was the general manager of the royal palace. He was rude, and, while he might have been slightly fat, he loved to dance. Normally, he often danced with the maids for fun. Furthermore, he always thought highly of himself and gave himself a name that screamed the art of dance: Fantasy Night Phoenix.

Hearing this name, Han Bu Chu had once made the following evaluation: The name of this eunuch indeed speaks the truth. Phoenixes come in pairs. This Lu Ren Jia takes on both roles with just himself. This is really well-considered…

These words of Han Bu Chu had earned him the title of “Great Zhao’s greatest comedian” from Diwu Qing Rou’s entourage. However, because of this, “Fantasy Night Phoenix” also hated Han Bu Chu to the bones.

He had called Han Bu Chu a bastard behind his back. He might think he is clever, but looking at the three words in his name was enough to know. Can’t call out (TLN: Another homonym thing.) Can’t call out when he reaches the climax. What is there to be so smug about?

This punk might have been a eunuch, but he was against Diwu Qing Rou… Therefore, Diwu Qing Rou’s people did not get along well with him.

After he gave the order, Diwu Qing Rou directly turned and left without any desire to talk to the eunuch.

Lu Ren Jia sneered and pointed in Diwu Qing Rou’s directions as he was going away, “What are you showing off for? Hmmp!” This hmmp was sounded slightly jilted and infinitely soft. It was enough to give the people around him the shivers.

Then the pale and doughy man raised his arms and called out a high pitched voice, “Let’s go!”

After a long time, there was suddenly an inhuman scream from within the ruins of the royal palace, “Diwu Qing Rou, you bastard. The palace treasury is empty. The palace treasury is empty…”

The shrill pitiful cry was like that of an animal.

Chapter 288: Such brothers are hard to find

The treasury of the royal palace was empty!

This was not only a treasury of money!

In that place, there were many precious items that the nation of Great Zhao had gathered for over a thousand years. They included countless strange metals, elixirs of heaven and earth, heavenly weapons, and gold and silver.

In fact, among them were some priceless tomes! Within them, there were many martial arts secrets!

With so many things, even a military troop would lose half a day to take them.

And yet, they were completely gone.

Looking at the secret treasury of the royal palace, general manager Lu Ren Jia could not even cry out tears. His main mission this time was this treasury. But right now, he was looking at a great empty space, completely cleaned out. Lu Ren Jia was on the verge of collapsing.

Here, besides air, there was nothing else!

In fact, there was not even a piece of rusty metal inside.

It was completely empty! If a mouse came in, it would have scurried out crying.

Lu Ren Jia, general manager, was livid!

Last night, this place did indeed become a battlefield! Last night, the royal palace did indeed become a ruin! Last night, the young masters of Middle Three Heavens did indeed fight here!

But how many people were there? How could a handful of them have cleaned up this place? This is a joke!

Who is capable of doing this? Who in the world is capable of

doing this?

“Diwu Qing Rou! You are robbing the royal ancestors’ graves!” Lu Ren Jia screamed with a duck’s voice.

Only Diwu Qing Rou can do this covertly. He used the chaos to do all of this!

Looking at the empty space in front of him, he asked himself who had done it. In this world, millions and millions of people would definitely point their fingers at one target: Diwu Qing Rou!

King of Hell Chu was definitely powerful, but this was Great Zhao.

Lu Ren Jia angrily ran back. At this point, he had to report back to His Majesty first.

That afternoon, Lu Ren Jia rode a tall horse and brought a group of well-trained guards along with a royal decree as he ferociously headed toward the Prime Minister’s manor.

This had to be accounted for!

And right now, Diwu Qing Rou was in his study with a very ugly countenance.

“It’s verified. The Chu clan of Upper Three Heavens does not have two young masters named Chu Fei and Chu Nan!” A small piece of paper was being swished in Diwu Qing Rou’s hand.

This was the information Diwu Qing Rou asked for when he first heard that young master Chu had arrived at Heaven Reaching Tower! It was also the piece of news that he had been waiting for over the past few days!

It finally came!

Diwu Qing Rou clenched his fist tighter and tighter as his gaze sharpened. Right after, Diwu Qing Rou yelled out loudly, “Jing Meng Hun!”

“Yes, sir!”

“Yin Wu Tian!”

“Yes, sir!”

“Gather people. Mobilize all martial masters of Revered level and above from Golden Horse Riders Department. Surround Heaven Reaching Tower right away and bring the two young masters Chu to me!”

“Yes, sir!”

“Remember, get this done at all costs! Make whatever sacrifice necessary! You must capture them!”

“Yes, sir!”

Outside, there were loud noises and chaos followed by swooshing sounds. Then it became quiet once more.

And currently, second young master Ji Mo and Rui Bu Tong had returned to Heaven Reaching Tower. In the Ji clan’s room was eldest young master Ji Zhu. Ji Mo had prepared everything and was ready to return to Middle Three Heavens with his big brother anytime.

With his mission here was completed, all he needed to do was go back to Middle Three Heavens to experience life. Ji Mo had even planned out everything. Once he got back to Middle Three Heavens, he would immediately ask to go to Cang Lan battlegrounds to gain experience.

He would use the methods that big brother Chu taught him to train himself to the highest point in the shortest of time! Would it not be just a few times of extreme breakthroughs?

Thinking of the miraculous cultivation method that big brother Chu taught them, Ji Mo’s heart was filled with confidence.

Big brother once said that we have to kill all the way to Upper Three Heavens!

“Second young master Ji, you have returned?” Ji Zhu said as he

sat in the room. When Ji Mo walked in, eldest young master was still lazily sleeping on the chair. His head went from one side to another as he nodded off. It could not be helped, he got out of bed too early this morning; his circadian rhythm was in chaos.

Seeing his brother returned, Ji Zhu just waved his arm and sent the guards of the clan out. Then he ordered Rui Bu Tong to close the door. It took great efforts for him to look up at his younger brother. With a careless posture, he said these words!

“Ah, cough... cough... cough...” Ji Mo coughed. Avoiding his brother’s stare, he laughed hoarsely and said, “Big brother is really more and more brilliant everyday...”

“Really?” Ji Zhu pouted as he spoke with a hilarious looking mouth. With a smug look, he pretended to accept his brother’s empty praise with excitement and asked, “Second young master Ji Mo, did you have fun on this trip out?”

“Fun! Lots of fun... Really a lot of fun.” Ji Mo lowered his head and shifted his eyes back and forth. Then he looked up and said enthusiastically, “Big brother, I didn’t know anything before going out; I got a shock the moment I did...”

“Oh? How come?” Ji Zhu eyed his little brother with curiosity.

“Big brother, you can’t understand my feelings right now. In this trip out, I learned to appreciate the beauty of the world, the majesty of the mountains, the vastness of the seas, and countless scenes that looked like they were created by gods... Ahhhh! I really did not want to leave...” Ji Mo showed an extremely exaggerated expression and a rich emotional tone with eyes full of longing.

“Oh? Did you howl?” Ji Zhu cast a strange expression.

“Yes. Yes.” Ji Mo nodded like a pecking chicken. “You must howl to express your feelings! I even wrote a poem because of it...”

“You can write poetry?” Ji Zhu’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Of course!” Ji Mo’s head swayed back and forth as he said

proudly, “Listen well... Yesterday, I went down to Lower Three Heavens; today, I arrived in front of a great mountain. The rocks on the mountain are truly hard; the stream water on the mountain is truly sweet; the flowers on the mountain are very fragrant; the girls on the mountain are as beautiful as angels. Yesterday, I left the great mountain; today, I arrived in front of a great sea. The waves rolled high; the fish in the sea are great. There were lobsters and turtle in the sea; there were also girls in the sea...”

“Stop! Stop...!” Ji Zhu cried with a painful and contorted expression, “Second young master Ji, this poem of your will be passed down through the ages. It would be best if you recite it to Father after getting back to Middle Three Heavens...”

“Oh...” Ji Mo laughed and said sweetly, “Big brother, this trip to Lower Three Heavens was really fun...”

“Really?” Ji Zhu pouted like a pig. Then he suddenly lower his voice and said, “Then did King of Hell Chu also howled?”

“Howled! Howled! Ack ack...?” Ji answered freely when he suddenly jumped up. Even his hair stood on ends as he looked at his brother in terror with eyes wide open.

Rui Bu Tong also almost cried out loud as he was standing on the side.

“Second young master Ji!” Ji Zhu slammed the table, and yelled out with uncontrollable rage, “You are too gutsy!”

Ji Mo squatted on the ground; cold sweats poured out.

“Grandmother... Big brother...” Ji Mo’s voice trembled.

“Grandmother, your grandmother!” Ji Zhu roared like thunder, “Do you know that you can kill the entire clan? Do you know that once your actions are exposed, you will bring calamity to the clan? Do you know how stupid you are? Do you know... Your grandmother! Your grandmother!...”

Ji Mo dropped his head without answering. He was accepting the

lesson, but he was internally fighting back: Grandmother is your grandmother! Mother is your mother! Your grandmother! Your grandmother...

"You even called out 'dog aunt'?" The critical moment had arrived. He kicked Ji Mo so that he rolled out to the ground. His spit flew in all directions as he said, "A dog is your aunt?"

Ji Mo cried out pitifully as he was kicked. He cursed back internally: You're the dog aunt!

His mouth, however, cried out, "Big brother, I was wrong... I know I was wrong. I won't dare to do it again..."

At this point, he realized that this punk also went to fight for the saber and had heard his cry of satisfaction...

That's how you know my identity. Motherf*, I am really unlucky!

Ji Zhu jumped forward and grabbed Ji Mo. Kicks and punches rained down. Ji Mo's body flew into the air and did a few somersault before falling down. Then he kicked his little brother in the butt as if he was a ball. Afterward, he jumped up and palmed him down to the ground. Bam! Bam! Bam!

Finally, Ji Zhu stopped.

"Tell me! What is to be done now?" Ji Zhu was done letting out his anger. He turned and went back to his seat. He leaned his body on the seat and spoke lazily.

"Ahwooh... ahwooh... ah ah... ouch... ouch..." Ji Mo continued to cry out painfully, but was feeling extremely happy. Even your blows are without substance; they're more like scratches...

Hearing Ji Zhu say this, he could not help but ask, "What is there to do?"

"Don't pretend to be pitiful! And don't act so naïve in front of your father!" Ji Zhu slammed the table, "I know I didn't hurt you!"

"You dare to say 'your father' to me?" Ji Mo cried out. He

suddenly became livid and jumped up, “Damn you, Ji Zhu! You dare to call yourself father with your father?” (TLN: “Your father” is a direct translation, it is used by someone who puts himself high above others.)

Rui Bu Tong closed his eyes; his face twisted. What kind of brothers are these…

Right away, Ji Zhu’s cooled temper rose once more. He jumped up as well. Right after, Rui Bu Tong saw two brothers with the same father and mother saying your father with every other words as they fought on the floor…

Bam bam bam!

Pop pop pop!

Boom boom boom!

Rui Bu Tong’s eyes blinked with disbelief. His eyeballs almost fell out of their sockets… This is too much! They are really a pair of exceptional brothers!

Chapter 289: The big move: Capture King of Hell Chu

It eventually ended.

The two brothers laid on the ground groaning with bruised faces.

“Motherf*, this bastard advanced a lot!” The eldest Ji young master, Ji Zhu, took a few deep breaths and gently rubbed the bruises on his face. He did not stop cursing, “You dare to hit me? I am your big brother. It has always been the case that your eldest brother is like your father. You are a damn bastard with no respect for the elderly or your ancestors.”

With these words, Rui Bu Tong’s stomach was hurting from holding in his laugher: You don’t feel embarrassed saying eldest brother is like a father?

“You bastard, I’ll beat you to death!” Second young master of the Ji clan, Ji Mo, was kneeling on the ground and rubbing his beaten butt. He hissed and did not stop muttering.

“Ji Mo, after returning to the clan, I will tell father about all of your actions, from beginning to end. Let him punish you! There will be a meeting of the elders to discuss your punishment... Ooh...” Ji Zhu devilishly counted his fingers.

“Aah! Big brother! Big brother!” Ji Mo immediately wailed, “We are brothers with the same mother. Our hearts are connected; we share the same blood. When the bone breaks, the tendon hurts... I am your brother. You... you... you... you are not that heartless, are you? If you tell the clan, I am done. At the least, I will be locked up in a dark cave for three years...”

“Huh huh!” Ji Zhu sneered, “That’s none of my business!”

“Tell me, what conditions do you have for keeping my secret?” Ji Mo looked up miserably. He looked as if he was ready to make the ultimate sacrifice.

“Conditions… it’s simple!” Ji Zhu satisfyingly looked at Ji Mo.

“Tell me. I will accept it!” Ji Mo said bravely. He like a dead pig that was no longer afraid of boiling water.

“When we get back to the clan, you must put all of the blames on me. You must fiercely tell on me and make the clan strip me of my heir position. I will take the blame for you; that is all.” Ji Zhu blinked a few times and said heroically, “I am your big brother. In such great disaster, how could this big brother not shoulder the blames for you?”

Rui Bu Tong was still restless on the sideline when he heard Ji Zhu said this. He could not help but feel dizzy…

This… this is a condition?

“No!” Ji Mo said emotionally, “Whoever did it has to take the punishment! How can I allow my beloved brother shoulder the blame for me?! I have decided! Even if I have to go to a dark cave, I am willing to accept it!”

“No! Little brother, you are still young! Let me go to the dark cave.” Ji Zhu said sincerely, “I will leave the clan in your hands…”

“No! Big brother… you are the pillar of the clan!” Ji Mo said determinedly.

“Motherf*! Will you be the clan leader?” Ji Zhu yelled angrily. His eyes were filled with fiery anguish and a hint of madness.

“Absolutely not! I won’t do it even if you kill me! Even if you chop off my head, I won’t do it!” Ji Mo said fervently, “Even if you kowtow in front of me, this second young master won’t do it! Heads could fall and blood could run, but this body must be free!”

“Woah…” Ji Zhu rushed up crazily and squeezed Ji Mo’s neck with his two hands. He shook forcefully and ground his teeth, “You… will you do this?”

Ji Mo was strangled to the point his tongue was sticking out, but

he still remained valiantly unyielding, “Even... if... I... die... I... won’t!”

Rui Bu Tong was confused from watching the scene. In other clans, the position of clan leader could cause brothers to fight each other to the death. No one could ever imagine that these two brothers were pushing it toward each other...

It is only the position of clan leader, do they have to act this way?

But thinking it over, he immediately felt relieved. These two punks in front of him were unwilling to sit if he could lie down. With them as clan leaders, that would be a bit rough for people...

With this kind of situation, Rui Bu Tong could only click his tongue. This world truly has everything.

“Second brother, you must have pity on me.” Ji Zhu suddenly dropped his hands helplessly and wailed, “You must love me. You can see how lazy I am; how can I have the ability to become clan leader. I am on the verge of going crazy from all of the pressure from father and those elders. I have to study those damn formalities every day...”

Ji Mo also wailed loudly, “Big brother, please spare me because I am still young. My young heart cannot take such devastation. Woo woo woo...”

The two brothers held their heads and cried.

Rui Bu Tong fell to the ground with confusion. He finally could not take it anymore; he pounded on the ground and burst into tears, “Please spare me... I am too pitiful...”

While these three punks were performing their comedic act, Diwu Qing Rou’s Golden Horse Riders Department had gathered their martial experts and surrounded Heaven Reaching Tower.

Jing Meng Hun led the heavily armed group himself!

This mission was to capture King of Hell Chu!

Jing Meng Hun absolutely believed that this was the biggest mission they ever had in the past few years! This mission was definitely going to be written down in history!

“Is the target still here?” Jing Meng Hun asked in a low voice.

“The target is still here.” One of the Revered Martial Artists in charge of surveillance reported. A look of joy appeared in his eyes as he tried to suppress his excitement, “I have been watching closely. Looking through those curtains, I could see that the person is still sitting at the table reading. He seems to be calculating something and has not moved.”

“You’re sure?”

“I’m sure?”

Jing Meng Hun was assured. He stood up and smiled, “If this mission is successful, I will give credit for your service!”

“Everything is done under your leadership, sir!” That Revered Martial Artist happily bowed. He felt as if his body was a floating cloud.

“Attention, all teams!” Jing Meng Hun’s two eyes flashed brightly. He looked sharply over all of his subordinates and said, “This mission is of great importance! There must not be any mistakes! This could affect Great Zhao’s fortune and the Prime Minister’s plan to unite the world! Understood?”

“Is it that important?” An unconvinced ninth grade Revered Martial Artist asked.

“I will not hesitate to tell you. The person in this room…” Jing Meng Hun looked toward that window and lowered his voice making it seem even more awe-inspiring, “is none other than King of Hell Chu!”

“King of Hell Chu!” Everyone’s expression changed. Some people could not even control themselves and let out a gasp.

This is too shocking! Too surprising! Too…

I can't believe it's King of Hell Chu! Aaah!

Jing Meng Hun quickly covered the mouth of a Revered Martial Artist who almost yelled out loud. There was immediately slapping followed by a quiet scolding, "Motherf*! What are you yelling for? You'll startle…"

That Revered Martial Artist who was slapped left and right now had disheveled hair like he had been through a tornado. Jing Meng Hun let go of his hand, and the Revered Martial Artist immediately spat out blood and a few teeth. Unbelievably, he still asked excitedly, "This is really King of Hell Chu?"

Jing Meng Hun looked at him contemptuously then looked at everyone else. He scolded, "Looking at the bunch of you, you really can't do great things. It's just catching a person; is that something to get so excited over? Have we never captured anyone?"

Everyone nodded like pecking chickens, but they could not hide the excitement on their faces.

King of Hell Chu… This is King of Hell Chu…

While Jing Meng Hun was scolding people, this King level leader remained as cool as ice; his expression remained unchanged. After a lifetime of rolling around in danger, he also could not help but turn red from excitement.

This… is King of Hell Chu!

Jing Meng Hun quietly swallowed before saying, "Stay alert and follow my orders!

"Yes, sir!"

"Team one, team two, and team three!" Jing Meng Hun's voice was low and hurried. It was filled with pressure like the wind before a storm!

"Yes, sir!" Their spirits were rising.

“Carefully block all exits! From this moment on, not even a mouse can come out!”

“Understood!”

“Team four, team five, and team six!”

“Yes, sir!”

“Secretly block the air! Even a fly cannot get out!”

“Understood!”

“Team seven, team eight, and team nine!”

“Yes, sir!”

“Assist!”

“Understood!”

“Wu Tian!”

“Yes, sir!” Yin Wu Tian stepped forward. His eyes were filled with excitement for revenge against the King of Hell Chu that caused his brother, Yin Wu Fa, to become a handicap. This was a mortal hatred. At this moment, his chance for revenge had arrived.

“Take your people and attack from the window!”

“Understood!”

“All of the remaining people, come with me through the main door!”

“Understood!”

Jing Meng Hun’s skilled leadership could not be denied. Within moments, he had appropriately arranged everything. Everyone was in their rightful place!

Everything was ready!

Jing Meng Hun could feel his heartbeat accelerating!

Everyone felt their hearts beating madly! Their hearts were

beating so fiercely that they seemed to almost pop out of their chests! They were panting like men who had not been in the bedrooms for a few decades and had just now discovered their beautiful brides...

Gulp... Some people could not help but swallow several times...

Everyone was waiting for the opportunity to make their move; everyone was waiting for Jing Meng Hun's arm gesture.

In this moment, time seemed to have stood still!

Not a single movement.

Finally, all of the teams got into their appointed positions!

Jing Meng Hun's eyes suddenly flashed with an icy light!

Everyone's breathing suddenly stopped.

Jing Meng Hun's right arm slowly went up...

Everyone's heart almost jumped out of their throat...

Right after!

Jing Meng Hun forcefully slammed his arm down. A low voice sounded out; it was so powerful it shocked their spirit and made everyone slightly dizzy...

"Move...out...!"

When he said these two words, Jing Meng Hun's voice was even trembling slightly.

However, no one paid attention to Jing Meng Hun's emotion. The moment King level leader Jing Meng Hun gave the order, shadows shot up like arrows.

Their speed was extremely fast and definitely exceeded ordinary thresholds! At this point in time, everyone seemed to be excited to the point of breakthrough!

Since the establishment of Golden Horse Riders Department, this mission was the greatest mission ever.

Capture King of Hell Chu.

Jing Meng Hun flew like a thunderbolt as he led everyone. They flew through a distance of one hundred feet like a light wisp of smoke. They essentially became nothingness as they advanced into Heaven Reaching Tower!

Then, they were like a soft mist as they quietly floated up the stairs!

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

Finally!

They had arrived!

The closed door in front of them was where King of Hell Chu was staying!

Chapter 290: Where is he?

Looking at the closed door, Jing Meng Hun could only feel all the hatred rising in his heart. In this recent time period, every mission of Golden Horse Riders Department had failed in the hands of King of Hell Chu. Out of four King level leaders, one was handicapped, and one had lost his life!

Among ninth grade Revered Martial Artists, they had lost no less than ten. In terms of core powers, dozens had also died! Even a few day days ago, in this very room, he only said one line and was scolded by his opponent like a servant!

All of these things were caused by this one person!

Today, you will meet retribution!

Jing Meng Hun's eyes flashed with hatred and gratification. His breathing paused. All of a sudden, he gently raised his left arm majestically without making a noise! Everyone behind him understood and lowered their bodies.

Finally, a loud bang came from the window!

This was the sound of Yin Wu Tian forcefully smashing the window to pieces.

Yin Wu Tian had made his move!

Jing Meng Hun did not hesitate. With the unstoppable momentum of lightning, he kicked the door with the force of thunder. Bang! The door to the room broke into pieces and shot straight into the room.

Jing Meng Hun immediately stepped into the room. He commandingly yelled out, "King of Hell Chu! Surrender yourself up! Hahaha..."

Inside the flying rubble, time and space seemed to have become blurred at this moment. Nothing was very clear. Only a silhouette

of the person facing him could be seen. This person was also holding a battle-ready stance! Bam! They palmed each other. The person facing him suddenly yelled out in terror, “Big brother! It’s me!”

Yin Wu Tian!

Jing Meng Hun let out a scream from shock. He waved his sleeve, and all of the chaotic debris in the air immediately cleared away and flew to the side. The view of the room became clear right away.

From behind him and the window in front of him, the martial experts of Golden Horse Riders Department poured into this room with icy killing aura surrounding from their entire bodies!

Jing Meng Hun stared and almost choked. Everyone who advanced in also maintained the same action; they stared in one direction with gaping mouths.

In that place, there was a desk and a chair. On the chair was a rolled up comforter. Surprisingly, there was a rope tying the top making it look exactly like a neck of a person. The posture looked exactly like that of a person who was contemplating...

Besides this, there was nobody in sight!

Jing Meng Hun whipped his head around and suddenly grabbed the neck of the bastard standing next to him. He asked ferociously, “Where is he?”

“I am talking to you!” Jing Meng Hun flipped his hand. Bam! This Revered Martial Artist’s head flipped back. He spat out blood, and a handful of teeth clattered on the ground. He became unconscious.

He could not have picked a better time to be unconscious!

He had avoided answering this question that he had no answers for.

“Useless!” Jing Meng Hun tossed him to the ground and yelled furiously.

“There is a letter here.” Yin Wu Tian stood on the side with an icy countenance.

This was a very ordinary letter. This was written on the outside of the envelope: Dear Prime Minister Diwu; Chu Yang thanks you!

“Chu Yang! Chu Yang!” All of the blood inside Jing Meng Hun’s body immediately rushed to his head. He stared at this letter and yelled, “So this was King of Hell Chu! Motherf*!”

At this very moment, an icy voice rang out, “King level leader Jing, has this door of Heaven Reaching Tower sinned against you? You smashed it. Is your hatred that great?”

Jing Meng Hun immediately turned around. At the door, he saw a very fat man standing there and staring at him coldly.

His usual money-making demeanor had disappeared. In place of it was something ready to erupt!

The manager of Heaven Reaching Tower, Du Fa Cai!

“Manager Du? I have nothing against you people, this person staying at Heaven Reaching Tower is an Iron Cloud spy! Moreover, he is my mortal enemy!” Jing Meng Hun said gravely, “Manager Du, you owe me an explanation!”

“Explanation? Hahaha...” Du Fa Cai laughed icily, “Jing Meng Hun, you should understand it! Heaven Reaching Tower does not belong to Great Zhao! Don’t even mention anything about Iron Cloud spies; even someone who killed your dad and stole your wife would be my precious guest if he has gold and silver! I don’t need to explain anything to you. On the contrary, my Heaven Reaching Tower requires an explanation from you!”

“Even Golden Horse Riders Department... cannot cause trouble here!” Du Fa Cai said coldly, “Even your boss... Diwu Qing Rou... cannot do this!”

Du Fa Cai's eyes flashed with a terrifying light as he looked at Jing Meng Hun calmly.

Jing Meng Hun's countenance became difficult to look at in a blink of an eye. He had just realized that the person in front of him was not someone to be pushed around.

This was a Bamboo person!

A person of the greatest dark force in Middle Three Heavens! If he went against them and angered that crazy woman, Jun Xi Zhu, she would definitely not mind bringing all of the dark forces in Middle Three Heavens down to Lower Three Heavens for training.

As the leader of the dark forces, this Dark Bamboo only somewhat cared about rules. In most cases, she never allowed rules to govern her!

Therefore, among all of the powers in Middle Three Heavens, only Dark Bamboo's forces could come down to Lower Three Heavens to make money.

The reason was simple: Who has ever seen gangsters obeying the law?

It was fortunate that they were only making money. If they wanted to do other things, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Diwu Qing Rou was sitting in his manor. Facing him was Gao Sheng.

Since the great clans of Middle Three Heavens entered Continent Center, Gao Sheng became a reclusive hermit. If he had to go outside, he would go with his face covered. Even his servants had to cover their faces.

He would not allow anyone to recognize him.

This eldest young master Gao had a burden in his heart! That burden was Gao Sheng's nightmare. While that nightmare had yet

to appear, Gao Sheng did not dare make a mistake.

What misfortune! Gao Sheng had lamented to himself endlessly.

Each time he thought of that Miss Hu Yan, young master Gao felt like he just swallowed a fly. It was a kind of horrible thing that just made him want to puke.

“Prime Minister, do you think that they will be capture King of Hell Chu in this mission?” Gao Sheng asked.

“Right now, we can only say that young master Chu is a fake; we cannot say that he is King of Hell Chu.” Diwu Qing Rou said calmly, “Before King level leader Jing returns, anything is possible.”

“This mission has been carefully planned; with such a massive force, do you still think that something unexpected could happen?” Gao Sheng asked in surprise. In his mind, there was absolutely no flaw in this mission.

It would be difficult for King of Hell Chu to escape even if he could fly!

“Whenever you do something, you have to use all of your efforts. At the same time, you have to do it in the best possible way and reduce the endless joy from expectations of success. You must use all of your efforts to think about all the mishaps you might run into...!” Diwu Qing Rou said somberly, “That way, you would have the chance to reap in your rewards! Even if you succeed as you expected, it will bring you joy and fulfillment!”

“Any sort of arrogance or overconfidence could lead to failure. Furthermore, with your frame of mind, failure would create an unbearable shock to your psyche!”

Diwu Qign Rou looked deeply at Gao Sheng and said, “Gao Sheng, you must remember this point.”

Gao Sheng became pensive; he muttered those words and nodded his head.

“In all of history, countless heroic leaders have had to face the shock of failure! In the eyes of the world, at that point and time, they could not be destroyed by such shock. But things change. Who would have predicted them? Before those heroic leaders could rise up from such shock, their troops failed, and their entire campaigns were lost! Do you know why?”

“Their expectations were too great? Their ambitions got the better of them?” Gao Sheng asked in puzzlement.

“Yes and no.” Diwu Qing Rou said, “It is because they made themselves fail! They thought that victory was secure in their grasp. Perhaps when they were planning their battle, they were planning their victory as well... But the moment of failure is most dangerous! Before then, thousands of failures could not shock a person, but at that moment, it is totally damaging!”

“So, throughout history, there were many such battles. Later generations have studied and asked questions, but there were no answers. Because no matter how you see it, failure was not possible! But they still failed. Battle strategists call these mystery cases. But there was one thing: those leaders’ minds were muddled; they caused themselves to fail. So any decisions they made were wrong! Failure was inevitable!”

“I also do not want to fail this time!” Diwu Qing Rou said casually, “So I never think about winning!”

“I understand!” Gao Sheng was completely convinced.

The moment closest to success was also the moment people were most sensitive. If they had to face shock...

Diwu Qing Rou said that was the moment when it would be most difficult to control one’s mental faculty!

“I you want to traverse Middle Three Heavens later, this will be very important to you.” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly.

“Yes.”

Right at that moment, a servant came in and reported, “Prime Minister, General Manager Lu from the royal palace came with a royal decree.”

“Royal decree?” Diwu Qing Rou frowned. These words were truly unfamiliar. Since His Majesty took him into his trust, to when he became suspicious of him, to when he became guarded against him, to when he hated him… He never received any royal decree.

How was it that a royal decree came at such a time?

“Let him in!” Diwu Qing Rou said.

Not long after, general manager Lu Ren Jia wobbled in with a face filled with displeasure.

When receiving a royal decree, one had to be in the middle of the main hall. Young and old had to kneel and bow in reverence.

Currently, Diwu Qing Rou was actually receiving the royal decree in his study?

General manager Lu was not happy.

“The royal decree arrives… Diwu Qing Rou, receive the royal decree!” Lu Ren Jia raised his neck and yelled loudly at Diwu Qing Rou.

Chapter 291: Little people change history

Diwu Qing Rou remained unmoved on his seat as he calmly watched Lu Ren Jia. This kind of calm was as deep as the sea; it made general manager Lu Ren Jia terrified as he stood facing Diwu Qing Rou.

He came because of the royal decree, but at this moment, he felt as if Diwu Qing Rou was standing in the clouds and looking down at him. While his gaze did not show the least bit of emotion, Lu Ren Jia could feel a clear sense of disdain in it.

At this moment, this general manager was but an ant at the bottom of a mountain.

This kind of feeling made general manager Lu feel feel very unhappy.

He saw himself as being looked down upon.

No matter what, he was a powerful general manager! He got this position only after he lost his manhood; with money and beauty, general manager Lu was not interested. His attention was concentrated on power!

The desire for respect from others grew fiercely with each day! In fact, his self-esteem grew to an abnormal level.

“The royal decree has arrived! Diwu Qing Rou, receive the royal decree!” After not receiving the greeting he had hoped for, general manager Lu looked at Diwu Qing Rou and yelled out again.

Diwu Qing Rou’s brows slightly pinched together. Lu Ren Jia did not know why, but there was a chill over his entire body.

“Read it!”

Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance was calm just like before, and his gaze was still as deep as frigid water. He words were gentle, but he had completely shattered Lu Ren Jia’s abnormal self-esteem!

At this time, he could sense that if he did not read it, he would not ever have the chance to read it again!

Behind him, four little eunuchs standing in ceremony were already shaking violently from fear.

“As the heavens willed, the emperor decrees...” The chanting voice of a male duck rung out.

“Give me the content!” Diwu Qign Rou said calmly.

“...” Lu Ren Jia choked and almost suffered from an internal injury.

“... Diwu Qing Rou is given the responsibility of recovering all of the treasures from the royal vault...” Lu Ren Jia was finally no longer able to fight against this pressure and got straight to the point.

“The royal vault was robbed?” Diwu Qing Rou frowned and muttered to himself, “He wants everything returned?” There was a comical tone in his voice.

Gao Sheng almost laughed as he stood on the side.

“Get out.” Diwu Qing Rou looked at Lu Ren Jia.

Lu Ren Jia controlled his anger and said, “Prime Minister Diwu, before this servant came here, His Majesty had said that whatever Prime Minister Diwu took, you must have need of. But these are still treasures gathered by the royal family. His Majesty hopes that Prime Minister Diwu would be understanding of the predicament that His Majesty is in...”

“Mm, I understand.” Diwu Qing Rou said casually.

However, these words made general manager Lu’s eyes widened. His Majesty asks for your understanding out of politeness; you are really “understanding”?

“His Majesty also gave an oral decree.” Lu Ren Jia gritted his teeth and said.

“Huh?” Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance remained unchanged, but general manager Lu could sense that he was losing his patience.

“His Majesty said… He hopes that Diwu Qing Rou knows what it means to have a bad name and would not become a traitor! If not, He would not mind losing everything.” Lu Ren Jia said slowly.

In fact, these words were not the emperor’s decree. These were the words spoken in private between the emperor and empress. At the time, general manager Lu was waiting to serve not too far away. After hearing these words, he had placed Diwu Qing Rou among the ranks of officials who were about to be deposed and executed at any moment.

If the emperor spoke of him that way, how can he be a good official?

Prime Minister? So what? In history, were there any high ranking officials that cannot be killed by the emperor? Diwu Qing Rou, you might be powerful, but you are still just another subject!

So, today, in order to protect his pitiful self-esteem, general manager Lu coldly spoke these words.

He had expected to see Diwu Qing Rou sweating and kowtowing after hearing them…

If that was the case, general manager Lu would arrogantly say: If you knew this was going to happen, why did you do it in the first place? I can’t help you… Then he would wave his sleeves and leave…

He would leave behind a terrified Diwu Qing Rou in regrets!

Sure enough, Diwu Qing Rou’s countenance changed after hearing these words. His gaze slowly turned icy. There seemed to be a layer of ice slowly forming over his face.

“His Majesty said this?” Diwu Qing Rou said gravely.

“Of course!” General manager Lu looked up.

“I will trouble you to tell His Majesty that I, Diwu Qing Rou, will remember this! I will give His Majesty a satisfactory answer!” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly.

Before Lu Ren Jia could speak, Gao Sheng waved his arm, “Someone! Kick this eunuch out!”

In a blink of an eye, large men ferociously grabbed Lu Ren Jia and his entourage and dragged them out without any mercy.

“Prime Minister, don’t get angry with this. It’s not likely that these words were said by the emperor.” Gao Sheng comforted.

“I know this is not the emperor’s oral decree!” Diwu Qing Rou laughed softly.

“If that is the case, why…”

“While they are not the emperor’s oral decree, the emperor definitely said these words!” Diwu Qing Rou said slowly.

“…” Gao Sheng was speechless.

The emperor said these words? Of course!

If there is no fire, how can there be smoke? Lu Ren Jia was just a eunuch. Even if he was brave, he would not dare make up the emperor’s words. Right now, his saying so was proof that the emperor did say this.

Friction had existed between the royal family and Diwu Qing Rou for a long time. However, the two sides never completely turned against each other. The royal family hated Diwu Qing Rou. They resented that they could not chop this incredibly powerful official into thousands of pieces. But they also knew that Great Zhao could not be without Diwu Qing Rou.

Everyone knew well in their heart that what Great Zhao needed was to be a fortified nation to be wealthy and rise above others! And what Diwu Qing Rou needed was to unify the world and create an unparalleled authority!

At a glance, their goals were one and the same. In reality, they were not alike. Diwu Qing Rou was the kind of person that would fight for his ideals and forget about himself. His life's goal was to control everything and use his wisdom to unify the world!

Diwu Qing Rou did not care about power! Power was only a tool for him to achieve his goal!

Therefore, in this point, it could be said that the two sides needed each other!

However, Diwu Qing Rou's power in the court was at the point where he could have easily taken over ruling position! But he did not do that. This hinted at something: You can do your emperor job while I do what I do! You can enjoy your glory and wealth while I fight for this empire!

This was their unspoken exchange.

But such an exchange, such an official... no matter how talented he was, he would still be a sore in the emperor's eyes! But the emperor of Great Zhao could only accept it right now. While the emperor was angry to an extreme point... he could only endure!

This situation continued like so. It continued until the battles ended, and there was no winner or loser.

This was the history of Great Zhao! Its official history!

However, right now, because of the words of a eunuch... because of his fierce and abnormal self-esteem, this smooth and beneficial history became twisted in a strange manner.

Because of a few words, Diwu Qing Rou and the royal family no longer had any negotiating room.

It was especially troublesome in the fact that there were four little eunuchs behind this eunuch and there was Gao Sheng behind Diwu Qing Rou. If they were ordinary people, Diwu Qing Rou would not mind silencing them all and maintaining the existing status quo.

But he could not kill Gao Sheng.

If he could not kill Gao Sheng, then he could kill the five eunuchs. But killing them would make it look as if he was afraid. However, in letting them go back... the friction only intensified.

At this point, it was no longer important whether the nation's vault was looted or not! The important thing was... the fight for power in Great Zhao. Because of the mouth of a minor person, history had changed.

History is full of twists and turns like a drama.

Who said a minor character could not change history?

General manager Lu had done it! With the position of a eunuch, he stirred up the heavens by saying a few words!

It could be said that he was the most monstrous eunuch in all of history!

One could imagine that no matter how things developed after today... or whether general manager Lu lived or died beyond this day... or who would win this continental battle... The fame of this Fantasy Night Phoenix would surely be imprinted in the history of Nine Heavens!

"The nation's vault was robbed!" Diwu Qing Rou's eyes flashed coldly as he went through each detail, "Within one night, from the moment of chaos to the moment all the young masters left, it was definitely no more than ten hours! And Golden Horse Riders Department surrounded the outside the whole time. There was definitely no one carrying anything big out of the palace! In fact, there was not even a small bag!"

"The time frame was too short; there is definitely no way to clean out the nation's vault in this time frame!"

"But the emperor said that the nation's vault is empty right now! And he wants me to return everything!"

Diwu Qing Rou laughed loudly. His laughter was as cold as ice, “He even said that he would not be afraid of losing everything…”

“Haha…” Diwu Qing Rou smiled gently, but this smile made Gao Sheng shiver.

What Diwu Qing Rou just said revealed many things. But in short it spoke to one conclusion: The royal family of Great Zhao could no longer endure Diwu Qing Rou’s authoritative power and was about to make a move!

How could Diwu Qing Rou not fight back against these people? Diwu Qing Rou always had the habit of making preemptive moves…

“But the royal family is really this stupid?” This was what puzzled Gao Sheng the most.

“The royal family’s stupidity surpasses everyone’s imagination!” Diwu Qing Rou spoke this sentence and put the final nail on the coffin for the entire thing.

Everything that happened from this point onward could not be undone!

Unable to catch King of Hell Chu, Jing Meng Hun returned to the Prime Minister’s manor with a letter and an IOU.

First line: Today, I owe Heaven Reaching Tower a total of one hundred thousand silver taels for damage to property!

Second line: Today, I owe Heaven Reaching Tower a total of nine hundred thousand silver taels for damage to reputation!

Third line: Signer thumb print.

Signer: Diwu Qing Rou.

Representative: Jing Meng Hun.

His bright red thumb print…

Chapter 292: King of Hell Chu's letter is priceless!

When Diwu Qing Rou saw this IOU note, his face looked very interesting.

Bothering Heaven Reaching Tower and capturing people at Heaven Reaching Tower, Diwu Qing Rou was already prepared to pay a definite price to Jun Xi Zhu! Otherwise, he would not have enough face for her to grind through!

However, first of all, Diwu Qing Rou thought that being able to capture King of Hell Chu was worth paying not just one or two million taels; even ten million taels was worth it! But they were not able to capture him.

Second, this price of one million taels was too high for not being able to capture him! They wasted efforts and caused a ruckus, but they were unable to touch even one of his hair. Moreover, they were even insulted. And now they had to pay one million taels?

Third, what annoyed Diwu Qing Rou most was this: One million taels was just one million taels... But... why did they have to write an IOU? Would a King level leader of Golden Horse Riders not pay his debt? (TLN: This dude did steal from the wrong people in Middle Three Heavens and barely escaped with the help of Yin Wu Fa and his brother, Yin Wu Tian.)

Even worse was the fact that his great name was written in it!

"Good!" Diwu Qing Rou gritted his teeth and praised, "I never realized that King level leader Jing is not only talented in leading Golden Horse Riders Department and martial arts, but your literary skill is so incredible as well! Your writing is so majestic; you wrote an IOU with such air! What a talent!"

Jing Meng Hun's head hung low. Right now, he was too shameful to look at anyone.

“Good! Very good!” Diwu Qing Rou took a deep breath. He felt his anger rising from within. How many years had it been since he last had this kind of uncontrollable feeling?

“I sent you to capture people, and you bring back an IOU?” Diwu Qing Rou’s chest was heaving nonstop. His voice just still calm, but his gaze became fierce.

“Prime… Prime Minister, please forgive me!” Jing Meng Hun bowed.

“Hmm!” Diwu Qing Rou snorted. He was finally done with his anger, or perhaps he finally managed to control his anger.

“Let me see what is in this letter.” Diwu Qign Rou took that letter. He close his eyes and took a deep breath to place his mind in a calm state as before.

This letter could be from his greatest enemy. No matter what was written in it, he had to deal with it carefully! If his state of mind was unsettled, he could not read this letter!

Then he opened his eyes and looked at this letter!

“Dear Prime Minister Diwu. Chu Yang thanks you.” Diwu Qing Rou gently read the whole thing. He even slapped his thigh once with a look of admiration.

“These words are written in a very dignified manner, but looking at each word, there seem to be a grand and dangerous air like a sword that pierces the heavens!”

Diwu Qing Rou said casually, “To judge people, you must look at their brush strokes. This character likes to take the offensive!”

Han Bu Chu stepped forward. He looked and frowned, “Prime Minister, while these brush strokes seem lofty and dangerous, they are also very calm! Plus… they are very cautious. This…”

“Exactly. This person moves forward to attack and back to defend! He calculates very carefully.” Diwu Qing Rou said, “But his

brush strokes hint at surprise moves. This person likes to use sneak attacks!”

Diwu Qing Rou looked at these words for a while before saying, “His words flow smoothly without showing any signs of hastiness; it does not seem fake. Perhaps he had time to prepare. In other words, he left right after he ran into us! It is not unreasonable that King level leader Jing failed…”

After that, he opened the envelope and took out the letter.

Yet another beautiful set of brush strokes.

“Brother Diwu…

I have heard of your fame often, but hated the fact that we cannot meet. This time, little brother had travelled thousands of miles from the north to come to Great Zhao’s Continent Center to see you.

Last year, we dueled from thousands of miles away from each other. Some win and some lose; I have missed you greatly. Brother Diwu, you are thorough and plan without flaws. Your strategies from thousands of miles have become my inspiration!

Thousands of frosty miles and long, rough roads.

I finally met Brother Diwu the other day.

This life is not wasted! Brother Diwu controls Continent Center in your hand. You create your own fate; your foresight shines brightly like a torch. The fact that you figured out my identity is truly admirable!

Things are coming to a conclusion in Continent Center. I have to leave in a hurry with fear in my heart. One slow step, and I will become your prisoner.

A hasty goodbye; the paper is short, but our bond is long. Great Zhao is magnificent, and Continent Center is vast and opulent. All of this will remain in my heart! If fate allows, we will meet again

and drink together until we are drunk!

Looking at the heroes of the world, I see only Brother Diwu and me! Another day, when we are fighting on the battlefield, I will remember Brother Diwu's kindness for me today and repay it sincerely.

Little brother is still young, but people call me King of Hell; I could not help but feel embarrassed. I swear to not let down this name and take Brother Diwu's head with my own blade!

Goodbye from thousands of miles away. Until we meet again, I will be the victor and you will be my prisoner. I will greet you then. I did not have a chance to say goodbye, and you do not have to see me off. Prosperous Continent Center has turned into ruins; I am sorry. We each work for our own leader!

Our goals differ; there is only life or death!

Sincerely, Little Brother Chu Yang."

That was all of the details of the letter. Diwu Qing Rou read this letter with a bright smile on his face. His tone was clearer than it had ever been. It resonated through the little courtyard.

"King of Hell Chu is truly delusional!" Veins were popping up on Jing Meng Hun's forehead. He punched his thigh as he ground his teeth!

Han Bu Chu frowned, Cheng Yun He was silent, and Gao Sheng seemed to be contemplating.

"What do you think of this letter?" Diwu Qing Rou was finally done reading; he smiled and looked toward everyone.

"Prime Minister, this letter might not have been written by King of Hell Chu." Han Bu Chu said cautiously.

"I also feel the same. King of Hell Chu could not have written this letter." Cheng Yun He frowned after contemplating for a while.

"Oh?" Diwu Qing Rou's smile did not change.

“If he was leaving, he should just have left! King of Hell Chu came here and created chaos in Great Zhao; his goal was accomplished!” Han Bu Chu said in a low voice, “Moreover, given King of Hell Chu’s concise character, he could not have written such a superficial letter like this!”

“Exactly. Gloating after a success. Plus, it is filled with schadenfreude. His words are contradictory like two clashing armies…” Cheng Yun He said, “King of Hell Chu cannot be so shallow like that.”

“As for the brush strokes… it could be designed to arouse suspicion.” Han Bu Chu said, “Look, Prime Minister, the words in the letter and the words on the envelope might have been written by the same person, but there is a slight difference… The outside is flowing smoothly, but the inside is slightly hesitant… While it tried to show a smooth flow, it is still contradicting; it’s too tense…”

“King of Hell Chu is not impatient like that!” Cheng Yun He concluded.

“You are wrong in this!” Diwu Qing Rou said casually, “If you think that way, you have fallen for King of Hell Chu’s trap!”

“Trap?” Han Bu Chu’s eyes widened.

“This letter was indeed written by King of Hell Chu!” Diwu Qing Rou raised up the delicate piece of paper and said with a deterministic tone!

“Huh?” Han Bu Chu and Cheng Yun He were both surprised.

“I know what you are thinking.” Diwu Qing Rou said, “First of all, there is currently another big commotion in the royal court of Iron Cloud. Plus, the officials caught this time were the ones that managed to escape last time. The tactics used were not too different.”

“Second, the rumors that plagued Iron Cloud were silenced

within a few days by King of Hell Chu's monstrous methods! Because of all of this, thousands were killed without a care!"

"These two things carry the marks of King of Hell Chu. So you are all questioning whether King of Hell Chu came to Great Zhao at all!" Diwu Qing Rou said casually.

"Yes, that's exactly it." Han Bu Chu said with a frown.

"But such line of thoughts is wrong!" Diwu Qing Rou grunted, "How could the actions in Iron Cloud be so quick this time? And with such impeccable timing?"

"If King of Hell Chu was truly in Iron Cloud, he would probably not deal with things like this. Given the way he does things, he would set the baits for a big fish and make us think that our rumors were effective. From that point, he would hunt down our people... He is definitely capable of that! But he did not; why?"

"This is the best counter-move. And we already thought carefully about how we deal with this. But they did not use it. They actually abandoned it... This is clearly them being afraid that the real King of Hell Chu would run into mishaps in Great Zhao so they had to misdirect us!"

"This letter intentionally uses a provoking tone to mislead us into thinking that the person in Great Zhao was not King of Hell Chu; why?"

"Moreover, when we think about this, two lines of thoughts come to mind: One, King of Hell Chu has always been in Iron Cloud! Two... King Hell Chu came here, but he is already gone!"

Diwu Qing Rou laughed coldly, "When you have these two thoughts, you will be led by the nose by King of Hell Chu in everything that happens after! In the end, you will be pushed into a corner by him. And you will probably not know that you were being led by him!"

"If the leader is currently you and not me, I can declare that,

even in Great Zhao, you will all fail miserably by the hands of King of Hell Chu!”

Diwu Qing Rou’s expression was grave.

Han Bu Chu and company sweated like rain.

“Even I who could see through his schemes, have to use all of my efforts to reduce loss before we can capture King of Hell Chu! I don’t even have the ability to completely avoid loss!”

“Put this letter in my bedroom.” Diwu Qing Rou said in a low voice, “I want to carefully analyze the brush strokes of this King of Hell Chu! You should know that this is the only writing of King of Hell Chu! For us, these words are priceless!”

“Yes!”

“Golden Horse Riders Department will continue with the evacuation plans; take all of the important things first.”

“Yes!”

“Pay attention to news of that sword.” Traces of worry appeared on Diwu Qing Rou’s forehead, “One saber already destroyed the royal palace; what will this sword be like?”

Chapter 293: The Sword's Chaos Begins

"Commander Gao Shang Jun, Commander Yan Cheng Huan, and Commander Wu Yong Jun, kindly pay heed to what I am about to say. The three of you are expected to immediately dispatch three large army units in full force and launch a grand-scale attack on Wuji! Be sure to return before the summer arrives. Even if you are unable to destroy the entire nation, then you must destroy at least half of it before withdrawing!" Diwu Qing Rou's gaze turned grave and icy as he issued this command.

"Yes!"

Wuji was located to the south of Great Zhao, and although it must be experiencing midwinter at present, a northern nation like Great Zhao was much warmer than its counterparts, thanks to the ongoing season of spring. This was the reason why the northern climate wouldn't pose a hindrance to the marching armies from Great Zhao to Wuji……

Every year during the winter season, the north would take a rest from participating in wars. The south on the contrary, would begin waging wars during this exact same period of time! And once the north was able to wage wars again at the end of winter season, the south would start experiencing sizzling hot summers; almost to the extent where just one step out in the heat could cause heatstroke to a soldier……

But this time, the strategy behind the dispatch of troops was obviously different from the past.

Both Han Bu Chu and Cheng Yun started breathing heavily when they suddenly figured out the hidden purpose in Diwu Qing Rou's order: The next year's summer was going to witness the start of a decisive war with the Iron Cloud!

Moreover, this world's victor would be decided by the outcome of this war!

'Launch an attack on Wuji, and be sure to return before the arrival of summer; but only after causing at least half of its destruction'. The information contained in this sentence was just too rich and profound!

Prime Minister Diwu was finally going to put his plan to action!

Diwu Qing Rou suddenly went silent following a series of complying responses from his subordinates.

A good while later, he finally heaved a deep sigh of regret: "To resist foreign aggression, one must first deal with internal affairs; Chu Yan Wang, I allowed you to take advantage of me just this time....."

He paused for a second, and then continued: "Officials of the government shall spare no effort to stay low-key at all times; first we'll let those royalists gather up at one place, and then we will expose them all at once. We will make a list of their names! If they want to make peace with us, then it's fine! If they can't, then....."

A crude smile appeared on his face as a sharp killing intention flashed in his eyes!

His murderous intentions were so intense that it invoked an illusion of a sole hand gearing up to butcher countless senior veterans in a split-second. This illusion was scary enough to make anyone's hair stand on end!

Meanwhile, Chu Yan Wang was in his brother's company.....

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing had checked in an inn as two ordinary vagrant men. The whiskers studding Chu Yang face made him look like a young dragon; this Chinese city was really bustling with people these days.....

Gu Du Xing was trying his best to be careful while sensing the intention of the sword he was holding in his hand.

Chu Yan Wang was resting in his bed, and appeared similar to a crouching yellow dragon! And since he was completely motionless,

it almost seemed as if he had already fallen asleep.....

Even Gu Du Xing thought that Chu Yang was in deep sleep.

However, no one knew that Chu Yan Wang was actually inspecting the harvest he had obtained from the Great Zhao's royal palace. His eyes were shining brightly as he was literally drooling all over the place while sorting through the treasures which were present in the Nine Tribulations Space.

"Bumper harvest! Superb harvest! Ha ha ha....." Chu Yang observed the contents of each and every iron shelf that was present inside the Nine Tribulations Space, dancing and gesticulating with joy all the while.

"Stop, do not move! You better not move from there!" Chu Yang rushed forward and firmly grasped an iron slab that was exuding a rainbow-colored starlight, but just then, the Nine Tribulation Sword's tip actually circled around him quite sharply, and then chose a particular angle and successfully drilled its way into that iron slab.....

Hiss.....

In the blink of an eye, there remained only a fist-sized piece of that rainbow-colored iron slab in Chu Yang's hand.

"Crap! Didn't I tell you to stop?" Chu Yang said in an angry tone.

The sword's spirit moved sideways before letting out a sigh: "Come on, just let me absorb whatever I want.... after all I have been hungry for more than ten thousand years.....Not to mention this is for your own good!"

Chu Yang was stunned for a second, but then he leaped up immediately and picked up a piece of shining black steel which was almost the size of a person's head: "I allow you to consume other stuff but this one is mine. I plan to use it during the redeployment of the Nine Tribulations Sword."

"Nightmare steel?" The sword's spirit felt helpless as the sword's

tip went forward to greet this item.

The sword's tip flew over and took a few laps around the nightmare steel quite reluctantly. Suddenly the the image of a child who wants to eat candy but is not allowed to appeared inside Chu Yang's mind……

He almost turned tender-hearted for a moment.

However, he held himself back as he resolutely said: "I am going to use this for something big! But I am sure that more than half of it should still remain unused after I am done with it. In that case, you may consume whatever is left of it if you want, and I wouldn't mind it at all. But in return, I want you to remain patient till then."

The sword's tip saw a firm determination in his words, and was forced to give up in the end.

"Hey, has the formation of a ninth grade dan taken place?" Chu Yang remembered seeing two large warehouses in the Great Zhao's royal palace, which were filled with piles of rare medicinal herbs. Of course, these warehouses were completely empty now.

All those medicinal herbs had already been absorbed by the Nine Tribulation Sword.

"If an ordinary elixir can heal the flesh and bones, and thereby save the life of a person who is struggling through life and death, then a ninth grade dan can save three such people in one shot." The sword's spirit stated leisurely: "The Great Zhao's royal palace indeed had a huge stockpile of numerous types of medicinal herbs, but none of them belonged to the category of the so-called 'legendary magic potion of the immortals'."

"Therefore, even though a real ninth grade dan can heal any injury, the ingredients were insufficient to make one." The sword's spirit slowly said: "The only missing ingredient was that of the nine wonderful medicines, which are absolutely essential to complete an authentic ninth grade dan."

"So, this basically means that an ordinary ninth grade dan cannot treat Mo Qing Wu's injuries?" Chu Yang asked.

"It certainly cannot."

Chu Yang almost passed upon noticing that the sword's spirit seemed quite happy while replying to his question: "Are you trying to tell me that even a massive stockpile of medicinal herbs proved insufficient to create a ninth grade dan?"

"You tell me, can 100,000 pounds of grass turn into a rare spirit mushroom?" The sword's spirit asked in disdain.

Chu Yang suddenly went silent.

Piles of gold and silver disappeared in front of him at a speed invisible to the naked eye. Such a massive amount of wealth would have been enough to fully equip five million soldiers! But the Nine Tribulations Sword turned it all into a pile of dust!

The Nine Tribulations Sword finally stopped swallowing, and a gratified smile finally appeared on the sword spirits' face as he said: "I have consumed the basic required amount of gold and silver, so I don't need to consume them from now onwards!"

Chu Yang's eyes opened wide as he looked at a small gold ingot and two silver ingots, the only three pieces remaining of what used to be a mountain of gold and silver. His hands and feet trembled for a while before he finally asked in a shaky voice: "Will you…….be consuming so much of other metals as well?"

"Keke…….it should not make much of a difference, I presume." The sword's spirit seemed to be somewhat embarrassed as he coughed twice before saying: "I am also going to need some other things……such as medicine, soul, flesh and blood……"

Chu Yan fell to the ground with his face upwards as he exclaimed in deep sorrow: [You killed me! I am so dead!] The so-called squanderer suddenly burst into tears! "This is a straightaway the defeat of any nation! No, this is like the defeat of an entire

continent....."

"Keke, a continent .....perhaps is not enough....." The sword's spirit made his point quite subtly.

Chu Yang finally collapsed.....

As soon as the Nine Tribulations Sword swallowed massive amounts of commodities, the sword's tip in his Dantian had turned pale golden in color, while the edge of the sword had turned a fine mix of pale golden color with hints of bright-silver here and there.....and it was sparkling incessantly.

Chu Yang was somewhat worried because if this continued, then his own belly might turn into a night-lantern and might start illuminating his entire body.

Fortunately, Chu Yang's worry did not turn into reality. In fact, the truth was that he was the only one who could see this Nine Tribulations Sword which was hidden inside his Dantian.....

Of course, there were also a lot of other items which were not need by the Nine Tribulations Sword.....These so-called leftovers precisely became a bunch of welfare gifts from the Nine Tribulations Sword 'Lord' to Chu Yan Wang!

The leftovers included a few well-made divine weapons, a large number of calligraphies and paintings created by various famous celebrity artists, several secret books on martial techniques and lots of.....art pieces as well.

Moreover, there were hundreds of imperial erotic diagrams among them.

Chu Yanwang was left dazed as looked at the dazzling array of different positions shown in those erotic diagrams; they appeared like glittering jewels to delight his eye. This is.....I cannot bear anymore.....

Chu Yan Wang suddenly arose with a swish.

Gu Du Xing was meditating to perceive the sword's intention when he suddenly saw his Boss Chu rising straight up from the bed like a zombie, and couldn't help but be startled by this scene.

"Du Xing, there are a few books you need to look at."

Chu Yang traced under his own buttocks and took out several yellow (pornographic) books.

"Books?" Gu Du Xing felt quite strange; after all his sword cultivation was still in progress and Boss Chu wanted him to read more books? [Besides, how can you have so many books under your buttocks? And why didn't I see any until now?]

Gu Du Xing took a look at the books, and his hands immediately began to tremble.

"The Doctrine of Sword Implementation"

"The Warmth of Sword Qi will raise my experience"

"The Doctrine of the Sword of Five Realms"

"Sword King"

"The Sword of Love slaughtering"

Gu Du Xing continued to check out the books one after another, and suddenly an intensified the beam of mysterious light that ejaculated from his eyes; the trembling of his hands also went out of control at this point.

This author's cultivation may not have been very high, but the contents of this book clearly displayed his wisdom. Moreover, these books were a collection of all the painstaking efforts their ancestors had made!

On top of that, one of the books turned out to be the work of a great scholar who had recorded his entire knowledge and insights in that book before his death!

This collection of the hard-earned experiences of countless predecessors was more than enough to propel Gu Du Xing all the

way on the ways of sword practice!

Although the role of the book named “Sword King” was not that great for Gu Du Xing, he nevertheless needed all this stuff for research!

"From where did you get all these books?" Gu Du Xing blushed as he suddenly tightened his grip on the books.

"It doesn’t matter where I got them from…. you can just say that I picked them up during my travels." Chu Yang replied in a lazy manner: "You can always have a little harvest when you visit a place like the Great Zhao, you know."

"But this harvest……it is really not small." Gu Du Xing replied while gasping heavily.

Chu Yang smiled in his heart: [Really not small, you say? Of course it isn’t…… I returned to make sure that Ji Mo was uninjured, and also had to deal with some unreasonably powerful enemies…… Besides this, I looted the entire treasure inside the Great Zhao’s royal palaces’ vaults… …]

[I was obviously going to obtain so many good things huh… …]

Chu Yang was only unhappy about one thing – he could not do anything about Mo Qing Wu’s injury. However, the long and dark night finally subsided as he witnessed the arrival of a bright dawn that shone brightly over him: the only thing he lacked was a medicine!

He just needed one of the nine wonderful medicines to create a rare treasure such as the ninth grade dan!

This news was quite comforting for Chu Yang, not to mention the significance of ninth grade dan was inherent in the fact that it was capable of saving three lives at once.

In other words, it could always guarantee the safety of not just his-own life, but that of his brothers as well!

Gu Du Xing started practicing his sword skills with all his might; and quite desperately this time!

The Gu brothers were dead. Of course, he was not to blame for it because they died in the hands of Chu Yang. However, Gu Du Xing felt that he himself wasn't completely uninvolved either!

Therefore, he needed to shoulder the responsibility of what happened to his brothers!

Not to mention, Chu Yang had made this the most important goal of his life. If it hadn't been for him, Gu Yan Yang and Gu Yan Yue would have never gotten involved with Chu Yang. After all, why would Chu Yang personally go into action, and then kill two people without a valid reason?

Therefore, Gu Du Xing had been waiting patiently to shoulder this responsibility himself. Although he didn't say it out loud, but he would never evade this responsibility!

Since the Gu brothers were dead, the Gu family was likely to summon him back quite soon. At that time, how should he act?

Furthermore.....Chu Yang had created a very convenient practice environment for him. If he did not advance quickly, then how could he call himself worthy of all this well-wishing?

[Oh sister.....why don't you show up quickly? When you will find out that our brothers are already dead? Even though your sentiments may disagree.....but at least you won't feel as uncomfortable and unhappy as me... ...]

In the evening!

This was the first time this tranquil city was going to witness the very first blossom of doom and chaos since the beginning of its history!

A dark moon-like dazzling sword light flew up into the sky to greet the real moon that was shining brightly in the sky!

Dark Moon Sword!

Appeared!

Chapter 294: The Sword Pierces Through the Golden Horse Riders Department!

Even in the presence of a bright moon and countless dazzling stars in the sky, the radiance of this waning moon was still dominant enough to make it look quite magnificent like a bright silver spoon! Its hazy luster still made it appear as dreamy as the fantasy itself!

After the fierce competition from the previous time was over, almost everyone was exhausted at the moment! At present, an utter calm was prevalent everywhere.

After several big and influential clans from Middle Three Heavens came in to participate in the competition, most Jiang Hu people left the scene en masse as they already knew about their own hopelessness in this situation. As for the so-called descendants of Ask the Heavens Sword Saint and Underworld Saber Saint, no one knew when they all vanished without a trace.....

However, during this phase of tranquility, there came a loud shout which resounded like a thunderclap, all of a sudden: "Don’t let the Moonlight Sword escape! Follow it!"

People saw a stunning sword light soaring high into the sky. A man was rapidly fleeing at the speed of lightning; he was being closely followed by another man with a sword light, which seemed reluctant to part with him!

As this pursuit was taking place so swiftly, they soon disappeared in the distance.

Compared with the emergence of the Sunlight Saber, the appearance of Moonlight Sword had been quite foggy and somewhat surprising in a way!

But no matter how surprising and unexpected a situation maybe, experts will always be experts!

There sounded a loud whistle in the Heaven Reaching Tower, followed by the emergence of the shadows of several mighty experts in the sky; each of them possessed a powerful spiritual pressure. They flew up toward the sky and took a sharp turn in midair to set off in hot pursuit.

The entire Heaven Reaching Tower suddenly boiled over as a person's figure directly broke out of the windows and flew off in pursuit. It seemed as if he was expelling the wind from his body while flying at a lightning speed.

Since the Sunlight Saber had fallen into the hands of Ao Xie Yun, the importance of Moonlight Sword rose significantly.

Not just Mo Tian Yun, but also those other young masters felt a fire surging in their hearts, along with a bit of anxiousness.

If Ao Xie Yun.....managed to obtain the secret of the Sword Saber Saint, then the strength of Ao family would exceed theirs in no time! This was truly a crisis of life and death.

It was naturally a more urgent issue for Ao Xie Yun as well!

The Sunlight Saber was already in his possession and now that Moonlight Sword had already made an appearance, how could he not go all out to obtain it?

In fact, the first one to discover and chase after the Moonlight Sword was a member of the Ao family!

The sword light was moving toward the west while hopping along the way to dodge away from the obstacles in the path. The person who was holding the Moonlight Sword suddenly came to a halt, and just then, bursts of bloody light dispersed everywhere in the sky.

This person was clearly more vicious and merciless than the master of Sunlight Saber!

If you block my way, you die!

He was using actual actions to annotate the above-mentioned sentence! Even without saying a word, he made the meaning of these words quite apparent to all!

As the pursuers arrived very close to the sword light, it abruptly stopped and dropped down.

Then it immediately vanished without a trace.

Several elite king level experts looked around in all directions then jumped up in the air to size up the surrounding area, but couldn't find it.

[Could it be that he had escaped?]

Just when this thought passed through their minds, the sword light suddenly appeared about a thousand feet away; it swiftly leaped up against the wind to declare its presence!

Everyone's morale was aroused again for yet another round of pursuit.

It was clear that this item had a significant level of intelligence.

They saw a hill dead ahead, and at its base was situated a dilapidated army camp that appeared quite shabby and worn-out. It seemed like these troops had been stationed here quite a while ago....

The military flag also looked somewhat old and shabby.

Most people would think that this was an ordinary military compound at first glance. Only a small number of knowledgeable people knew that it was the headquarters of Golden Horse Riders Department!

The army camp's design was aimed at tricking one's eyesight; there was an entire space hidden under this hill! Even the vastness of the hidden underground space must be far beyond the scope of the camp that was visible on the ground!

The invincible Golden Horse Riders Department was located

here!

Dong Wu Shang darted forward with a sword in his hand, while Luo Ke Di was in hot pursuit of him. It was a chase so intense that the pursuer was absolutely reluctant of parting with the pursued, not to mention their enmity also appeared quite irreconcilable; Slam Slam Bang Bang, accompanied with such loud sounds, the hustle and bustle continued to take place right before the army camp.

"Brother, let me go and I will surely return the favor in the future!" Dong Wu Shang said with a hint of grief and indignation in his voice.

"Cut the crap! I want you to hand over that sword in your hand." Luo Ke Di was disguised as a black-clothed enemy with a cold frosty visor masking his face.

"Are you really refusing?"

"I am absolutely refusing!"

"You are compelling me now!"

"How am I compelling you?"

"Wa Ya Ya, you are irritating me!"

"Ahwooh Ahwooh..... just hand it over, come on!"

The lackluster dialog continued like this as the two kept on shouting crazily at each other.

Luo Ke Di was playing the role of an enemy on one hand while simultaneously acclaiming in his heart. [F***ing hell, you really can't judge a book by its cover. This second young master of Dong family is truly an enigma. I never imagined that he would be such a skilled actor !]

The silhouettes of the experts could be seen swirling in the distance.

The first wave of troops arrived, and one of them directly entered

the fight without any delay with his eagle-claw like fingers directly grasping toward the Moonlight Sword.

Dong Wu Shang got furious!

He slashed his sword in the air.

That man snorted loudly and dodged the blood-colored light, although his fingers were lacerated in the process. However, Dong Wu Shang took a malicious blow from a sledgehammer right on his chest and staggered back. The impact caused the blood capillaries inside his nose and mouth to burst open; even his eyes were bloodshot.

If he had not relied on the divine sword to lessen the impact, then he might have ended up losing the grip on his sword!

The silhouettes of several people appeared on the distant horizon as they rushed in, at meteoric speeds. The magnificent royal crowd gradually assembled in the sky.

Their crew also arrived almost at the same time.

Everyone huddled in a circle and trapped Dong Wu Shang inside the encirclement.

Mo Tian Yun was standing at the front; his eyes were flashing with determination. Seeing a fierce competition going on over the Moonlight Sword, he was determined to win it for himself!

Ao Xie Yun stood calmly with his hands crossed behind his back; his demeanor was quite natural and unrestrained.

If there started a martial arts contest again....it would be senseless. Considering Ao Xie Yun’s strength, he would definitely be the undisputed champion. That would be equal to presenting the Moonlight Sword to him with both hands. In that case, what should be done this time?

"You want to rob my Moonlight Sword?" Dong Wu Shang looked bitterly at those people around him.

Xie Dan Qiong sighed and said: "Listen brave warrior, you can already assess the current situation you're in. You alone, cannot save yourself and certainly cannot save your sword from getting snatched away either. So, you might as well just honestly hand over the sword and there will be a possibility of saving your life as a result."

"Hand over the sword to whom?" Dong Wu Shang said with a sneer.

Xie Dan Qiong suddenly went speechless.

[Correct, even if he is to hand over the Moonlight Sword, whom should he give it to?]

[Who would say no to the Moonlight Sword?]

[Or, who would dare to be the first one to show off under these circumstances?]

In everyone's mind flashed the scene from that night in which Mo Tian Yun was the first person to obtain the Sunlight Saber, but everyone knew what happened afterward. They couldn't help but hesitate from taking an action.

The first person to obtain the Moonlight Sword, no matter who that may be, will absolutely not win it for sure! That person will become everyone's target and end up exhausting his strength eventually!

And precisely because people were having such scruples at this moment that they spontaneously stuck to not taking any action without prior consultation.

"What's wrong? Is it too difficult to decide what to do?" Dong Wu Shang sneered "How about I give you a proposal? Would you like to hear?"

"What kind of proposal?"

"Why don't you all just start killing each other until there's only

one person alive? I will give this Moonlight Sword to that person. What do you think? Sounds fun right?"

"Bullshit! What utter nonsense!" People were angry at this.

[Does he really think we are that stupid?]

"Then what do you plan to do? Do you all want to keep standing here in a stalemate?" Dong Wu Shang asked in a cold voice.

While watching this black-clothed masked man, Dong Wu Lei suddenly had a very familiar feeling. It was a wonderful feeling that was telling him that this masked man seemed very familiar, like a very close person to him. So, he couldn't bear anymore and asked: "Who are you?"

Dong Wu Shang grunted: "Since you are going to snatch the sword anyway, why even bother asking who I am?"

"No matter what, I say capture him first then we'll discuss what to do later on!" Li Xiong Tu roared and took the lead by directly pouncing toward his target.

Dong Wu Shang laughed: "Come on!"

He did not go for evasion and directly charged forward with his sword!

It was a reckless move!

Li Xiong Tu was famous for his extraordinary strength in the middle three heavens, but the collision with the masked man made him feel as if he had collided with a mountain. The other party looked like he weighed hundreds of pounds, thus the impact force generated from the collision had to be massive!

The other party seemed as strong and durable as a chunk of ice-cold iron!

Li Xiong Tu cried out and spouted blood from his mouth; with two successive 'Kacha' sounds, two of his frontal ribs cracked inside his chest which made him curse out loud in anger: "F**k!

Who are you moth******er? How can you be so heavy?"

As far as the body-to-body collision was concerned, Li Xiong Tu had once clashed with a bison, and his injuries hadn't turned out to be this severe back then! Such a thing was simply hard to accept! Even being defeated at this instant wouldn't be so shocking to him.

Dong Wu Shang was also pushed to go back five or six steps; he coldly snorted but didn't give a reply.

Li Xiong Tu took a closer look at the build of that masked man in black, who was carrying a saber on his fairly unremarkable back; he still couldn't believe that the masked man actually weighed about 570 pounds!

Even after adding his weight to that number, the total sum would barely reach 800 pounds at the most. Li Xiong Tu was basically caught off guard by the large weight difference. Not to mention, it would be better to just not compare their cultivation levels as Li Xiong Tu might get depressed at the end of it.

Judging from their facial expressions, it could be said that everyone looked more cautious now.

"That's it! I am done!" Dong Wu Shang appeared somewhat disappointed as he looked toward the crowd of royal elites and said while shaking his head: "I had initially thought that after obtaining this Moonlight Sword, I would be able to devote myself entirely to cultivation in order to become an invincible Jiang Hu expert! I never thought that I would end up losing such a big treasure like this!"

He heaved a deep sigh and said in a desolate tone: "Sword, O sword, after all is said and done; am I really going to lose you forever?"

He successfully managed to exhibit his feelings in his speech as one could clearly sense sorrow in this sentence. Everyone's emotions were stirred by this.

The next moment, Dong Wu Shang faced upwards toward the sky and gave out a loud shout: "However, if I cannot keep it with myself, then you all should also give up on your wish of obtaining it. If it cannot belong to me, then I will make sure that it doesn't belong to anyone!"

Dong Wu Shang suddenly gave out a long and loud shout and leaped up more than a hundred feet high into the sky. The Moonlight Sword was sparkling in the bright moonlight, and it seemed as if two moons were merging into one.

(TLN: In the raws, it's given a dozen zhang and 1 zhang = 10 Chinese feet. So, a dozen zhang approximately equals to 100 feet.)

Everyone was puzzled because they did not know that he was able to jump so high thanks to a divine technique. They thought in their hearts – [even if it is admirable that you can jump so high but this is a straight upward jump with nothing to land onto above, are you not afraid of falling down from such height?]

However, the masked man suddenly flung his arm in the air with a loud shout, and shot a long rainbow out of his hand!

The trail of light that was left behind by that rainbow appeared like the tail of a comet! It surmounted a distance of several thousand feet in a flash before finally advancing amidst the hills!

With a loud clanging sound, it completely disappeared without a trace.

Thrown away!?

The sword was indeed thrown away!

Moreover, it was thrown from a high altitude and that too with a great force!

Everyone had witnessed the sharpness of the Sunlight Saber, so the same could be expected of the Moonlight Sword!

While taking the throwing force into consideration, perhaps it

could penetrate hundreds of feet underground!

Not to mention, it would be difficult to pinpoint the location where it fell in such a dim-lit night……

Everyone got furious!

Dong Wu Shang began to fall down in the direction of his brother Dong Wu Lei and his guards, and immediately shouted: "If you try to catch me, you die; you don't get injured!"

(TLN: Wu Shang means ‘to not get injured’. Dong Wu Shang basically called out his given name at the end of the sentence.)

Dong Wu Lei heard these few words and his iron-clad face suddenly welcomed a strange expression; he got furious as soon as he understood what was going on and said: "You scoundrel! Just you wait and see how I beat you to death, you bastard!" He interlocked his palms and moved forward, followed by the ringing of sounds like Ping Ping Bang Bang.

Dong family’s first young master personally went into action, so how could the others not join in on the fun? Moreover, most people were mostly concerned about the Moonlight Sword and this caused a large clamoring crowd of people to swarm in from all directions.

The forces from the army barracks attempted to block them, but failed miserably and were basically run over in the blink of an eye.

A fairly strong explosion caused by a king level expert on the front opened a large hole in the hill. At this time, he suddenly shouted loudly with his voice full of surprise and wonder: "Let’s evade these f*ckers! There is actually a big labyrinth under the camp!"

Chapter 295: Destruction of the Base!

"What kind of sinister plot are you involved in?" Dong Wu Lei appeared flustered and exasperated as he shouted angrily, while simultaneously punching and kicking.

"Even if I try to explain now, you won't be able to understand properly." Dong Wu Shang's cold face was covered tightly but his voice fiercely thundered.

"Then why not speak properly, so that I can understand?" Dong Wu Lei clenched his teeth.

"We will talk once we go back!" Dong Wu Shang grunted loudly.

"And the bottom line is...." Dong Wu Lei stared at him.

"It's fake." Dong Wu Shang rolled his eyes and replied.

"Damn it!" Dong Wu Lei couldn't help but curse out loud.

"Young master, let us deal with him!" The two King level experts of the Dong family gathered together to support their eldest young master.

"Stay out of this!" Dong Wu Lei blew his top as he shouted: "I will deal with him myself!"

The two King level experts looked at each other, as their faces twitched: "Then do we go grab the sword?"

"**? You pig! How dare you call me that!" Dong Wu Lei shouted angrily: "I will subjugate you right here, right now!"

Thus in the barrage of loud shouts, the two brothers continued to go farther and farther while punching and kicking along the way. One of them leaped up while the other closely followed...

It didn't take too long for the two of them to go far away from that area where the quarrel was still going on.

Finally, after taking several turns on the way, Dong Wu Lei

gasped for breath and immediately pounced up. To one's surprise, the black-clothed masked man did not even try to dodge or hide and was suddenly grabbed by the collar.

This strange scene left the two King level experts dumbstruck, as their eyes were opened wide in utter shock. They were like two monks who were unable to understand the gist of a matter.

"Now tell me what is going on?!" Boss Dong asked while gnashing his teeth.

"This is just a prank." The voice of the masked man also changed. Of course, everyone was familiar with this voice.

"Second young master?!" The two King level experts were stunned. Never in their wildest dreams did they imagine that they would witness such an outcome.

"Prank, you say?!" Boss Dong seized Dong Wu Shang by his neck and said with grief and indignation: "Do you know that all because of this prank of yours, I was almost killed by Ao Xie Yun! You you you……why didn't you tell me about it earlier?"

Dong Wu Shang grunted once, then replied in a cold voice: "Even if I had told you earlier, you would still beat me up wouldn't you?"

"You, well well!" Dong Wu Lei could not speak properly as he pointed his trembling finger at his younger brother. He swallowed his own saliva and almost felt like vomiting blood because he just couldn't accept the kind of tone his younger brother was using to talk back to him: "I must say that you really have the guts to pull off such an act!" He fiercely nodded his head.

"Hey, if not for me, you would most likely be fighting over the sword right now." Dong Wu Shang snorted as his face was expressionless; he pointed his finger toward the two King level experts of his family and said: "Lead the way; I want to go back and take a nap first."

"I will make sure that you have nightmares in your sleep." Dong

Wu Lei said as his nose became crooked.

"Big brother, you should be satisfied with the current situation. Luo Ke Di is also an insider like me and is well aware of the prank, but we can clearly hear the loud clamors of Luo Ke Wu even now." Dong Wu Shang said quite sincerely and earnestly: "Come on, let's go back."

"....." Dong Wu Lei was completely speechless.....

On the other side, everyone had found out about the ongoing situation after that King level expert clamored about the underground labyrinth. The quick-tempered ones went all out and made good use of their kicks and punches to break the ground. As a result of that, the ground beneath their feet suddenly gave away and they directly fell downward.

"Crap! There is such a big space underground..."

"What is this place?"

"Where is it? First, find for the moonlight sword!"

"Could it be that these people have already hidden it away?"

"That hateful bastard just had to insert it into someone else's den...This is truly insane..."

"How will we find it here?"

The chaos suddenly began to spread in the headquarters of Golden Horse Riders Department!

The ground was collapsing unceasingly at multiple spots before it finally slammed down with a bang. Smoke and dust filled the air along with a loud thunderous noise that resounded everywhere; it seemed just like a mountain landslide....

This underground was hollow and couldn't possibly tolerate the presence of so many King level experts, especially when they were tossing from side to side while searching for the sword.

Suddenly, blood-curdling screams began to rise and fall in quick

succession...

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing held their breaths and took advantage of the ongoing chaos to sneak their way into the Golden Horse Riders Department.

This was really a heavensent opportunity!

If not for all the chaos caused by the Moonlight sword incident, if not for Diwu Qing Rou ordering his personnel to withdraw....

If not for all these coincidences, the Golden Horse Riders Department's biggest enemy King of Hell Chu wouldn't have been able to infiltrate their headquarters, not to mention leisurely taking a stroll inside the headquarters would have simply been out of the question in the past!

Today, their primary mission was: to release the Jiang Hu people who were caught by the Golden Horse Riders Department! According to Chu Yang's research, these people were being kept imprisoned here...

Certainly, their secondary mission was: the thorough destruction of this base!

Irrespective of all the lucky coincidences, when Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing went straight underground and crossed all of the three consecutive layers, they found themselves in a chaotic pot of porridge which was in complete mess. However, there was something which brought utmost joy to Chu Yang: a guy was holding a sword in his hand, and he seemed quite high-spirited while running away."

[F**k! Isn't that the main cause of all this mess? - 'The Moonlight Sword']

Chu Yang's stare intensified!

[Dong Wu Shang threw it with so much force that it actually penetrated more than 300 feet into the ground?? Is he really that strong?]

Of course, this was not the time to marvel at the extent of Dong Wu Shang's strength. In a flash, Chu Yang rushed forward and arrived in front of that guy whose mind was instantly pierced by a cold intention. As soon as Chu Yang seized the sword, that guy was immediately killed by Gu Du Xing!

"There are enemy intruders among us!"

"This is not good!"

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing continued to proceed forward while killing one expert after another all the way and soon reached half-way inside the belly of the mountain. However, they soon realized that they hadn't encountered any high-level experts of 'Martial Great Master' on the way. The majority of experts they encountered were either Martial Artists or Martial Masters.

It seemed like Diwu Qing Rou had already transferred his best men away from this base. Chu Yang was somewhat irritated as he thought – [that bastard, it seems like he was able to anticipate beforehand that I would soon be laying waste to this place, so he made preparations in advance. Damn, this is not good; I am having a bad feeling about this... ...]

The next moment, he stored the Moonlight sword inside the Nine Tribulations Space.

"Why did you keep it?" Gu Du Xing was a bit puzzled.

"Stupid, I keep it so that they cannot find it, understood?" Chu Yang said: "See, they obviously saw it falling here. If they are unable to find it, then wouldn't they go all out and wreck this place up just to look for its traces? If it couldn't be found in a day, then they would take two.....if it couldn't be found in two days, then they would take three days. If they still couldn't find it, then even digging for 300 feet wouldn't be an issue for them."

Gu Du Xing felt beads of cold sweat appearing on his forehead.

He finally understood what Chu Yang was trying to do. He

basically wanted the destruction of this base and that too without getting his own hands dirty……

The sound of the explosion was getting closer.

People regretted the fact that their parents gave birth to them with only two legs, which was far from enough for quickly getting away from there. In the presence of such a bunch of lunatics, this mountain could collapse any moment now…….

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing were also running quickly to get to their goal as fast as possible.

"It should be over there." Chu Yang said.

Gu Du Xing rolled his eyes contemptuously and gave a supercilious look at the spot from where all those deafening cries were coming.

"Let us out!"

"Is someone there? We want to go out!"

This was more than enough to guide the two brothers in the direction of the prisoners.

Chu Yang immediately dashed forward, without any hesitation, and slashed a few times to cut off the huge iron chains of three prison cells. The stream of people, who rushed out at once, was similar to a raging tide.

Shua Shua, Chu Yang continued to break the locks; it didn’t take too long to open all of the prison cells!

These people certainly had their strengths as well as their bodies sealed inside the prison cells, which was keeping them from breaking out of the cells. However, now it did not matter because they were already out of the prison cells. Not to mention, each of them had their respective means to unlock such type of imprisonment…

Mo Tian Yun and the others were carefully searching for the

sword, layer after layer, but couldn't find it anywhere. While looking for the sword here, these sons of influential families were suddenly taken aback when a large group of people suddenly rushed toward them.....

At this time, Chu Yang was looking for something else.

"What are you still looking for?"

"I am looking for the treasure trove of Golden Horse Riders Department; I wonder where they keep it hidden?" Chu Yang said in a way that it seemed like he was having a headache figuring something out. He was somewhat addicted to making easy money these days and was actually looking forward to obtaining some unexpected fortunes"

"If Diwu Qing Rou had already anticipated your move, then why would he leave behind his treasures?" Gu Du Xing curled his lips and said.

"Well you are actually right, let’s get out of here!" Chu Yang disappointedly raised his head. With a large crowd of followers behind them, the two brothers immediately ran out.

Mo Tian Yun, Xie Dan Qiong and the others had a brief encounter with those two before passing each other....

Soon afterward, those young masters entered the lowest layer.....

After a long time—

Bang!

The entire hill collapsed down with a loud explosion, sending off dust and smoke dozens of feet high in the air.....

"So spectacular! This is really magnificent." Chu Yang stood at a high place and sighed with praise: "Just the way I wanted, it finally collapsed....."

As smoke and dust filled the air, one could see dozens of figures

that were busy looking for something without sparing any efforts.....

Mo Tian Yun et al. finally made a decision: [This is the base of Golden Horse Riders Department, the territory of Diwu Qing Rou! That sword clearly fell here. Since we could not find it here, then might as well just look for Diwu Qing Rou and talk about the conditions... ...]

Besides, even if they were unable to find it, it wasn't as if it was lost forever. So long as one is skillful enough in the art of kung fu, it is possible to put embroidery on an iron rod with bare hands. Of course, heaven will not disappoint the person who tries...

These young masters certainly did not know that the Moonlight Sword had already gone back to its rightful owner!

The people who knew about this act, certainly wouldn't deny the fact: this so-called Moonlight Sword was a creation of Chu Yang.

Chu Yang wasn't concerned about how things would develop from here onward. He just needed to know one thing and that was: Diwu Qing Rou would soon be beaten black and blue by these young masters!

They were going to make his life hell!

As for the same old rhetoric of Diwu Qing Rou about King of Hell Chu's involvement in this incident and so on, these people were certainly not going to believe: What level of treasures were Sunlight Saber and Moonlight Sword? Even if King of Hell Chu was really behind all this mess, why would he give up such priceless treasures only to use them as baits?

If you were Diwu Qing Rou, how would you respond to that?

In short, you would be dumbstruck and unable to respond!

"I guess we have nothing to do for the time being." Gu Du Xing pondered for a while then asked in a hesitating manner: "What do we do next?"

"Let’s find a place to hide; I will give you some materials to add to your Black Dragon Sword." Chu Yang also switched back to his usual serious demeanor and replied: "Your Black Dragon is a divine weapon. Even if it’s not a fake, it’s too fragile. So, I will give you something to refine it further."

"Alright."

"Moreover, I am afraid that the Gu family will soon summon you back since the Gu brothers are dead." Chu Yang said lightly: "My estimate is that we would be separated in summer, so I have made some preparations accordingly."

"What sort of preparations?"

"Actually... there are some things that I need you to deliver to Dong Wu Shang, Ji mo, Luo Ke Di and Rui Bu Tong." Chu Yang said in his typical soft voice: "There is also something I need you to take to Xiao Wu. In addition, there are a few other things I want you to do in the middle three heavens."

There were traces of emotions welling up in Chu Yang’s eyes as he was looking into the distance. It seemed as if his gaze would penetrate through the spatial barrier of this world to reach Mo Qing Wu’s side.

[Qing Wu, I wonder how you’re doing right now?]

Chapter 296: The origin of Bright Moon Lake

Middle Three Heavens, Mo Clan.

Mo Qing Wu's small body was all curled up while sitting in front of the doorsteps. Her small hands were holding her cheeks while her soulless eyes were staring blankly into the distance; a worn-out scabbard was quietly nestled in her bosom.

"Hah..." She sighed sadly; in spite of her tender age, she heaved a sigh so deep...it clearly showed that she had seen the vicissitudes of life.

Mo Qing Wu had been feeling that the whole world around her had changed for quite some time now.

In contrast to everything she had known so far in this lifetime, the present situation seemed to have changed beyond recognition.

[Those efficacious medicines (elixirs) have certainly reduced by a dozen layers! As for those purple crystals which are considered as priceless treasures when it comes to providing auxiliary aid to cultivation... now I cannot even find one for myself.]

[In the past, the elders of the clan would often come to meet me; they would always urge me to progress faster in my martial arts cultivation. There was always a gentle smile on their faces as they would coax me into taking breaks and playing for a while in between practice sessions. Now, no one comes to visit me anymore.]

[Back in the day, Father would always hug me whenever we'd meet; it was so much fun getting lifted up in the air. I still haven't forgotten his heartfelt laughter. However it's all in the past now... I haven't talked with him in several months.]

[Even if we do meet once in a while, those encounters are always rushed and hasty. Whenever he sees me, he always heaves a sigh

before leaving immediately. It seems as if he is trying to escape from something.]

As a result of all this, her fragile heart had started to turn colder and colder over time...

[Maybe Father does not like me anymore! Is it because my Three Yin Meridians are crippled?!]

[But just because my Three Yin Meridians are damaged...am I no longer his daughter? Wasn't I his Xiao Wu? Why did this have to happen to me?]

[Are the Three Yin Meridians really that important? Are they even more important to him than his own daughter?]

[When it comes to a clan's strength and influence...it is impossible for a cripple to contribute to the clan in any manner, so does that mean I really am worth nothing in the eyes of the clan?]

[Am I really of no value anymore?]

Mo Qing Wu spoke softly in her heart as big drops of tears dripped from her eyes.

[I don't want much...I just want Father to hug me, I want him to kiss me...I want to smile again in my parents' arms, no...I actually want to cry for a while...just to feel that nostalgic warmth of their embrace again.]

[However no one wants to hug me anymore...]

[Am I really of no use to this clan?]

She suddenly felt an intense heartache just by thinking about her parents' conversation, which she had heard while eavesdropping on them.

"The way Xiao Wu is nowadays... won't you console her? She is so young, how will she bear this?" Mother said in a blaming tone.

"Even if she cannot bear it now, she will still have to one day." Father's voice ended with a long sigh: "No one can withstand

falling all the way from the pinnacle. However if she cannot accept it now, it will become more unacceptable and unbearable in the future when she grows up. Therefore, we must make her learn to accept the reality of her situation. If we pamper her now and try to console her, it will most likely be more harmful to her in the long run..."

"Then..regarding Xiao Wu's future...is there really no hope?"

"...." Father sighed profoundly then said: "Let's wait and see what happens. Let's hope that there's a clan which will be willing to visit us with a marriage proposal for her..."

Mother began to sob, and her whimpers were audibly filled with sadness for her daughter's future...

"If there is any clan willing to visit us with a marriage proposal..." Although Mo Qing Wu was fairly young, she had grown up in a big respectable clan. How could she not understand the meaning hidden in this sentence?

[So, now I've been reduced to the status of a mere tool which is to be used by my clan in order to form an alliance with other clans via an arranged marriage?]

From that moment onward, Mo Qing Wu's heart really turned cold and icy!

[Second brother does not come to see me either. He just constantly sends people to deliver small gifts and toys, and that too all the way from Cang Lan Battlefront... ...] By now, all those little items had occupied almost the entirety of her bedroom.

[But I don't want all this stuff! I don't want this at all! What I really want is my family's affection!]

Mo Qing Wu shouted in her heart; her sorrow was truly incomparable.

All of the gifts sent by Mo Tian Ji had been abandoned by her, and now lay stacked in a corner.

"Perhaps in this world, there is only one person who still cares about me and also loves me no matter what I turn into, irrespective of my appearance and status ..." Mo Qing Wu held the scabbard in her bosom, and then gently pressed her face against that worn-out scabbard...

"Qiao Qiao, you do know that don't you?" Mo Qing Wu whispered softly: "Brother Chu Yang is the only one who truly loves me and the only one who would never turn his back on me like everyone else has..."

(TLN: Qiao means sheath/scabbard.)

"When I first met Brother Chu Yang, my Three Yin Meridians had already been crippled; though I wasn't aware of it back then. However, Brother Chu Yang played with me everyday, and also told me all kinds of stories. He even sent a saber for me... I can tell by just looking at its appearance that it is an exceptionally good saber..."

"Humph, after Brother Chu Yang gave me this saber, everyone racked their brains so hard to find a way to snatch it away from me....." Mo Qing Wu chuckled as a proud smile appeared on her face. The tears on her face were soon accompanied by a genuine smile which started to bloom soon after: "No one knows that the saber everyone was tearing into each other for, is nothing more than a toy that Brother Chu Yang gifted to me."

"Brother Chu Yang, I really miss you....." Mo Qing Wu's heart palpitated as she stared into the distance and murmured in a weak voice: "I do not want to stay here anymore..... I do not like it here, even though this place.....is my home....."

"Young mistress, please go back to your room, it is cold outside." A maid walked over quietly and gently.

"En." Mo Qing Wu wiped her tears and stood up while still holding the scabbard close to her heart; her face had turned completely expressionless once again. The bitter experiences she

had recently gone through had brought about a big change in her mood.

[Since no one cares about me anyway, so then even if I have to cry.... I won't allow others to see me while I cry. Even when I am sad, my sadness will stay hidden in my heart.]

[I will not allow anyone to make fun of my tears!]

[And the next time I see Brother Chu Yang, I will cry to my heart's content... ...]

The atmosphere inside the Mo Clan had been quite depressing these past few days. The Cang Lan Battlefront had undergone dramatic changes since this so-called place of 'martial arts study and training' which belonged to various deemed clans was experiencing violent changes.

And that was because - the seal was split open!

The Cang Lan Battlefront was an area which was home to a myriad of spirit beasts; their fur, pelts and cores were circulated throughout the Middle Three Heavens as merchandise.

Moreover, the Cang Lan Battlefront was very similar to a brutal wilderness where human beings couldn't survive, so every time someone entered this region in search of required things, they would immediately hurry out after the task was complete.

The main source of income of various major clans basically came from there. Not to mention, the Cang Lan Battlefront was also the best touchstone to be used for disciplining the young juniors of the clan! So long as these young juniors did not venture deeper into the Cang Lan Battlefront, they could challenge ordinary spirit beasts and hunt them down not only to hone their martial skills, but also to earn resources in order to increase their family's fortune.....

It was the perfect place for the young disciples to gain fame and prestige!

Of course, this wilderness had been abandoned for thousands of

years, making it a home to numerous medicinal herbs (elixirs). Not to mention that every clan greatly desired these medicinal herbs.....

But recently, the seal had broken! No one in their wildest dreams would have expected that the first ones to come out of the broken seal would turn out to be the people from the infamous ‘Three Stars Divine Clan’!

They were the so-called mortal enemies of humanity from over ten thousand years ago!

Right after stepping out of the broken seal, they occupied a large area, and then used their innate instinctual skill to urge the spirit beasts, inducing the formation of several territories within the bounds of the Cang Lan Battlefront; all of the territories were exclusive from each other, and kept to themselves.

However, they would rally together and launch an attack whenever a human being entered the Cang Lan Battlefront!

This was equivalent to having an initial group of undisciplined and unorganized spirit beasts transform into a well-trained army!

In addition, these territories were gradually expanding to the extent of outgrowing the boundaries of the Cang Lan Battlefront! This was obviously a very serious matter for the various major clans of the Middle Three Heavens!

Therefore, the major clans continued to endure this for some time, but then after the New Year's Eve, they all finally agreed, merely by chance, to issue the mobilization order. They ordered the immediate return of their external personnel and asked them to rush toward the Can Lan Battlefield as fast as possible.....

Inside the Continent Centre Citadel of the Great Zhao, Lower Three Heavens.

Chu Yang and Gu Du Xing had been staying inside their den for a long time without showing any signs of budging from there. Both

of them were digesting the gains that they had received from their recent trips.

Just two days ago, Gu Du Xing managed a breakthrough and finally became a fourth grade Revered Sword Artist! He had really taken a solid step forward with this breakthrough of his'.

Of course, Chu Yang wasn't far behind either. After robbing the Great Zhao's imperial palace, the Nine Tribulations Sword had absorbed the remaining efficacy of the medicines from the meridians which actually pushed him toward the breakthrough; soon after, he had a breakthrough and became a first grade Revered Martial Artist!

Even though the Sword Spirit had tried its best to suppress both the sword's edge and the sword' tip, the two still managed to join forces in perfect sync, releasing a wild and ferocious hurricane. When the Sword Spirit was finally able to stop them, Chu Yang had already become a first grade Revered Martial Artist.

When faced with such a result, the Sword Spirit simply felt like crying but had no tears to do so.

After all, the remnants of drug efficacy were just too high in quantity……

The place where they were residing currently wasn't too far away from Heaven Reaching Tower, and therefore they could keep tabs on the various activities and movements going on within Heaven Reaching Tower. Since the young masters did not find the Moonlight Sword in the ruins of Golden Horse Rider's Department, they went straight to the Prime Minister's Manor.

They put forward the following terms and conditions.

Mo Clan: [As long as the Prime Minister orders the Golden Horse Rider's Department to hand over that sword, we would then……]

Ao Clan: [As long as the Prime Minister orders the Golden Horse Rider's Department to hand over that sword, we would then…..]

Xie Clan: [As long as……..]

Li Clan: [As long as…….]

Tu Clan: [As long as…….]

Ou Clan: [As long as…….]

All of them obviously meant the same thing, which was: [if Prime Minister Diwu does not order the Golden Horse Rider's Department to hand over the sword, then we would do so and so…]

Since the day Diwu Qing Rou took birth in this world, this was actually the first time he really understood how it felt to be beaten black and blue!

The Ao Clan, Mo Clan and Xie Clan were fairly gentle and reasonable in their approach, but the Tu Clan was simply outrageous and unreasonable. Tu Qian Hao had acted spontaneously, and had directly stationed himself inside the Prime Minister's Manor, with a very simple thought process; [we won't leave until you hand it over to us!]

As far as Li Xiong Tu's approach was concerned, he openly commanded his own King level guards to exchange pointers with the Golden Horse Rider's Department! Each one would come and 'exchange pointers' before leaving!

[Humph, don't want to hand it over? Alright, then I'll keep bashing you till you do.]

If it was an ordinary person making such trouble, then Diwu Qing Rou would have already deported them from the manor, or perhaps would have directly silenced them by having them executed……however at present, he was dealing with the precious young masters of the major clans of the Middle Three Heavens. They simply couldn't be treated as ordinary people…..

Prime Minister Diwu didn't know how to endure all this!

He had urged Jing Meng Hun several times: [you should hurry up

and find that sword, and then throw it out! Let them start the dogfight! They can just go around barking, and biting each other if they want to, I could care less…]

However, Jing Meng Hun was depressed: [Where am I supposed to find that sword?]

King level leader Jing was also very anxious, but his only option was to swallow the humiliation and call his subordinates to help him out with this task. [Not only can't I blame them for destroying my headquarters, I must also go and help them in finding that sword.]

Even after the entire mountain was literally tossed and turned again and again, to the extent that it was completely flattened and the stones were smashed to powder, leaving just a big hole to take its place instead……eventually the hole got deeper and deeper since the excavation continued for quite some time, but they still didn't find anything!

Later on, this place would go on to become a stretch of fertile farmland! In fact, there would be no soil as delicate and fertile as the soil of this land…..

Furthermore, that big hole actually became a lake with the passage of time, giving birth to a settlement of people. The immediate descendants called it 'Dark Moon Lake'; the following generations changed the lake's name to 'Bright Moon Lake'…

****

TLN: This lake was initially named Dark Moon Lake (Ming Yuehu) and the following generations changed its name to Bright Moon Lake (Ming Yuehu). Both are pronounced in the same way.

Also the original Chinese name of the Moonlight Sword is 'Ming Yue Jian' which translates to 'Dark Moon Sword'.

Chapter 297: Diwu Qing Rou's purge

This state of affairs lasted for almost 20 days!

For the sake of the sword, those pampered young masters did not return to their respective homes on this New Year's Eve. They were simply worried about one thing, which was: [what if we leave today and the sword ends up appearing tomorrow?]

The best decision in this situation would obviously be to stay here till the end and wait for the others to leave.

However, there were some clans which actually went back home, and the first ones to leave among them were: Dong Clan, Luo Clan and Ji Clan.....while the other clans chose not to go back and continued to remain at standstill.....

Naturally, this caused a deal of great trouble for Diwu Qing Rou!

He would need to find time to appease this gang of 'second generation little ancestors' all day long. This weighed him down with anxiety as he felt like there were a hundred knots of worry inside his intestines.

(TLN: The previous translator has used the term 'second little ancestors' to refer to the young masters.)

During this time, the Great Zhao's royalists were constantly trying to use tentative attacks, or impeachment tactics, to suppress the Diwu faction (Fifth faction). Surprisingly, they emerged victorious in each and every attempt to defame Diwu faction!

This slowly emboldened the royalists as they began to dare, and mess with the important personages from the Diwu faction. Of course, if Diwu Qing Rou was to counterattack, then they would stop immediately to maintain the status quo.

However .....no matter what happened, Diwu Qing Rou simply didn't retaliate!

This was simply incredible! Suddenly, all kinds of rumors began to spread throughout the Great Zhao, stating stuff like: [Diwu Qing Rou has fallen out of favor, and the Emperor has already revoked all his powers and privileges; he has resigned from his office and is lying low at home … …]

Consequently, bigger waves began to rise and fall as time went by! Some of the royal courtiers were still watching in wait. Most of these old fogies had been staying dormant for years……while some of them had been initially suppressed by Diwu Qing Rou long ago…..

Slowly and gradually, they all began to rise from the shadows; one by one!

It seemed as if the heavens would be overturned by those raging waves any moment now……

The Great Zhao's Emperor was still sitting quietly at the helm of his fishing boat, calmly observing the flowing winds. However, when the mood and activities of the royal courtiers turned increasingly intense, His Majesty also caught the smell of the unusual atmosphere which was prevalent around him and accordingly began to change out of his former low-key profile in order to gradually gain more visibility……

[Diwu Qing Rou has blundered by offending the super clans of the Middle Three Heavens, and now they are all set to make his life a living hell! It seems like his life's going to end very soon!]

As soon as His Majesty verified this piece of information, he suddenly burst into laughter.

As a result of the recent developments, His Majesty slowly began to bravely deal with some fairly high-profile matters as well……

He slowly took initiative……[huh? Only to exercise his rightful powers as an emperor, right?!]

[Damn it! That went quite smoothly!]

Afterward, His Majesty began to conspire the initiation of his big reform. He started by having discussions in secret, and then slowly took those discussions to small banquets before they slowly and finally ended up transforming into large scale official discussions in the royal court's main hall!

Thus, a bold and resolute reform was kick-started!

After drinking a bit too much, and getting drunk as a result, His Majesty ended up sharing his innermost feeling with the Empress; he sighed with emotions while sharing his innermost feelings with the Empress: [we ascended the throne 20 years ago but only today have we really tasted the joy of being the Rulers of Great Zhao!]

So much so that two army divisions were summoned all the way from distant parts of the nation. His Majesty had a clear-cut stand on the matter: [Execute Diwu! The royal entourage must make sure that this tyrant is purged; exterminate Qing Rou and bring back the good-old days!]

It seemed as if the entire Great Zhao had turned blustery all of a sudden!

A strange sense of tranquility had spread everywhere since King of Hell Chu hadn't engaged in any activities during this period of time.

Minister Chu knew that this phenomenon was a result of Diwu Qing Rou's secretly conspiracies. Such turbulent developments were simply impossible considering that Diwu Qing Rou was capable of decisively using his iron fist to gain complete control over the Great Zhao!

[Perhaps, the reason behind these turbulent times was hidden in the possibility that Diwu Qing Rou was planning on starting something big very soon… …]

[In that case, I mustn't get involved in the current state of affairs.]

This would ensure that Diwu Qing Rou wouldn't be able to trace the vines and grab the melon, otherwise there might be a possibility of Minister Chu ending up being accused unjustly, and then dying a resentful death as a result of that……

Therefore at present, King of Hell Chu was sitting on the mountain and watching the tigers fight. He was more than satisfied with his current simplistic lifestyle when compared to his comfortable life in Iron Cloud. And every day, he would look forward to seeing the mayhem the members of the aristocratic clans would cause endlessly…..

(TLN: sit on the mountain and watch the tigers fight is an idiom which basically means -> watch in safety whilst others fight… then reap the rewards when both sides are exhausted.)

Only about a dozen of these clans had been able to make Diwu Qing Rou's life a living hell! Moreover, since they were causing a nuisance all the time, Diwu Qing Rou could not even set about the task of reconstructing the Golden Horse Riders Department's headquarters.

Possibly, someone else could take blame and responsibility for something that might or might not have happened……however, someone else's way of dealing with such things would be entirely different when compared to Diwu Qing Rou's personal involvement in this matter……

[The more time you all spend in making this noise and ruckus, the longer shall be the delay on my part be; If you really want to keep dragging this on, you may as well just drag it for a year and a half…..I couldn't care less wahaha… …]

Even the royalists were praying for those aristocratic clans to get rid of Diwu Qing Rou as soon as possible… …

However, the brutal reality soon landed a solid blow to the faces of King of Hell Chu and Great Zhao's royalists!

A summoning order had arrived from the Middle Three Heavens: [all clan juniors who are currently outside, must rush back to the Middle Three Heavens immediately! There is an emergency!]

After the arrival of this summoning order, several aristocratic clans went back immediately; even Ao Xie Yun was among the ones who retreated. Since he had already obtained the Sunlight Saber, he wouldn't be bothered much if the Moonlight Sword was to fall into someone else's hands; after all, that person would still have to come to him……

Xie Dan Qiong and Ou Du Xiao also left for the Middle Three Heavens……

Mo Tian Yun was also left with no alternative; but to go back home.

Li Xiong Tu pestered for a long time but was still left in a bind since he hadn't gained anything even after spending so much time; and thus, he opened his big mouth like a lion, and swept away as many gold and silver treasures as he could before leaving……

Tu Qian Hao followed suit and took the same course of action as Li Xiong Tu did……

Several other aristocratic clans put forward a variety of demands, which basically boiled down to: [we all feel the need to be recompensed for this wastage of time… …]

Diwu Qing Rou resolutely shed his blood as he sent away each and every one of these second generation little ancestors……

As soon as the root cause of all this mess departed, the Continent Center Citadel was left devoid of any Jiang Hu people. Diwu Qing Rou flipped out when assessed the situation and found out that - his Golden Horse Riders Department was in an utterly disordered state, Continent Center Citadel was in a complete mess, and even though he had put all his effort into gathering the man power to deal with all this chaos, he couldn't gather more than 3000 people!

Not to mention the arrogant royalists and royal clan members, who were being rampant some time ago, were now directly faced with the dreadful wrath of Prime Minister Diwu!

On the very next day of the aristocratic clans' departure from the Lower Three Heavens, the Great Zhao's Continent Center Citadel suddenly found itself surrounded by three massive army corps!

The three enormous and mighty army corps immediately marched into the Continent Center along with the city guards, and a few other units who had also assembled along. In a matter of just one day, all major streets were imbued with soldiers; there were ferocious-looking soldiers stationed at an interval of almost every two steps.

Diwu Qing Rou had long since been planning to materialize this purge, and now that it had finally started, there simply was going to be no scope for mercy in his approach!

On the third day, the entire Continent Center was dyed red with the sight of blood! One could even smell the unbearable stench of blood which was rising straight towards the sky!

Han Bu Chu was clad in a thick marten coat as he towed a heavy round-backed wooden armchair along; he finally took a seat at the Meridian Gate! Right behind him stood a team of Martial Warriors, and each of them possessed a terrifying murderous aura, which soared high into the sky.

Martial Warriors were constantly riding in and out on their horses to give reports. One could clearly see the drops of blood still dripping from the tip of their blades.

Han Bu Chu was holding a thick pile of lists which contained the names of those people who were lined up to be massacred during this genocide! It was just like drawing a lottery; with the names of the people getting crossed right after they were killed off! As soon as the names on one sheet were over, it was immediately discarded, and was replaced with a new list of names.

Entire families were nabbed and beheaded at once!

The entire nine generations executed in one go!

Diwu Qing Rou had never ordered massacre of such scale in the nation before. However this time, it seemed like he had really been forced to consume a steelyard iron core, and there was no turning back for him anymore. Once the order to kill was issued, there was no scope for taking it back!

He would choose to kill the innocents over allowing the guilty to escape!

The Ex-Prime Minister, senior officials, the Royal Censor.....and several more from the administration. Even royal princes, some royal uncles, and even the Emperor's relatives as well as his son-in-laws were lined up for executions!

The soldiers would invade the courtyards of large families like a bunch of wolves and tigers. There would only remain a pile of corpses on the ground by the time these army troops would leave the scene after having finished their task. The loud yet pitiful screams would continue to linger in the atmosphere for a long time, while the sky seemed to have been painted red by the streams of soaring blood.

In the Imperial Palace, when General Manager Lu Ren Jia ordered the guarding generals to fight against the rebelling army, he instead saw them smile obsequiously before they actually opened the main gates to welcome the rebelling army; an unexpected scene which seemed similar to that of a bunch of sons respectfully greeting their fathers!

Afterward, a relentless genocide spread in all direction!

This was all simply because Diwu Qing Rou had once said: [In this world, those court eunuchs are the most hateful creatures!]

Therefore, these words directly led to the massacre of the court eunuchs of the Imperial Palace! No one was spared. The general

who was given the responsibility of killing the court eunuchs had once been persecuted by General Manager Lu Ren Jia. Naturally, he was certainly did justice to this task by doing his job in the most exciting of ways possible: He commanded his men to save Lu Ren Jia's killing for the last. Every time a court eunuch had his head cut off, that general would shove Lu Ren Jia's face right into the neck cavity in order to ensure that the wild splashes of hot blood were sprayed all over his face……

This torment of Lu Ren Jia's obviously didn't stop until each and every Court Eunuch had been executed….

While waiting for his turn, General Manager Lu's whole body had already been soaked in blood innumerous times. As a result, he only issued one last frightened cry: "Aaahhhhhhh~~~" before all four of his limbs twitched and the floor was stained by a sudden eruption from the front and back of his lower body! He slumped down in a pile of muck which had originated from his own body, almost as if he'd been struck by paralysis… and literally scared to death.

Those who knew the inside story, bitterly spat out their saliva as they said: [You had it coming!]

He indeed got what he deserved. If hadn't been for his words, thousands of deaths could have been avoided today. The smile on the faces of everyone present, resembled the fake ones people usually see on the faces of the men who carry the palanquin at the time of a marriage; [how can people just mingle, and then stay attached for dozens of years……]

However it was an undeniable fact that his words had led to big conflict, which had made the present situation simply unavoidable!

To common people, this massacre seemed like the outcome of Diwu Qing Rou's catharsis as a result of the grudges he had been accumulating all this time: [Are you really dissatisfied with me?

Weren’t you all plotting against me all this time?]

[Fine then! I’ll just kill all of you and save myself from getting involved in your petty plots].

However, only a small number of discerning people could see through the real motive behind this well-planned purge! It was done as part of the preparations in order to deal with King of Hell Chu and Tie Bu Tian, and the imminent war they would bring!

Diwu Qing Rou hadn’t personally gotten involved in a war for several years, but he would personally need to take command this time in order to establish his own land under the heaven!

No obstructions can be permitted in a war against powerful archenemies! There must be no place for any unharmonious songs either! If he went out to fight a war while those sly people were conspiring to stab him in the back.....he certainly couldn’t allow that to happen!

Food provisions, weapons, warhorses, army logistics and so on; one calculation mistake could lead to a damage beyond redemption!

When facing a tough alliance comprising of King of Hell Chu, Tie Bu Tian and Tie Long Cheng, Diwu Qing Rou couldn’t afford to be negligent, because any negligence could potentially destroy his entire army!

He hadn’t cared much about this earlier since he was confident of his control. However, after facing several failures one after another in recent years, the losses turned him far more vigilant than before, even though the damage done was partial, and hadn’t actually harmed him in any way!

Soon after the purge of the Continent Center was started, waves of purges reeking with blood immediately spread throughout the nation.

And the positions vacated... were all occupied by Diwu Qing

Rou’s people!

It was a thorough merger!

It is said that after the conclusion of the purge, Diwu was seen standing at the helm of Continent Center Citadel, gazing at the whirling fog of blood which contained the vengeful ghosts of countless innocent people.

"I had said it before and I will say it again; I shall unify everything under the heaven, then and contain it in my hands! Even if……it cannot be contained in my hands, it will still have to pass through them!"

"What’s the worth of a million human lives compared to becoming the master of the universe?!"

As he made his proclamation, the cold and biting winds hunted down the flags fluttering over the Great Zhao, and then carried them thousands of miles away; a sign, warning of the arriving spring!

Chapter 298: Brothers Bid Goodbye

Emperor Zhao Zhe trembled with fear inside his imperial palace. His Majesty had never imagined such brutality from Diwu Qing Rou; ruthlessly executing subjects, and that too inside the greenhouse, a place where he had grown up as a child. Such a bloody massacre had simply transcended his wildest imaginations!

His conduct didn't reflect the slightest bit of mercy anymore!

He simply didn't care about imperial clan's dignity! Naturally, he didn't care about the loss of tens of thousands of lives either!

Neither did he care about the lives of the hundreds of civil servants and the military officers! Anyone, falling into his hands, could only be described using one word: Dead!

The imperial concubines had been crammed together in one corner, their beautiful faces alarmingly pale, seemingly devoid of all traces of blood. Their bodies trembled like a bunch of dead leaves falling in the wind.

"Prime Minister Diwu has arrived!" A guard at the entrance announced as he lifted his blood-stained saber upwards; it sounded like the knell of death to Emperor Zhao Zhe.

"Diwu Qing Rou is here?!" Zhao Zhe's lips turned purple as he asked with a shivering voice: "What's he doing here?"

Nobody answered his question; just a pin-drop silence stagnated in reply.

The sound of calm and steady footsteps resounded as Diwu Qing Rou leisurely walked in, step by step, with an everlasting and gentle smile hanging on his face. He casually strolled in with his hands clasped behind his back, clad in an ordinary cotton robe.

As always, his countenance was both elegant and dull at the same time, as if living things simply didn't wind around his heart.

However, it seemed like Zhao Zhe could actually see the image of a demon in Diwu Qing Rou; a demon from hell, whose entire body was drenched in blood. His Majesty was so frightened that his eyes rolled back, revealing the whites of his eyeballs; it seemed like he would faint any time now.

"Your Majesty appears safe and sound." Diwu Qing Rou greeted in a soft voice.

"Safe...and sound.....you as well! You too appear safe and sound, Prime Minister..." Zhao Zhe tried his utmost to control his facial muscles as he attempted to give a diligent greeting while maintaining a smile on his face. He did not want to lose the remnants of his royal demeanor, but still failed miserably in saving it.

Diwu Qing Rou crossed his hands behind his back to stand at ease, and then slightly cast his eyes sideways; an imperial guard hastily moved a chair, placing it right behind him. A smile appeared on Diwu Qing Rou's face as he gracefully sat down.

"Your majesty."

"....., what?"

"You and I, a ruler and his minister; I think fate has brought us together like this." Diwu Qing Rou heaved a sigh before continuing with a smiling expression on his face: "I initially thought that you and I will get along well as a ruler and his minister should; we would work together with a common purpose of unifying the lands into one domain, encompassing mountains and rivers. Together, we would stand at the top as the entire world prostrated before us!"

"I have the ability to achieve that, and also the courage to rule it from above! It's a pity that Your Majesty has always failed to trust me." Diwu Qing Rou heaved a deep sigh as he shot a pitiful look towards Zhao Zhe: "Whatever may the reason behind your distrust be, but was it really worth the trouble?"

"This....is our fault...." Zhao Zhe's eyes couldn't dare to meet Diwu's as he replied back in a trembling voice.

"Well, it truly was a blunder on your part...." Diwu Qing Rou chuckled.

"You never trusted me in the past; leaving me with no recourse but to find opportunities in the battlefield, just to gain my own power and authority! I never actually imagined ... ... that the path I was going to take back then would bestow the kind of military authority and power upon me which clearly surpasses yours..."

Diwu Qing Rou narrowed his eyes slightly, as if recalling those tragic battles from his past.

"It took numerous battles, negotiations and constant efforts to build my fame to where it stands right now; piles of countless military exploits and achievements were drawn to my name during the time of my service in the military, which even forced you into rewarding me with the titles that I deserved...it just took a certain step, and then the entire jurisdiction and military command fell into my hands; the outcome is decided already!"

"You have always been incapable of controlling me!" Diwu Qing Rou paused for a moment then said: "After that, I waged wars on all sides. Firstly, I focused on eradicating the dissidents; secondly, I became an omnipotent commander in the eyes of the common people. In fact even in the eyes of Tie Long Cheng, I was the one pulling the strings behind that war; all in order to attain great military accomplishments...."

"But he was wrong! I actually didn't desire meritorious military accolades; just absolute power." Diwu Qing Rou's voice sounded dull as he continued: "During that time, the entire twelve hundred troops of the Great Zhao were sent to the battlefield by me at different intervals! All I wanted was to get in touch with the military generals and high-ranking officers; my motive was to use my persuasion skills and convince them into accepting my

authority so that I could gain absolute control over each and every army troop."

"And since I was sure that you would never hand them over to me, my only option was to strive on my own in order to obtain them myself."

"Innumerable traps led to huge losses for the Iron Cloud, but our Great Zhao was in no better condition either since too many of our people also fell into the traps I had personally set up. I directly led them into the ambush which was set up by their own nation... But remember that these people were loyal to your majesty, the so-called 'loyalists' of the Great Zhao; you see, I did not trust them since I hadn't been able to obtain your trust at that time. They needed to be let to go because I needed only those who were loyal to me, Diwu Qing Rou..."

Diwu Qing Rou heaved a long sigh: "When the war finally came to an end, Iron Cloud had been weakened so terribly that they found it difficult to retreat. I stopped the battle and returned to the Imperial Court with unparalleled military successes in my grasp."

"Everyone thought that I intentionally allowed Iron Cloud some respite, but the reality was a lot different." Diwu Qing Rou continued onwards: "Because at that time, I only had control over the military, not the government. So, I needed to come back in order to build a government; a government I could control on a whim. Moreover, the Imperial Clan's still had a significant control over the nation. Considering a possibility in which, let's suppose I had destroyed the Iron Cloud Nation, your majesty would've still executed me with just a flick of a finger."

"Thus, I couldn't choose to start an all-out war at that time! I had to give up on the excellent advantageous situation that we had built for ourselves, and was forced to retreat in order to manage things from the rear." Diwu Qing Rou sighed deeply: "If only you had put your trust in me back then, I would have given you a unified domain! But unfortunately, you didn't..."

"You've waited for far too long to deal with me, and now it's already too late!" Diwu Qing Rou stood up: "The Military holds absolute authority! Now, you have no soldiers under your command and no generals on your side. You only have a bunch of pedantic scholars to depend on, so then how do you plan on defeating me, the current leader of this nation's entire army? Your majesty, don't you find this so ridiculous that even laughter would probably shy away?"

Zhao Zhe's face turned deathly pale as he stared blankly.

"There are so many things I wish to tell you; there were so many things I had always wished to share with you all those years. But as we stand here today, face to face, I actually feel as if they are not necessary anymore." Diwu Qing Rou continued indifferently: "In fact, there's actually no requirement for us to be talking like this. I am quite surprised; maybe this conversation is a result of a change in my mood, but now I really feel very naïve."

Diwu Qing Rou slowly said: "It is really childish of me that I actually bothered to have a conversation with you, or perhaps it was just a demonstration of power."

After he was done talking, Diwu Qing Rou turned around and left like a gust of wind, without even bothering to look back at the Emperor who had been utterly and thoroughly defeated by him.

Moments later, Diwu Qing Rou's voice sounded from outside.

"Seal this place! Let His Majesty lead a comfortable life inside. Starting today, no one is allowed to enter or leave this place until...the war ends!"

"Yes!"

"If we win the war, then His Majesty shall be permitted to look at our achievements before his beheading! And if we lose, then behead him straightaway! After that, you shall proceed to exterminating his nine generations!"

"Yes!"

Zhao Zhe could clearly hear everything from the inside, and fainted with his eyes rolling back into his head.

In short, his death was certain, regardless of victory or defeat.

This was a completely reversal of the usual. It was always the Imperial Clan that ordered the extermination of others' nine generations; but what did Diwu Qing Rou state in his precise order today? Was it not the extermination of the nine generations of the Imperial Clan?

This really was……something rather hard to explain….

The purge was still ongoing in the Great Zhao. Moreover, judging from Diwu Qing Rou's current stance, it seemed like the present state of affairs would repeat over and over again for quite some time.

In the meantime, the members of Gu Clan finally contacted Gu Du Xing: return to the clan!

On the eve of Gu Du Xing's departure, Chu Yang was whispering to him in the middle of the night before finally giving him a big bag full of items, "This is for Ji Mo, this is for Dong Wu Shang, and this is for…"

Of course, the majority of things…were for Mo Qing Wu…

The two brothers stood opposite each other as the morning wind bore witness to their parting.

"Take care!"

"Take care!"

These two words were spoken simultaneously by the two brothers.

Following which, Gu Du Xing turned silent as he looked at Chu Yang with a profound expression in his eyes. Then, he simply turned around to leave and didn't even look back once.

[Dear Brother! We met in a time of distress, but you still helped me out. You gave me hope all this time, and also assisted with my martial arts practice! You have done everything you could for me!]

[I won’t fail you!]

[Never!]

It was just that his lips weren’t able to weave these words, which left with no other option, could only reverberate within the bounds of his heart.

Chu Yang didn’t say anything either.

Although it always appears quite dull, parting is such sweet sorrow; both of them knew that the next time they would meet, it would be in the Middle Three Heavens! And definitely not here!

In the Middle Three Heavens, the Mo Clan had suddenly livened up.

This shouldn’t have been the case since all clans were preparing for the imminent war on the Cang Lan Battlefront, but still, the Mo Clan’s front yard was as busy as a marketplace.

At this time, Mo Xing Chen was in his study, discussing some matters with the Great Elder when a servant suddenly reported: "I have a message for the Clan Lord; two enate young masters have arrived to visit us."

"Enate young masters, you say?" Mo Xing Chen gawked for a second.

"Yes, Young master Ji Zhu has arrived with Young master Ji Mo."

"Ah, guide them to the drawing room for the time being; also, go and inform the eldest young master to welcome our guests."

"Actually, Young master Ji Zhu is already in the drawing room, having tea at the moment. But Ji Clan’s second young master has gone into the inner chambers to find the young lady."

"Young lady? Which one?" Mo Xing Chen gawked again.

"My lord, they are looking for Lady Xiao Wu." The servant lowered his head as he tried his best to hide his twitching mouth from his lord's eyesight.

"Xiao Wu?!" Mo Xing Chen was stunned: "Why is Ji Mo looking for Xiao Wu?"

Inside the inner residence

"Big Brother Ji Mo!~~" Mo Qing Wu was pleasantly surprised, and her cheers resounded through the backyard; she rushed towards him, seemingly flying: "Big Brother Ji Mo, what brings you here? Where is Brother Chu Yang? Did he come too?"

"Eh, your Brother Chu Yang didn't come." Ji Mo saw the brightness of her face fading away as he spoke these words.

Feeling sorry for the poor girl, he hastily hugged her before carrying her up in his arms, and then stated in a consoling manner: "Well, your Brother Chu Yang isn't here, but he has asked me to deliver lots of good things to you..."

"Really?" Mo Qing Wu suddenly opened her eyes wide, getting excited all of a sudden: "Where, where?!"

"Really! It's only natural that...eh?" Ji Mo suddenly noticed that something was off: "Why are you so light? My god! How did you lose so much weight? You've become so skinny."

The Second Young Master Ji turned furious: "Who bullied you?!"

"No, wait big brother...no one has bullied me." Mo Qing Wu's eyes gleamed once again, before dimming again. She raised her face as she pleaded earnestly: "Big Brother Ji Mo, I don't want to live here any longer.....can you take me to your home?"

"This...." Ji Mo somewhat hesitated.

"No, you mustn't!" A sound passed over: "Xiao Wu, how can you talk about leaving your own home so easily?"

The voice belonged to an Elder of Mo Clan's branch clan. He was

the one who had been ordered by the Clan Lord to bring Ji Mo here.

"What has happened to Xiao Wu?" Ji Mo put her down, and slowly stood up to look towards that King level expert from the Mo Clan.

"Second young master Ji, actually-" The expert hesitated for a while, but he soon noticed that Ji Mo's countenance was turning grim. He hurriedly pulled Ji Mo to the side and whispered into his ears.

"Her Three Yin Meridians are damaged?" Ji Mo was dumbfounded.

Even after going to the Heavenly Armament Pavilion, Chu Yang had never once told him about this matter.

As a result, this was actually the first time he came to hear of it.

Chapter 299: Xiao Wu, always be Happy!

Being the younger generation of a great Clan, Ji Mo naturally knew the fate of a person having lost his future potential, and couldn't help but feel sad. However, it wouldn't be right of him to intervene since it was a Mo Clan's internal family matter, and he was only a maternal cousin.

Although, in his heart, he silently whispered to himself, [indeed, in that case, I must put all my efforts into healing her or finding her a proper home so she can lead a happy life in the future. She mustn't live a life of such pain and agony.]

"You go ahead; I'll accompany Xiao Wu for little while longer before I head back." Ji Mo replied.

On the other hand, as she stood there watching, Mo Qing Wu turned around awkwardly while her eyes started to fill with tear of insecurity.

"Xiao Wu, come and see, Brother Chu Yang has sent some gifts for you." Ji Mo tried to put on a smile and tried to suppress the sorrow in his heart as he took Mo Qing Wu by her tiny hands, and walked towards her room.

"Come, take a look at this." Firstly, Ji Mo took out a jade bottle, which Chu Yang had filled with the 'vitality spring water'; it was a pretty big bottle!

"What is this? Water? Or Liquor?" Mo Qing Wu suspiciously looked at the Jade bottle and then gently stroked it; her face lit up as she asked, "Does this jade bottle belong to Brother Chu Yang?"

"Yes." Ji Mo scratched his head in confusion since the more precious gift was the water inside the bottle.

[Huh, you're asking about Chu Yang's jade bottle? The water inside is far more precious, you know?]

"Brother Chu Yang," Mo Qing Wu held the jade bottle tightly in

her arms as tears came running down her eyes. Mo Qing Wu had been suppressing the pain in her heart for several months; however, seeing that jade bottle in front of her, tears came flowing down her eyes like a river.

She cried a long time…

Ji Mo was completely helpless the entire time for he had never thought that Mo Qing Wu would get so emotional by merely looking at that jade bottle.

Mo Qing Wu kept on sobbing for a long time before she finally came to a stop.

Ji Mo said urged, “This is a priceless treasure called the ‘vitality spring water’. You should really drink it now…”

Ji Mo lowered his voice as he added, “Brother Chu Yang insisted that I witness you drinking the ‘vitality spring water’ with my own eyes.”

“But I…I can’t drink it.” Mo Qing Wu looked at Ji Mo while blinking her big eyes and said, “If I drink…then there won’t be anything left of it…”

“Silly girl, why can’t you?” Ji Mo said hastily, “If you drink this, it will help your body in healing the injury, and in getting rid of the scars.”

“But, I don’t want to drink it.” Mo Qing Wu started to cry, “I want to keep this safely, with me.”

“But if you don’t drink it now, Brother Ji Mo will get really angry.” Ji Mo was feeling puzzled rather puzzled himself as he said this, but didn’t let it show on his face still. Then, he added, “If Brother Chu Yang finds out that you didn’t not drink the ‘vitality spring water’… it will make him very, very sad…”

“Okay, then I will drink it!”

Mo Qing Wu hurriedly added while nodding her head in anxiety,

“I will drink right away in that case.”

Ji Mo was left dumbfounded in awe as he saw Mo Qing Wu drink that bottle of ‘vitality spring water’. [Could Chu Yang really have such huge effect on her?]

After she was done drinking the vitality spring water, she continued to hold the jade bottle in her arms, seemingly treasuring it with all her heart.

“What else did Brother Chu Yang send for me?” Mo Qing Wu asked with anticipation.

“Well, there’s one, and then this, and oh, that too…” Ji Mo unloaded the package; he had a big pile of all sorts of strange and beautiful toys.

“This is beautiful!” Mo Qing Wu slipped her hands into the pile of toys, and happened to find a bowknot shaped hairpin.

The bowknot’s entire framework was made out of red cloud steel and star iron. The magnificence of the red cloud steel, coupled with that starlight elegance gave it an enchanting appearance.

Ji Mo’s lips twitched.

Watching her play with the bowknot, Ji Mo wondered, [only the prodigal Chu Yang could do something like that elaborate].

“This was definitely sent by Brother Chu Yang, but as for the other toys, it is you who bought them, didn’t you?” Mo Qing Wu casually asked tilting her head as she put the bowknot down.

“Eh…how did you know that?” Ji Mo astonishingly stared at Mo Qing Wu, surprised that she had thoughtlessly spoken a few words of fact.

“Well, because this is what I really like.” Mo Qing Wu wrinkled her nose as her smile showed a longing for happiness, and said, “Only Brother Chu Yang knows what I really like,”

She gave a ‘despising’ look to Ji Mo and said, “and well, you

certainly don't!"

Ji Mo found himself completely puzzled.

"Brother Ji Mo, I must thank you..." Mo Qing Wu hugged the jade bottle and the bowknot close to her heart, before saying with a satisfied smile, "Thank you for delivering these gifts to me."

"You're... ...welcome." Suddenly a thought pained Ji Mo's heart. [Being the princess of Mo clan, how can something so bad happen to Mo Qing Wu?]

"I have something to discuss with uncle..., ah" Ji Mo wanted to say something, but swallowed it back. [If uncle refused to let me go, I will have to stay back and accompany her. No I can't stay. My Clan is waiting for me to fight in the war, and also even if I take her to my family, who will she play with?]

Ji Mo shook his head with a sigh and returned to the hall.

He had a word with Mo Xing Chen about Mo Qing Wu spending a few days with his family, however Mo Xing Chen pondered for a while before refusing, "Usually it would have been fine for to spend some time with your family, but with the major families going to the war these days, how do you expect to take care of a child? Think before you speak."

After hearing that, Ji Mo and Ji Zhu slowly walked out of the hall. Mo Xing Chen wanted to take a break from the meetings, when again a sudden report was made, "Reporting to the Clan Lord, the second son of Luo Clan had come to visit Miss Xiao Wu."

"Luo Clan? Second son from Luo Clan had come to visit Xiao Wu?" Mo Xing Chen was in a state of shock. He thought, [At first, Ji Zhu and Ji Mo came to see Qing Wu, which is still okay as they are after all cousins, but what business does the son of Luo Clan has with her? Does't he know that Luo Clan and Mo Clan are enemies?]

The two clans had been at war for more than 100 years. The

hatred between the two clans could never be put away, and now the son from the Luo Clan is here to see Xiao Wu, which was very strange.

Mo Xing Chen's mind couldn't help but wonder, [has he come here with ulterior motives? Has he come to mock us as they found out that the genius of our Clan is crippled?]

However, if that was the case, it was a bold move. The second son of the Luo Clan might actually lose his life here.

"Please come in!" Mo Xing Chen stood up and said, "I'd like to see the second son of the Luo Clan because this is the right thing to do."

Luo Ke Di walks cladded in snow-white clothing, while the Mo Clan stood there in hostility.

Everybody had their eyes fixed on him.

Luo Ke Di was usually very easy going and had a very tuned way of working; however, he was also a very emotional person.

[Chu Yang? My Big Brother!]

[He once told me that whenever I had the opportunity, I should go and visit Xiao Wu.]

[I must do as I promised.]

He still made that promise, even though Luo Clan and Mo Clan had always been enemies. They were still enemies when he promised his Brother, and wouldn't have promised if he hadn't intended on doing so.

Since he had already promised, he will do as he promised; even if he had made this promise to an enemy!

Even if he died, he'd do as promised!

And therefore, he came today.

Mo Xing Chen looked on in surprise as Luo Ke Di walked into the

hall, in the presence of the Mo Clan, to see Xiao Wu.

It seemed that Mo Xing Chen was not the only one in the Clan who was surprised by Luo Ke Di's visit; Mo Qing Wu was actually far more surprised.

"Xiao Wu!" Luo Ke Di's cold expression melted while a warm smile spread across his face, as he looked at his dear little sister after such a long time.

"Brother Luo!"

Mo Qing Wu was pleasantly surprised. She was aware that her' and the Luo Clan were enemies; and yet Luo Ke Di had taken such huge risk, just to come visit her.

Mo Xing Chen kept a close eye on them.

He watched as Mo Qing Wu laughed and played outside her room while Luo Ke Di patiently listened to her as she went on rambling about her problems. He then played different games with her and told her stories.

Mo Xing Chen heaved a deep sigh and quietly moved away.

[How long has it been since we've seen Xiao Wu this happy? At this time, she is even happy to meet someone from the enemy Clan rather than to talk to her own father... and they even seem more intimate..].

"Have I made a mistake?"

"But I am the head of a Clan... ...even if I made a mistake... ...it's for the sake of my Clan..."

Mo Xing Chen walked away, quietly.

Luo Ke Di was also felt quite relieved, and boldly accompanied Xiao Wu the entire day.

"Xiao Wu, Brother Chu Yang has sent me to play with you ...but I can only stay for a day."Luo Ke Di squatted down as he softly spoke to Xiao Wu, "I'll need leave for the Cang Lan battlefront

tomorrow."

"But why do you have to go to Cang Lan battlefront?" Mo Qing Wu asked as a little tear formed in her eyes, "I am so lonely here... There is no one to play with me here...or even talk to me."

Luo Ke Di was speechless for a while, before he finally replied in a softened tone, "I don't want to leave you alone either, but I still wish to go nonetheless. It's very dangerous out there, yet I find joy in it. The placed is filled with my enemies... as well as my friends. And, also, it's my duty to be there since I'm a youngster from a 'three heaven family'.

"It's... a Man's responsibility at the end of the day!" Luo Ke Di stated in a soft voice.

Even though Mo Qing Wu was just a little girl, and even though she may be incapable of understanding his words, Luo Ke Di still felt very relaxed in speaking his thoughts out to her.

It's the responsibility of the middle three heaven's families to keep the mainland safe.

They could never back away from their responsibility!

"I packed a few gifts for you on the way here because I didn't know what'd you like..." Luo Ke Di put down his big bag.

"Brother Chu Yang had told me to come visit you, and had asked me say these few words to you." Luo Ke Di said.

"What?" Mo Qing Wu immediately brightened up as her ear rose up with excitement.

"He said that, "Xiao Wu, always be happy"..."Luo Ke Di continued, "Brother Chu Yang will soon come to meet you."

Tears came flowing down to Mo Qing Wu's white and tender cheeks.

Mo Qing Wu had been longing to hear those words for a very long time; she had always been looking forward to someone coming her

way to deliver such words. Her heart couldn't help but feel sour after hearing Chu Yang's words; and she felt like crying tears of joy.

Luo Ke Di eventually had to leave... he couldn't have stayed there for long; after all, he belonged to an enemy Clan... also he was only able to stay there for so long because Mo Tian Yun was at the Cang Lan battlefront...

Mo Qing Wu stood there quietly. She felt like she had grown up, while her mind kept pondering back over those words, instilling her heart with a sense of hope...

"Xiao Wu, always be happy. Brother Chu Yang will soon come to meet you."

Mo Qing Wu tilted her head as she closely held onto her scabbard and that jade bottle; she wore that colorful bowknot, and gently recited those words to herself in Chu Yang's voice.

Her voice was soft and gentle... and as mesmerizing as a dream... one could tell that she never wanted to wake up from it...

Chapter 300: Blast! Full on blast!

The next one to arrive was none other than Dong Wu Shang; the arrival of Dong Clan's second young master was more shocking than the previous two arrivals!

He had brought along a large brigade of soldiers; the Dong Clan had mobilized 2400 soldiers to the Cang Lan Battlefront in order to participate in the war, not to mention that each and every one of these soldiers was an expert in his own merit!

Dong Wu Shang was mounted on a huge 'Qian Li' ox, which swayed from side to side as it strolled forward.

(TLN: Qian Li means 'a thousand Li' or 'a thousand miles' or '500 Km')

He had actually wanted to ride a horse; after all, he felt more at ease while riding a horse in comparison to a huge ox. Even though this ox was a spirit beast....an ox would be still an ox! Riding an ox could never be as smooth and easy as riding a horse, not to mention the embarrassment that came along with it.

However, Dong Wu Shang was helpless because his saber was simply too heavy. In addition to it, he was also carrying a lot of other miscellaneous items, including a flexible armor which was specifically tailored for his tall and burly physique; raising the total weight to 1000 Jin!

(TLN: 1 Jin = 0.5 Kg)

A horse or a camel couldn't possibly carry so much weight.

Hence, while the other 2400 people of the Dong Clan rode tall horses, the second young master Dong was atop a tall ox in the forefront.

The Dong Clan's territory was located to the east of the Mo Clan's; the two were separated by a distance of more than 1000 Li, whereas the Cang Lan Battlefront happened to be located

somewhere along the way. Naturally, it was not as if the Dong Clan's parade had coincidentally arrived in front of the Mo Clan's entrance; it had happened very precisely, based on the second young master Dong's strong demands. Thus, this large brigade of soldiers had ended up majestically marching all the way to the Mo Clan's territory.

(TLN: 1 Li = 1 mile (approx))

As the brigade leader, Dong Wu Lei actually did not wish to change routes, because this change would unnecessarily add an extra time of two-and-a-half days to their previous schedule! This would needlessly tire the soldiers, and squander resources as well. However, the most disgraceful thing for the eldest young master of Dong Clan was: inability to beat his younger brother, Dong Wu Shang...

Dong Wu Shang had issued a blatant threat to his elder brother: [change the course unless you wish to get beaten up to shame in front of 2400 people.]

The enraged eldest young master had ceaselessly fired curses for almost half-a-day, but was ultimately forced to change the course, lacking a better option.

Amidst the rattling noise of the war chariots, and whining of the horses, the view of Dong Clan's 2400 soldiers marching into the territory of Mo Clan, and that too under the leadership of second young master Dong, gave off a feeling as if they'd come to carry out a vendetta; the troops gave off a majestic yet murderous aura as they ostentatiously marched towards the Mo Clan's residence!

The second young master Dong lifted his saber with one hand, and then jumped down from that huge ox upon arriving at the front entrance of Mo Clan. He turned towards a guard standing at the entrance, and proclaimed in a loud voice: "Go! Inform everyone in your clan that the second young master of Dong Clan, Dong Wu Shang has come to pay a visit to Miss Mo Qing Wu!"

That guard had long been paralyzed with fear; his knees were shaking while his legs already seemed numb: [Crap! What's up with all these staring eyes, are they from an enemy clan?] Since the proclamation had actually sounded very similar to an amnesty, an imminent sense of danger compelled him to quickly turn around, and rush inside in order to report this incident, as fast as possible.

Mo Xing Chen was utterly distressed.

This time, he really was depressed.

[Is there really no end to this farce? Why are all these young masters coming to meet our clan's crippled daughter?]

Both Dong Clan and Mo Clan had always been like water bodies in two different wells, each minding its own business without interfering with the other. However, Dong Clan clearly had an upper hand when it came to a comparison between their respective strengths, especially due to the harmonious relationship of two brothers of Dong Clan. On the contrary, the two brothers of Mo Clan were like two different swords which simply couldn't fit into the same scabbard. It was quite obvious the future prospects of the Dong Clan would transcend that of the Mo Clan.

Therefore, left with no option, Mo Xing Chen came out in person to welcome these unexpected guests. As soon as he came out, the scene that unfolded in front of his eyes instantly startled him. [Crap! So many people have come to meet our Xiao Wu?]

[This motherf*er is blatantly showing his power off, isn't he?!]

"You're the Mo Clan's Lord, aren't you?" Dong Wu Shang cupped his hands in salute as he continued quite respectfully: "I, Dong Wu Shang, have come here to see Xiao Wu. Actually, I was on my way to the Cang Lan Battlefront, but decided on a whim to come here first. I just hope I haven't offended the Clan Lord in doing so."

"Not at all, Nephew Dong. Please come in... this old man is

extremely pleased to receive you in my clan's humble abode." Even though Mo Xing Chen didn't know the real reason behind Dong Wu Shang's proclamation to meet Xiao Wu, he still maintained a composed expression on his face.

"How is Xiao Wu doing these days?" Dong Wu Shang smiled as he entered through the front door. He had asked this question fully knowing that her Three Yin Meridians had been destroyed, depriving her of the merit to obtain the clan's training and resources; this was equivalent to falling straight from the heaven, and into the hell....then how could she possibly be doing well?

Besides, this matter was no longer a secret for the Middle Three Heavens...

Mo Xing Chen's heart thumped erratically as he rolled his eyes and replied with a sigh: "She is fine, thanks to your lucky influence."

"I must say that you have spoken incorrectly; it can never be because of my luck!" Dong Wu Shang stared intently as he continued: "I, Dong Wu Shang, can't possibly have so much luck, can I?"

Mo Xing Chen suddenly got furious, just like a foolish Buddha who was about to explode with anger, and die as a result. [Damn you! The way you speak is really unpleasant to hear. I respect you because you're the second young master of the Dong Clan. This old man personally came out to welcome you, just to give you a gargantuan face, and yet you talk in such an eccentric manner?]

[The second young master of the Dong Clan is supposed to be an earnest person as per my knowledge; what is wrong with him today?]

He actually didn't know that Dong Wu Shang had already met Mo Qing Wu in the Heavenly Armament Pavilion. And although he used to be rather uncommunicative and aloof in his conduct, he still enjoyed Mo Qing Wu's company; she used to have long

conversations with him, as a result of which, even an inarticulate and slurred individual like him had been able to share numerous moments of joy and sadness with her. In short, he actually really adored this cute little girl.

He was unable to contain his anger when he came to know that Mo Qing Wu was being wronged by her own clan just because her ‘Three Yin Meridians’ had been destroyed. In fact, his visit to the Mo Clan’s residence for meeting Mo Qian Wu wasn’t a false presence; he wanted to use this opportunity to vent out his anger in person, not to mention that his real objective was to liberate Mo Qing Wu from her miseries.

Therefore, he had deliberately assumed the role of a rowdy and uncouthly person.

Moreover, assuming such a role was like a piece of cake for him since he had spent so much time with Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo; who were no different from an ‘uncanny hybrid of ruffians and bandits’.

"I didn’t know the second young master Dong knows my little daughter." Mo Xing Chen swallowed his anger and didn’t press the matter any further. In case he somehow ended up offending his guest, then the Mo Clan’s current strength would be insufficient to face those-then 2400 enemy soldiers!

Mo Tian Yun had led the majority of Mo Clan’s forces to the Cang Lan Battlefront a few days back, decreasing the clan’s combat strength by a large extent...

As a result, if this uncouthly young master was to lose his temper for some reason and order an attack on the Mo Clan, then... ...the Mo Clan would certainly lose its face in a rather elaborate way.

"Our meeting was just a pleasant coincidence, that’s all. I and Xiao Wu hit it off very nicely! I am very fond of her!" Dong Wu Shang smiled: "And, my big brother is also very much fond of her! So much so that he is scared to say her name, or to hold her in his

arms, thinking, what if she melts if he does?"

"Your big brother?" Mo Xing Chen was somewhat startled. [Big Brother... I presume those two words weren't meant as a joke. And judging by the way he said it, it definitely isn't his own elder brother. Then, who exactly is this so-called "big brother" the second young master Dong is referring to?]

[Big brother huh...I wonder if he is some kind of an earthshaking personage.]

"Yes! Big brother!" Dong Wu Shang confirmed as he grinned from ear to ear: "By the way, he is also a big brother to Ji Mo, Gu Duxing, Luo Ke Di and several others! He is very fond of Xiao Wu! So much so that he gifted his most treasured saber to her. He had been keeping it safe for so many years since it is a part of his family's heirlooms. There have been several Saber Monarchs in his family in the past, and all of them are said to have wielded that saber while galloping across the nine heavens..."

Mo Xing Chen heard a loud bang in his head while a bunch of golden stars started to revolve before his eyes.

[Saber Monarchs?]

[Family heirloom?]

[Big brother to Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di, Gu Du Xing and Dong Wu Shang?]

[I feel dizzy! My God! Who is this person...]

[If this mysterious 'big brother' finds out that the saber he gifted to Mo Qing Wu has been snatched from her... ...I don't know how he'll react! What if he gets furious and rushes over to the Mo Clan in a wild rage?]

Dong Wu Shang's eyelids hung low as he quietly observed the Mo Clan Lord's changing complexion; he couldn't help but feel proud and complacent within his heart.

This was exactly what Ji Mo, Luo Ke Di and he had planned all along; to achieve a means to support Mo Qing Wu!

And that means was precisely…to incite an explosion! A ruthless explosion! A fearless explosion! Continual explosions, as much as they liked, but without the fear of getting blown away!

Moreover, if these words had been said by Ji Mo or Luo Ke Di, then the reaction wouldn't have been so drastic. This "saber plan" worked well only because Dong Wu Shang and his clan had the required competence, as well as the universally recognized taciturn…

People like Dong Wu Shang never told lies! However, if they ever told a lie to deceive someone, then the success rate associated with it would be close to 90 percent!

"Nephew Dong, who is this big brother you talk about?" Mo Xing Cheng asked in a cautious and solemn tone. When he had first met Dong Wu Shang a while ago, he had initially referred to him as 'Nephew Dong' but had gotten angry at Dong Wu Shang's rude way of talking, and had started referring to him as 'Second young master Dong'. Now that Mo Xing Chen was startled by these unexpected turn of events, he had suddenly switched back to calling him 'Nephew Dong' once again.

"I really cannot tell you since my big brother is a great personage. I might have to do deal with his wrath, if he found out that I leaked information about him." Dong Wu Shang replied with smile: "But I must say that your Mo Clan is really fortunate to have Xiao Wu. I am certain that your clan will continue to flourish endlessly for a very long time. Recently, I have started to believe that 'fate' indeed brings people together; our big brother has been travelling around the nine heavens for quite some time now, but he inadvertently saved Xiao Wu one day……cough cough; I guess this really is the work of fate."

Second young master Dong kept on beating around the bush,

looking for words to express his thoughts while constantly sighing over this predicament. After all, he had never been good at talking someone around, unlike Luo Ke Di and Ji Mo.

However on the contrary, his style of explanation usually sounded a bit more convincing to most people.

He has been travelling around the nine heavens... this sentence induced an endless reverie in Mo Xing Chen's heart, and he was instantly thrust into a daydream-like state: [Could it be that this person belongs to one of the super clans of the Upper Three Heavens? Indeed, no wonder he has convinced the geniuses from the four influential clans into calling him their 'big brother'. He conveniently sent that precious saber as a gift as well; a treasure so precious that it can literally be called the crown of the world....such a personage can only be from the Upper Three Heavens, right?]

[Moreover, I am certain that he is from some super aristocratic clan!]

"Oh, how forgetful of me... please come in, Nephew Dong." Mo Xing Chen quickly made a welcoming gesture with his hands as soon as he noticed that his guest had been standing right at the entrance for quite some time now; this was truly very disrespectful towards a guest.

"Well, I will certainly come in, but just to have a look at Xiao Wu, then I will immediately leave for the Cang Lan Battlefront." Dong Wu Shang narrowed his eyes: "Uncle Mo, you must take good care of Xiao Wu since my big brother is planning to come here with a special drug which can fix her condition; it shouldn't take him very long to come here, and when he does, he will surely treat her illness... "

With a meaningful smile spread across his face, he said: "My big brother is extremely talented; he knows all under the heaven..."

"Eh?" Mo Xing Chen was delighted to hear that. However, he

inquired in a skeptical manner: "But I am not aware of this matter....say, can you give any assurance?"

"I really can’t do that at the moment." Dong Wu Shang frowned.

"Your big brother... does he really have the means to accomplish what you’ve claimed just now?" Mo Xing Chen asked.

"Uncle Mo..." Dong Wu Shang stood there firmly as he looked at Mo Xing Chen, and then suddenly took out the saber from behind his shoulder, before asking: "What do you think about this saber?"

"Saber?" Mo Xing Chen was somewhat startled as he thought to himself: [this second young master Dong’s train of thoughts can take a really sharp leap... when I ask him about his big brother; he out rightly changes the topic by drawing my attention to his saber?]

Table of Contents

- Transcending the Nine Heavens
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 201: Be a free person of the mountains and the rivers
  - Chapter 202: Robbing on the road
  - Chapter 203: Domineering second young master Luo
  - Chapter 204: Abnormal strength
  - Chapter 205: Deadly threat
  - Chapter 206: Holding hands and being friends
  - Chapter 207: A powerful force unexpectedly comes
  - Chapter 208: Successive breakthroughs
  - Chapter 209: Fresh hot third brother
  - Chapter 210: We will be together
  - Chapter 211: The brotherhood forms
  - Chapter 212: I don’t mind!
  - Chapter 213: A lifetime of searching in regret
  - Chapter 214: Emperor level master
  - Chapter 215: Battle of words
  - Chapter 216: Mo Tian Yun
  - Chapter 217: A clan conference, the nightmare begins
  - Chapter 218: My saber…
  - Chapter 219: A heavy blow
  - Chapter 220: I want Brother Chu Yang
  - Chapter 221: An eye for an eye
  - Chapter 222: House of Exceptional Beauties
  - Chapter 223: The mysterious person in blue
  - Chapter 224: Three masters, one zither master
  - Chapter 225: One melody to see reincarnation
  - Chapter 226: Reincarnation, lost love
  - Chapter 227: Three questions to stir the leader
  - Chapter 228: Minister Chu? Big Brother Chu!
  - Chapter 229: We are Bamboo people
  - Chapter 230: You are not worthy
  - Chapter 231: King of Hell Chu makes another move
  - Chapter 232: A great gift

Chapter 233: This failure was well-deserved
Chapter 234: Was it King of Hell Chu?
Chapter 235: A series of deadly ploys
Chapter 236: Breakthrough
Chapter 237: Nine Tribulations space
Chapter 238: The second fragment of Nine Tribulations Sword, sword edge
Chapter 239: That damn Nine Tribulations Sword master
Chapter 240: Nine tribulations fate?
Chapter 241: I have to go to Great Zhao!
Chapter 242: Dong Wu Shang returns
Chapter 243: Chu Yang's killing intent
Chapter 244: Sharpening blades and aiming at the center of the continent
Chapter 245: This situation cannot be removed
Chapter 246: Changes at Beyond the Heavens Sect
Chapter 247: Tan Tan's power
Chapter 248: Life and death crisis
Chapter 249: Gu Du Xing's speculation
Chapter 250: Don't belittle forever
Chapter 251: Hanging by a thread
Chapter 252: Thunderous attack
Chapter 253: This cannot be…
Chapter 254: This is a parting
Chapter 255: Ask the Heavens Sword Saint's sword, Underworld Saber Saint's saber
Chapter 256: Wind and rain from all directions gather at Continent Center
Chapter 257: Adding fuel
Chapter 258: Deep foresight
Chapter 259: Diwu Qing Rou's headache
Chapter 260: Chaos
Chapter 261: The fantastic Ask the Heavens Sword
Chapter 262: Ahwooh…
Chapter 263: Strange swordsman
Chapter 264: Envy and hatred
Chapter 265: Emperors of two nations
Chapter 266: Diwu Qing Rou's big opportunity
Chapter 267: I was wrong about this
Chapter 268: Welcoming honored guests
Chapter 269: The heirs of Middle Three Heavens
Chapter 270: Mo Tian Yun's counterattack

Chapter 271: Chu clan’s young masters?
Chapter 272: You want to try? I also want to try.
Chapter 273: Eternal splendor, sun and moon shine together
Chapter 274: The great clans react
Chapter 275: Beyond the Heavens Sect is not well
Chapter 276: The black robe is still here, you are still here
Chapter 277: Two powers collide (1)
Chapter 278: Two powers collide (2)
Chapter 279: Two powers collide (3)
Chapter 280: Detonation
Chapter 281: Chaos in Continent Center
Chapter 282: Evil move
Chapter 283: A sword like thunder
Chapter 284: You fight, I take
Chapter 285: He died; I killed him!
Chapter 286: Truly a good saber…
Chapter 287: Getting out in time
Chapter 288: Such brothers are hard to find
Chapter 289: The big move: Capture King of Hell Chu
Chapter 290: Where is he?
Chapter 291: Little people change history
Chapter 292: King of Hell Chu’s letter is priceless!
Chapter 293: The Sword’s Chaos Begins
Chapter 294: The Sword Pierces Through the Golden Horse Riders Department!
Chapter 295: Destruction of the Base!
Chapter 296: The origin of Bright Moon Lake
Chapter 297: Diwu Qing Rou’s purge
Chapter 298: Brothers Bid Goodbye
Chapter 299: Xiao Wu, always be Happy!
Chapter 300: Blast! Full on blast!